





# LEGEND OF THE SUPREME SOLDIER

BOOK 04

*Fang Xiang*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# **Legend of the Supreme Soldier**

## **(师士传说)**

**by**

**Fang Xiang**

**(方想)**

# Synopsis

---

Ye Chong was a denizen of Trash Planet-12. On one fateful day, he discovered a treasure that would forever alter his destiny from a pile of junk – Mu Shang, an unknown machine with artificial intelligence and a lost memory. Together, they venture into the vast galaxy as the isolated “caveman” that was Ye Chong began absorbing all sorts of knowledge and meeting people from all walks of life. He gradually discovers more and more about his own mysterious past as well as his partner’s. Read to find out more!

# Acknowledgement

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

## Chapter 301: Compatriots

"You should be thinking of an explanation for sir later," said Sang Fan as he patted Hai Lian, expressing concern. Hai Lian looked at Sang Fan appreciatively. The girl from the White Streak tribe was looking around in fright. Her body was shaking as confused by the surrounding. The happening had alarmed the entire tribe in the building, other than those guarding Ye Chong's room, the remaining Sangs had ran downstairs.

Sang Ling grabbed Sang Fan to a corner immediately after her arrival, having an interrogation with Sang Fan.

The guardsmen of Greda had tasted the kick of Sang Tie as they retreated into their trembling posture, stumbled. "What the hell are you guys doing! Move! Move! Move!" Greda's scolding did not work as well as Sang Tie's kick. The guardsmen were not dumb to be unable to recognize the power of the masked man. It was a total horror and their sacrifice would not be avenged by the great master. Greda's father did not seem to be a figure to be as hot-tempered as his son.

Greda's face got paler, the authority of his father that had been protecting him over the days seemed to have faded away.

Shi Xin was also in astonishment, the masked man was too potent and she even saw a few others of his kind wavering inside the hotel. She could not help but to begin speculating the identity of this hidden group.

The Ye family? I mean... Only Ye family is befitting of such combat ability among the aristocrats. They are different, very different, contrary to most practitioners, the Ye family members are all slender figures, yup, quite as slender as this masked man. Only the sole branch of Ye family could wield such strength too.

But weird... the core family members have always been low-profiled. They are the mythical figure in He Yue galaxy, they had

hardly revealed themselves. These men were known to be the elite, not only they possess great command of combats, they are also superior in their piloting, thus being identified as one of the strongest pilot groups. Their outstanding close combat has bestowed them a recognizable position in He Yue galaxy.

Well, a team of elites of Ye family guarding a particular building. Could it be... Shi Xin could feel her fear overtaking her rationality, could it be the head of Ye family himself? If it really was him... Lunaris would be facing the greatest fissure in its history...

WOW! The men screamed the moment Sang Tie lifted a kick again. The city never lacked a bunch of bums to help cheering the big man eh?

But Greda was angered, as he picked a stone from the ground and tossed violently at the guardsmen, "Rubbish! Do your work already!" His expression was twisted, insanity had raided his fearsome eyes. The flirtious gentleman had long become a past.

The guardsmen were displeased of this insulting behavior but they dared not to word it. That did not mean they would take it like a puppy under command, one bodyguard gave a side kick and sent the rock off into the sky.

Oh no... Thought Sang Tie as he saw where the rock was traveling.

...

Ye Chong was analyzing the model. He felt he had picked the perfect place for his research as the room was fully soundproof and he was having his own space, undisturbed by the outside. Peace and qu—

Klank!

Ye Chong was astonished as he shifted his sight over the source. The window was... broken? There were cracks over the window, seemed to be reminding him something had happened. He got up

from his seat and walked to the window.

There were a crowd below.

What had happened?

...

Meanwhile, Rui Bing walked on. She had generally lost her sense of direction, fortunately she brought a generous supply of nutrition capsules and water or she would be long dead out of starvation or thirst. "Inhabited with humans my foot!" Rui Bing kicked the sand angrily, as she had hardly met with anything human.

Her snow-white face was tainted by dirt and fatigue, her fair white garb had already been dirtied by the dust. Her determination remained untouched however, as she called it a trial, a training to her dignity.

She marched through the sandy place.

She had marched for the past 10 days. With her speed being a Jie expert, the mileage would be great, she felt she had traveled half the globe yet she had seen nobody. She did encounter lots of animals though. The animals could have been a good source of food to anybody else but her, as she was a vegetarian.

The wind was whispering through the sleeves of her dirtied garb. It was as if offering her a ride to the west.

She looked out afar, the summits seemed to be breathing, the height varied, she could feel the life of nature, a refreshing sensation. Being a girl who grew up in the metropolitan, she had never viewed the beauty of Mother Nature herself. The chilling breeze of the peak seemed to have sent her fatigue away.

Ah!

She saw something! Down the slope, there seemed to be a spaceship there. Tidied her garb, she hopped down and began



dashing like a white eagle.

...

"Old Wang, how was it? Could you fix it?" asked Shi Chongming as he lowered his body.

Old Wang did not reply, his hands constantly moving from one circuit to another, his hands shifting back and fro, from the screen of the machine to the circuit.

Three minutes lapsed, "Ugh!" Collapsed Old Wang, "I can't seem to fix it. Damn! I did not expect the Refraction Spring to be broken. This thing should be the last thing to break, but why? We don't have anything like that in our storage..."

"Oh no..." Frowned Shi Chongming, "The Second Young Miss was still waiting inside the cabin. She was not allowed to ride a mech ever since she was born and we are 5000 kilometers away from Guilar... there's no other city nearby either..."

"It's my fault." Old Wang looked troubled. "I should have placed a Refraction Spring in the storage. What should we do now?"

"I think we could only contact the Third Young Miss for the moment... see if she could send a spaceship here," muttered Shi Chongming as he turned on the communicator and hurried himself into the cabin.

"Miss, my apology but the spaceship seemed to be beyond repair at the moment," stated Shi Chongming courteously.

"Oh... what should we do then?" Shi Yinfu's sweet voice rang in panic, "I ha contacted the third young miss."

"What did my sister say?" said Shi Yinfu, her gaze jumping around Shi Chongming, which confused the man, "She said Guilar is in a sticky situation right now, so she hoped that we could arrive at Guilar much later. And she was out of hand. She ordered us to take our time."

"Did something happen there?" Shi Yinfu sounded really nervous now. She had a strong bond with her young sister so she was worried.

"Hmm..." Muttered Shi Chongming, "Something should have happened... judging by her tone, it sounded grim. But don't worry, the third young miss is very capable, she could handle anything."

"True... sister is much capable than I," Shi Yinfu relaxed, who then sighed, looking dejected of her statement, "Well, it's good too, we could have some leisure looking at the scenery around. Uncle Ming, how do you think?" She forced a smile.

Shi Chongming who captured that tiny gesture of the girl, feeling his heart aching, also forced a smile, "Yes, miss. I had been the plain only on a trial when I was much younger. It's been quite sometime..."

A shriek was heard.

Shi Chongming flinched... he whispered, "I'll have a look."

"Take care," nodded Shi Fuyin in a smile.

He headed out and saw a running figure coming towards them.

It was Rui Bing.

She quickly held her steps, from total mobility to zero. Such skill! Shi Chongming complimented.

The tainted garb, the dirty face, it must be a practitioner in training! And it was a girl!

It was a rare sight to see a female practitioner, especially one who would undergo a tedious training like this. Only the practitioners who had mastered the skills would undergone a harsh training to further hone their skills.

Shi Chongming was also a practitioner himself and he had undergone similar training when he was younger, so he knew how tedious the training could be, he felt impressed of the girl's

bravery.

"My sincerest apology for causing such havoc." Being alert, Rui Bing acted politely as she bowed at the far, "Would fellow gents tell me the direction to the nearest city?"

The voice was clear, the tone was soothing, exuding a different kind of sensation to the ears, a pleasing personality. Shi Chongming was again, impressed, for such girl maintained her modesty despite her masterly skills.

Shi Chong suddenly was inspired. He got an idea!

...

... ..

"What the heck just happened?" Ye Chong's flat voice was giving shudders to everybody. As more men had gathered by the gate, Sang Fan and his gang had started feeling stressful. Sang Tie was as if fighting the Great War, guarding the entrance surrounded by crowd. The strength he demonstrated was great, so no one dared to step to the front to provoke.

The Sangs converged their sight at Hai Lian in disconcert, wondering why Hai Lian would want to save this lady, since it was not a culture for them to save strangers from a fight.

Hai Lian pulled the White Streak girl away and kneeled before Ye Chong, he begged in shriek, "PLEASE! Sir! Please save my compatriot! Please! I plead you!" He torn his right sleeve and there revealed... also the same white streaks.

"Ah!!" The girl was shocked, "Ha...ha..." Her tears were wetting her eyes, that was the first compatriot she had ever seen other than her mother.

Ye Chong was silent, because he was not sure of the situation yet.

Hai Lian knocked his head on the ground vigorously as he kneeled, a typical sincerest begging position at the most pathetic

plight out of the greatest desperation. His forehead was bleeding, the girl at the side was crying, pulling the arm of Hai Lian, muttering an imperceptible language as distorted by her sobs.

"Sang Fan." Ye Chong frowned, "Lift him." He pointed, at the manically behaving Hai Lian, whose forehead was stained by streams of his blood and tears. It was terrifying especially with more blood dripping from the corners of his lips.

Sang Fan forcefully lifted Hai Lian. The strength was so great, Hai Lian could not even struggle.

The compatriot grasped Hai Lian, like a treasure, a long-lost brotherhood, as her tears showering her pretty face, mumbling unknown words.

Sang Ling could not see this scene anymore.

"Guo Ren, mind briefing me what happened?" He would like to ask Hai Lian but that guy seemed to have lost his ability to speak currently, so he asked Guo the Old Chief instead.

So Guo gave a briefing on the backstory of the White Streak tribe, which gave a shock to everyone. "Dammit!" Angered Sang Tie, "This is inhuman! These people are cruelty! Lian my brother, no worries! Nobody would dare to even touch you with me at your side!" He tapped his chest and demonstrated deep brotherhood. The remaining Sangs seemed to be enraged of this bloody fact as well.

Sang Tie's passion was great, but sometimes too great with that booming voice of his. The others could feel their eardrums rupturing, including the white streak girl, "Tie!" Shouted Sang Ling, "Sir is just right here! Have some manners! If you want to shout, shout elsewhere!"

Sang Tie withdrew himself, feeling embarrassed.

Normally, if something tragic happened to a total stranger, Ye Chong would refuse to even express his slightest sympathy, since

there were many, many more people who had suffered worse fate... like he himself for example, who did not even know who his parents were. But well, Hai Lian was still a partner of his, so no way he could ignore this.

He turned his head to Sang Fan, "Tell Sang Huo to move everyone here. We would be meeting 10 kilometers outside the city. Be prepared."

"Yes sir!" Replied Sang Fan, the Sangs were looking happy while Hai Lian crashed the ground with his knees again, "T-t-t-t-t-thank you."

The White Streak girl also kneeled along. Hai Lian was having blood and sweat staining his face, as they dripped to the carpet, "From n-n-n-now on..." His voice rang hoarsely, "My life would be yours." Worshipped he along with his compatriot.

"What is going on?"

"Did the masked man send a rock flying five floors high?"

"The Masked Man is a danger."

"They did it again?"

The crowd was collecting at the hotel and did not intend to leave as they looked at the strange group inside the lobby.

At this stage, it would be impossible to cover up their whereabouts anymore. They had been dragged under the spotlight. Well then, it is time to gamble again.

Thought Ye Chong as his eyes traveled through the rumbling crowd outside the hotel, setting afar.

## Chapter 302: Old Chief Guo's Idea

The Three Aristocratic Families all received the information. They immediately noticed the link between these 20 Jie experts and the 8 Jie experts that appeared in Foundation city. With that, countless people were deployed to Lunaris.

At the same time, in the auction of the Unmanned Black Market, 30 lavagold bullions were sold at a sky high price to a mining company. This was the purest lavagold anyone had ever seen in the Unmanned Black Market. No one knew how the 30 lavagold bullions were extracted to produce with such high purity. The auction may not be particularly well known, but those who participated were all aristocrats.

In fact, the aristocrats were not interested in the 30 lavagold bullions themselves, but the method of extraction. However, identifying the seller in the Unmanned Black Market was more than difficult.

In Guilar city, a thousand-strong battalion were advancing fast in the deserted plains. All of them wore a silver mask. Fortunately, many of the people in Guilar city wore masks too, so they did not particularly stand out. Even so, the deathly aura coming from them was conspicuous.

That said, anyone who could survive in Guilar city would be intimidating.

The hotel where Ye Chong settled down was already crowded. There were many who still were quickly making their way towards the hotel.

Greda was already much calmer by now. He knew that he could not win, and so he said, "Fine, you're the man. Humph, we'll do it your way!" He spoke venomously. The guards around him all relaxed at that.

Ye Chong could hear the grudge in Greda's voice, and his eyes

gleamed coldly. Ye Chong was in no habit of leaving potential threats alive.

"Capture them all," Ye Chong pointed at Greda and his gang.

Of all the spectators in the hotel's main lobby, a masked man pointed at Greda, and immediately, seven figures appeared in the room.

"Jie experts!" Someone gasped. Just like that, all the observers were thrilled. They kept their eyes wide open, unwilling to miss anything.

The seven figures moved so quickly that they only appeared as an afterimage. One could hear the dull sound of punches coming from Greda and his gang. The spectators could barely see the shadows of the seven figures as they attacked.

The crowd was riled up. These must be the legendary Jie experts! No one paid attention to Greda. The playboy was notorious in Guilar city, and everyone had only tolerated him because of his father. Now that he had met his match, many were happy that he finally got what he deserved.

In less than half a minute, Greda's gang were all rounded up. Greda suffered the worst, his body covered with patches of green and black. Sang Tie had vented all his anger from hearing the fate of the White Streak tribe on Greda.

The arrogant gangsters were now all curling into themselves on the ground, moaning in pain. Old Chief Guo whispered into Ye Chong's ear, "Boss, the Jin Gui tribe is rich, how about we ..." As he spoke, he rubbed his right thumb and middle finger together.

Ye Chong's eyes brightened, and he nodded. "Okay, I leave it to you."

Old Chief Guo signalled his understanding, and approached the gang. He gave them a few kicks here and there, like he was teasing some animal.

"Alright, it's you." Old Chief Guo pointed at a guard on the ground, and the guard turned pale, thinking that he was about to be finished off. "Get up, get up," Old Chief Guo ordered impatiently. "I'll let you go now. You'll go to your tribe leader, tell him that your Young Master has offended our master. Tsk tsk, not only that, he even wanted to harm our master. So, your Young Master's staying with us. However, our master is mindful of the good relationship between your side and mine, and doesn't want to make things worse. As long as your tribe pays up, your Young Master will be returned to you all safe and sound. Understood?"

Knowing that he was safe for now, the guard was overjoyed, and quickly nodded. "Understood, understood."

"Alright." Old Chief Guo seemed satisfied. "Every guard will cost you five million credits. We'll let you off free of charge as a sign of goodwill. There are 12 guards here, so 60 million credits should be good. The Young Master is a man of status, so, let's make it 20 million credits." Old Chief Guo abruptly spoke with deep menace, "The total is 80 million credits. You have two hours. Hehe, there will be no deal after that. Understood?"

The guard swallowed heavily and nodded vigorously. "Un - understood ..."

"Then scram! Remember, two hours!" Old Chief Guo glared at him.

"Yes, yes ..." The guard bowed and nodded, and quickly turned to leave, like he was pursued from behind.

Sang Tie sidled up to Old Chief Guo and walked around him, studying the man curiously as he tsk-tsked in awe. Old Chief Guo looked at Sang Tie oddly, feeling his face for a moment as he asked in confusion, "Tie, what is it? Something on my face?"

Sang Tie replied jokingly, "Old Guo, I didn't expect you to have a few tricks yourself, been breaking the law before haven't you? Heh, what a daring sum, five million credits for one person, you're



quite the greedy man."

Old Chief Guo was embarrassed by the tease, and explained reluctantly, "I did it for the squad, we're poor after all. Besides, to these people, five million is just a speck. Look at him," he pointed at the moaning Greda, "It's probably just his casual annual allowance."

Sang Tie looked at Greda, and felt angry all over again. The Sang tribe members had to go through so much to earn a little money, but this b\*stard's annual spending was already in the millions. He could not help but gave Greda a few "extra gentle" kicks.

"Hiss!" Greda inhaled sharply in pain, his body contorted backwards like a bow, and his eyes bulged like a fish's. The guards around him quivered in fear as they looked nervously at Sang Tie.

Sang Ling could not help but let out a little laugh as she watched Sang Tie and Old Chief Guo doing their thing. Her cold eyes instantly melted into a blooming spring, and Sang Fan could only stare dreamily from her place.

The hotel was crowded, but no one dared to step into the empty space before the entrance. They all believed in the absolute strength of Jie experts. Besides, wasn't there a rumor a few days ago of a Jie expert crushing a mech's armor with only bare hands?

Shi Xin watched indifferently, unmoved by the fight. The only thing that confounded her was the fact that Ye Chong and his group had actually demanded ransom. The Shi family and the Jin Gui tribe were close. While the Shi family had a wide and more superior influence, both sides had cooperated with each other on even ground. In any case, she still had to pay her dues.

After some pondering moments, she made up her mind. Shi Xin stepped forward alone, bowing in the direction of the hotel's entrance and hailed, "I am Shi Xing, from the Shi family of Tian Xing Cove. Greetings." She greeted the way a junior would a person with higher seniority.

The Shi family was well known. The crowd that had only quieted down now came to life again.

"Shi Tiancheng has a respectable daughter!" Amidst the crowd, a middle-aged man commended as he watched Shi Xin with interest. A woman who could act so calm and dignified before a large crowd was stately and impressive.

"Shi Xin, female, age 24. Went for external training at age 17. Her outstanding performance led the tribe leader and her father, Shi Tiancheng to recognize her as a talent worth nurturing. She was involved in a series of significant events such as the Shi and Jin family alliance and the Shi family negotiation. Besides that, on March 20th last year, she was secretly engaged, her partner remains unidentified." A fair-skinned and handsome young man who stood beside the middle-aged man commented swiftly. The middle-aged man wore a mask, and was surrounded by guards.

The middle-aged man smiled and said nothing.

Old Chief Guo stepped forward at Ye Chong's signal and said, "Well met, well met. What can we do for Miss Shi?" Initially, he was quite uptight, but he soon played his role smoothly. Life was truly mysterious. A few months ago, he was still in the lowliest ranks of society. Now, he could speak on even ground with the likes of the aristocrats like the Shi family.

Shi Xin spoke respectfully, "Begging your great indulgence, Uncle Roland had always took care of me, and Greda is like a sibling to me. His offense to you and your own was most disgraceful. However, he is also young, rash, and ignorant. Please consider forgiving him. He would definitely see the error of his ways and make amends."

The middle-aged man could not help but applaud, "She can speak well." The young man beside him did not look so impressed. The middle-aged man sighed to himself and explained, "The girl is discreet. She's not familiar with the other party, so she chose not

to speak in the name of the Shi family. She spoke only of herself, about her gratitude to Roland, and asked for mercy based on their sibling-like relationship. This way, not only would she not offend the other party, they might even commend her for her willingness to repay another's kindness, and chose not to make things difficult for her. Impressive!"

Seeing the middle-aged man being so generous of praise, the young man could not help but feel unconvinced. "These social etiquettes are common."

The middle-aged man took a glance at him and said plainly, "To act decisively and appropriately before thousands of people, before 20 Jie experts, is that something you can do?"

The young man was silent for a long moment in deep thought, as he finally felt shame. "I've underestimated the situation."

While Old Chief Guo did not like the aristocratic arrogance in Shi Xin, the girl was still alright in other respects. He laughed and said, "Miss Shi, no need to worry, you'll find out in a moment."

Shi Xin realized then that the other party did not intend to kill Greda. She bowed again respectfully and said, "You have my sincerest gratitude," and retreated into the crowd.

With his part done, Old Chief Guo heaved a sigh of relief and made to return to the hotel. Just then, another person emerged, leaping out from the crowd.

## Chapter 303: The Disciples Come in Drove

"Greetings sir, my name is Zhang Sunli!" Zhang Sunli had a squarish face, with thick brows and large eyes. He was a fine man, his muscular body reaching 180 meters in height. He was obviously a man of emotions. His palms were calloused, and he behaved courteously.

"Oh, how can I help you?" Old Chief Guo looked curiously at the 30 year old-ish man.

Zhang Sunli affected a look of respect and bowed slightly before replying, "Zhang Sunli has trained in combat since young, and has always worked hard. However, due to the lack of a capable teacher, I've not have much success thus far. Your warriors are all strong, in the realm of Jie, something we all dreamed of achieving. I beg your greatest indulgence to please consider having me by your side. I would not dare to wish to be accepted into your clan, only that you'll allow me to assist your miscellaneous tasks." Zhang Sunli spoke sincerely and with determination.

Old Chief Guo was stunned. The man was asking to be a disciple! However, he could sympathize with Zhang Sunli's desire. There were many people just like Zhang Sunli in society. Old Chief Guo himself was in his position before. However, he had chosen to train as a mech pilot instead. He had also trained hard from childhood, but without an eminent teacher to guide him, he could only barely pass as a mech pilot now.

With this precedent in place, others followed. The crowd began to make similar requests. "Please have me too, please have me too!"

"That's right, that's right, if I can have a Jie expert as my teacher, there's hope for me just yet!"

"Please accept me, please accept me. I have good fundamentals, I work hard ..."

The crowd was boiling with enthusiasm as the people all stepped

forward to offer themselves. Old Chief Guo was suddenly their gateway to success.

Old Chief Guo was shocked. He never expected people to ask to be his disciple! Zhang Sunli was also shocked. He did not imagine that his actions would lead to this madness.

Old Chief Guo grew troubled. Ye Chong and the rest inside the hotel also turned wary. The situation was getting risky. If someone was instigating the crowd, then they might lose control of the situation. No matter how strong Ye Chong and the group was, they would not be able to handle a huge crowd like this.

Old Chief Guo dared to linger further, and quickly ran into the hotel. Heck, given the situation, if he continued to stay where he was, he might just be overrun by the crowd.

Ye Chong was also looking a little grim. Sang Tie quickly brought Old Chief Guo over. Just as Old Chief Guo stepped into the hotel, his comms device rang. Old Chief Guo took a look at it, and his panic dissolved away instantly. He ran to Ye Chong and cried, "Sir, our items are sold."

Ye Chong was overjoyed. The only reason he was still on Lunaris was because the money was not yet transferred to his card. Just then, the credits from the lavagold auction were registered in his card.

Sang Fan added then, "Sir, Huo and the others are already outside the city, ready to move."

Ye Chong ordered Sang Tie, "Get Hai Lian and the other one here, we're leaving the city." After that, he turned to Sang Fang and said, "Ask Sang Huo to prepare to receive us."

The crowd outside was still brimming with excitement, but no one had dared to enter the hotel. The Jie experts were still scary, after all.

Ye Chong and his group packed up. Ye Chong himself had no

interest in the potential disciples outside like Zhang Sunli. Zhang Sunli himself was already buried in the crowd. Greda and his guards were of insignificance now.

## Chapter 304: Roland's Gamble

Roland was deeply anxious. He cursed the no-fly zone around Guilar city, but recalled that he had actually voted for it to be set up. He smiled wryly to himself. Greda was too disappointing. His son's usual troublemaking was tolerable, since other people would be wary of him and leave his son be. But now, Greda had messed with those Jie experts!

Roland had decided to pay the ransom. He would give his son a good smacking, see if he would dare do this again! "To think that he had went against Jie experts because of a mere woman! The stupid boy will die in a woman's hands if this continues!" Roland cursed inside.

However, the Jie experts were not trying to make things difficult for him. Roland knew this from experience. 80 million might be a tremendous figure for the commoners, but it was only a drop from the ocean for him. Why would Jie experts be in need of money? It would be such a joke. Any aristocratic would pay more than this to the Jie experts. It seemed that the other party only wanted to make a tiny show of punishment to Greda.

Killing at the slightest provocation was not befitting of a Jie expert.

What would Ye Chong and his group think if they knew Roland's thoughts on them? Roland ran fast. Even though he was Tribe Leader, he was also one of the tribe's elites when he was young, and had even completed his own ascetic training. He was a formidable fighter in his own right.

Roland's group was much more formal than Ye Chong's. Full security measures were taken with the Tribe Leader himself making an appearance, . More than 300 guards clad in black close-fitting combat suits surrounded Roland at the center. The group advanced quickly, but none of them showed any signs of fatigue, evenly breathing as they were. Their procession attracted

attention along the way.

Roland arrived just when the crowd's enthusiasm in requesting acceptance into Ye Chong's group was at its peak. The guards around Roland noticed the dense crowd, and forced a way through. The people pushed out of the way turned back to glower and yell, but when they saw who it was, they forcefully stopped themselves from uttering their first words.

Roland and his guards entered the scene, and the crowd gradually quieted down to a deafening silence. Anyone who survived long enough in Guilar city would recognise the Jin Gui tribe's leader. Now that the Tribe Leader was here to save his own son, anyone who made a misstep here will have to bid farewell to Guilar city.

"I am Roland, greetings!" Roland stood formally and bowed. Attaining Jie was no mean feat. Usually, one attained Jie at around 50 to 60 years of age. Hence, Roland chose to speak in a respectful tone.

Ye Chong and his group was about to leave when Roland's voice grinded them to a halt. Ye Chong took a glance at Greda and signaled to Old Chief Guo. Old Chief Guo took his meaning and walked out of the hotel with deliberate ease.

"To have Tribe Leader Roland himself visiting, you honor us!" Old Chief Guo did not sound very honored.

Roland spoke pensively, "My unworthy son has behaved most inappropriately to offend you and your company, he deserves the harshest of punishments."

Old Chief Guo laughed. "Tribe Leader Roland, you exaggerate. Boys are boys, it is in their nature to be petulant, he just needs a little education. Alright, back on topic, do you have money ready, Tribe Leader?"

The crowd was stunned. A Jie expert was asking for money!



"Here is a billion credits. Please accept it with my sincere apologies." Roland produced a purple-gold card.

A Tribe Leader in all his power and glory was openly negotiating with a group of Jie experts. It was too outrageous!

Most of the people stared at the card, panting greedily. A billion credits was an impossible figure for the average commoner.

However, Roland did not hand over the card to Old Chief Guo. Instead, he bowed down deeply and said, "Roland has a request as well, if all of you would be so kind to consider it!"

"What is this request ?" Old Chief Guo looked at Roland, intrigued.

"Roland's unworthy son is impossibly stubborn, and Roland acknowledges his inability to educate him any further. However, if he continues like this, he will never succeed in life. Roland would ask for you and your group to accept him as a disciple. Roland would not expect him to be a Jie expert like yourselves, only that you would change his ways for the better."

Taking a disciple? Boss would never agree, Old Chief Guo was certain of it. Before he could reject the man, however, Roland's next words came like a bomb, "Roland would offer 50 billion credits as the teaching fee for Greda!"

50 billion credits! The crowd went mad! Just what in the world was 50 billion credits worth? A Moonlight mech cost 30 thousand credits. A small-sized starship was worth two million credits. A mid-sized starship was 30 million credits. A large-sized starship was five billion credits.

This was the price of ten large-sized starships! Even the powerful Trilobita Mech Squad had only 15 large starships, and that was the result of decades of savings.

Old Chief Guo hesitated, and replied, "Please wait a moment, we will discuss this."

The middle-aged man in the crowd sighed, "The old fellow's cunning."

The handsome young man beside him countered, "He knows nothing about the other party, how could Tribe Leader Roland act so rashly?"

"You don't understand!" The middle aged man said, "He's taking a gamble!"

"A gamble?" The young man's handsome features twisted in confusion.

"Yes. Greda's upbringing is such that Roland can no longer make his son behave. Besides, the old fellow's busy with his own work, and has no time to take care of Greda. Roland is gambling with 50 billion credits for a chance to mold his son into a better person. Don't forget, the Jie experts are mysterious, affiliated with no aristocratic family. If they really accept Greda as a disciple, the Jin Gui tribe might just find themselves an ally. Roland is crafty."

The young man was unconvinced. "But no one knows the background of these Jie experts, why would he feel that his son will be safe with them?"

The middle-aged man took a glance at the younger man and said, "Remember, a man of status must have the right mindset. He can always bear another son, but this opportunity will not present itself again. He is now given a golden opportunity for both Greda and the Jin Gui tribe. If Greda continued the way he was, he will never be a man of substance. Roland loved his son, that's why he's willing to invest with 50 billion credits for him, and for the Jin Gui tribe."

The middle-aged man added, "In this world, nothing comes without risks."

The handsome young man pondered for a moment before asking, "If it was you, would you make the same decision?"

"I will," the middle-aged man answered without hesitation.

"Third Young Miss," an old servant came to Shi Xin. Shi Xin was surrounded by more than a dozen guards. They were either openly or discreetly protecting her .

Shi Xin did not turn to look at him. "Uncle Hua, you're all here." Uncle Hua was one of the people she trusted most. Growing up in an aristocratic family, she would always be accompanied by an attendant. Attendants often come from the families that branch out from the main aristocratic bloodline. They were all excellent in combat and managing tasks, and they were loyal to the aristocratic family. Uncle Hua was Shi Xin's attendant. He had watched over her ever since she was born.

Uncle Hua did not look his age. His skin was smooth and fair despite being over 50 years old. He spoke with a mellow voice, "The starship that Second Young Miss is on is stranded, should we deploy some men to assist?"

"No need, they just got in touch with me. I asked them to take their time arriving to Guilar city. The city is in a state of unrest now. Second Young Miss has always been fragile, it will not do for her to be troubled." Shi Xin asked, "Uncle Hua, did you bring the card?"

Uncle Hua nodded. "Here. Isn't this for buying mechs from the Xue Lan clan?"

"It was. Let me have the card for now, we'll see how it goes. We might not be getting mechs." Shi Xin looked meaningfully at the hotel.

Uncle Hua and the rest had just arrived, and was not aware of previous proceedings. However, Uncle Hua did not hesitate and handed over the card to Shi Xin.

Shi Xin would never imagine that her second elder sister, Shi Fuyin had gotten into trouble just then.

The group chatted amiably. Shi Chongming described to Shu Fuyin his ascetic training experience while he was younger, and Shi Fuyin could not help but gasped again and again at his misadventures. Rui Bing still looked like her usual cold self, but she was getting eager to try out this strange method that they called ascetic training.

She realized that the annoying but beautiful woman had brought her to unfamiliar territory, a place not part of the Five Galaxies. When she first found out that she was no longer in the Five Galaxies, her first thought was that she might never see Ye Chong again. The thought made her deeply aggrieved.

Perhaps this was her fate. Rui Bing sighed quietly to herself pitifully. She was in no mood for conversation, and maintained her silence throughout the journey. No one dared to approach her for a chat, since she was obviously a cold person. Aside that, ever since her surprising demonstration of her skills that day, any admirer of hers would now be revising their judgment of their own merits.

Just how strong was this cold woman? Shi Chongming was very curious.

Nonetheless, Shi Fuyin had developed a fondness for Rui Bing, and always entwined her arm with Rui Bing's. Rui Bing was also sympathetic towards a fragile lady like her. Besides, back at home, Rui Su had always liked to embrace her as well, so the intimacy was not unfamiliar.

On the other hand, Shi Chongming was secretly happy to see Rui Bing and the Second Young Miss being so close.

The dry weather had caused the earth to crack beneath them. The deserted plain was only occasionally interrupted by a few crooked gray-brown salix willows.

Rui Bing abruptly halted. Her expression turned severe as she listened intently.

Everyone else was startled.

"Careful!" Rui Bing's eyes turned sharp.

The group was still confused when they heard a disquieting rustling sound becoming clearer and clearer. Zhi Chongming grew nervous.

# Chapter 305: Crisis

The cracks on the ground suddenly glowed light blue. Everyone was stunned by what they were seeing, except for Shi Chongming. Shi Chongming's face was already drained of blood as he gasped, "Blue Crown Serpents!" He had seen this animal before during his ascetic training. Back then, he had watched from up high and afar at the chilling blue light. It was only when the blue light receded that he carefully approached the place to take a closer look. For kilometers around where the blue light had been, he could only see mechs reduced to useless wreckage.

The already startled group turned a shade paler.

On the ground, a misty blue light leaked out of the cracks. It would have made for an astonishing sight from high above the skies. The blue light stretched outwards for a few kilometers.

The rustling sound became louder and louder. Shi Chongming acted first. He deployed his mech while the rest of the guards recovered from their shock and took out their mechs next. However, Shi Chongming knew that, even with his mech out, it was already too late.

Blue Crown Serpents lived beneath the earth's surface, and only emerged occasionally. They were naturally vicious and moved quickly, making them terrifying creatures. More importantly, they often appear without warning.

The guards' mechs were already out, the pilot cabins opened. The guards rushed to their mechs like their lives depended on it.

"Imb\*ciles, come back here. D\*mn it, are you leaving the Second Young Miss behind?" Shi Chongming was infuriated by the escaping guards.

The guards stopped in their tracks and looked to each other. They quickly turned back. Shi Chongming was right. If anything happened to Shi Fuyin, they would not survive for long even if

they outlived the young lady. Unlike normal hired guards, the guards assigned to protect the aristocrats themselves were all chosen from their own clan or tribe. The guards families were all with the aristocrats. If they left the Second Young Miss to escape themselves, not only would they be punished by death when they returned to the tribe, their families would also suffer greatly.

Their escape just then was done out of instinct to save themselves. Shi Chongming's yelling had brought them back to their senses. Shi Chongming sighed to himself. The Second Young Miss rarely headed outdoors. These bodyguards were all inexperienced, and had panicked when trouble arrived.

He stole a glance at the cold female combat expert, and found her to be completely at ease. Just her reaction was enough to prove her superiority over everyone else here. Shi Fuyin had always stayed close to her parents, never experiencing anything so frightening like this. She quivered in fear and held on tightly to Rui Bing, her face as white as a sheet.

In just the blink of an eye, the blue light suddenly glowed more intensely. Rui Bing finally saw the Blue Crown Serpents clearly. Each snake was two to three meters long. The source of the blue light was a glowing pattern on its body. On its belly was a muscular protrusion and at the tip of the snake's head was a sharp horn, flanked by two air sacs that expanded and contracted rhythmically.

Rui Bing had never seen anything like it, but she was not too perturbed. Not many things in the world that could disturb Jie experts, and lesser still for Rui Bing.

Based on the Jie experts' level in the He Yue galaxy, many of the Jie experts in the Five Galaxies would not be on par with them. Combat was a dying skill in the Five Galaxies, so it was natural that their level was no match against the He Yue galaxy. However, the Five Galaxies were also home to many talents, such as Rui Bing. Her battle with Ye Chong had enabled her to attain Jie and become

the third Jie expert in the Rui family. After that, with her intense mech piloting training, she had broadened her skill set and improved herself even more. It was this extra improvement that allowed Rui Bing to be on the same level as the Jie experts in the He Yue galaxy.

Female combat experts were rare, and a female Jie expert was even rarer.

The Blue Crown Serpents were fast, but Rui Bing's sharp eyes could follow their movements easily. The protrusion in their bellies helped them to move. As the meaty protrusion pushed, the snake could move from one place to another in a flash of blue. The intense blue light made it even harder to see them clearly.

The mechs out in the open were the first ones to be hit. Ding ding ding! The Blue Crown Serpents launched themselves at the mechs, like blue energy beams raining on the metallic machines.

The seemingly invulnerable mechs were destroyed instantly, spraying a million fragments outwards.

Everyone but Rui Bing turned even paler. The Blue Crown Serpents were known for their viciousness, but no one imagined that the creatures could be so terrifying. Rui Bing's expression remained calm, but she was also surprised inside. These creatures were truly horrible! She was the only one of the group who could see exactly how the snakes launched their attack.

The Blue Crown Serpents were fast. They attacked with the seemingly thin horns on their heads. Rui Bing was surprised to find that they had attacked repeatedly in the same spots. After the first wave of snakes, the second wave launched themselves to the exact spots targeted by the first wave. The tough mech armors finally gave way under these continuous and accurate attacks.

That was how the snakes could penetrate the mech armors. Normal people would only be horrified by the power of the Blue Crown Serpents, but Rui Bing could appreciate with her sharp



senses the uniqueness of these creatures.

The Blue Crown Serpents were not so scary themselves. It was their continuous attacks that made them terrifying.

Shi Chongming looked at the mech fragments scattered on the ground, feeling hopeless. He looked to the Second Young Miss with guilt and regret.

This was the limit of any mech pilot. A mech pilot without a mech would be vulnerable. Any close range attack would likely end a mech pilot's life, unless he or she had excellent combat skills.

An alloy pole fell beside Rui Bing. She gently hooked it up with her leg and took it in her hand. The alloy pole was suitable enough to use, weighing just right and providing a good grip. While Rui Bing was confident of her combat skills, the situation at hand was not one that could be resolved quickly. With a weapon in hand, Rui Bing felt a little safer.

What else could she do in this situation? This was a fight for survival!

Rui Bing's aura suddenly transformed from pure coolness to intense focus, like a blade unsheathed. Her long, black hair flew a little despite there being not even the slightest breeze. With a pole in hand and her white training garb on, she looked positively handsome and valorous.

She brushed gently on her left arm, and Shi Fuyin's right grip was instantly released. She gave another push, and Shi Fuyin was tossed in Shi Chongming's direction. Shi Chongming was startled, but he quickly reacted and caught the Second Young Miss.

"Stay behind me." Her cool voice was absolute.

Just then, the Blue Crown Serpents began to attack the group.

Rui Bing's face was grim as the pole in her hand began to move. Rui Bing's movements were simple, but her attacks never missed. Once the trick to the Blue Crown Serpents' attack was known,

their power was greatly reduced. Rui Bing got better and better at predicting their attacks, and her movements grew even sparser.

She could hear painful howls and shrieks from everywhere around her, but Rui Bing kept to her attack range. She was determined not to be distracted, since she knew that protecting two people was the most she could do by herself. She could only steel her heart and continue fighting, but her attacks grew more and more ruthless.

Shi Chongming held onto the Second Young Miss tightly, looking at the back of the figure in white training garb. Her shoulders were not exactly wide, but he felt strangely safe behind them.

Just who was exactly this woman?

He knew next to nothing about this cold lady, except for her name, Rui Bing. Where was she from, and who was her teacher? He did not the answers to those.

He took a quick glance at the guards around him, most of them reduced to bones. Shi Chongming felt miserable. The Blue Crown Serpents attacked like a crazy shower of lasers. Amidst the blue flashes of attacks, a single pole had carved out a safe space just enough for three people to fit in.

Whack! Splat! He could hear the continuous attacks from the pole. The rustling sound loomed over him like the depths of despair. Time seemed to slow down. How long could she hold on? This was the only question in Shi Chongming's mind.

As fate would have it, Rui Bing was not the only one in a crisis.

On Coxcomb, Mu and Shang's bionic eyes were blinking madly. Little Rock sat in front of the photon processor, drenched in sweat. He stared fixedly on the photon processor as his hands flew across the controls. Zhu Ling watched him worriedly, and even Lian Yue refrained from his usual lackadaisical and foolish manners, staying quietly at the side.

Finally, Little Rock heaved a sigh of relief. However, his forehead was already lined with trickles of sweat, and he was completely soaked. Zhu Ling's eyes softened as she handed over a towel for Little Rock. He returned a sincere smile to her. Lian Yue could not help but exclaimed jealously, "Ah, poor me, no one handed me a towel!"

No one paid him any attention. Zhu Ling asked Little Rock softly, "What happened just now?"

"Mu just met a really strong guy in the virtual world, and they fought for awhile. Then a couple more strong guys came to watch from the side, so I went to help. But it was dangerous, getting to the end, Mu nearly lost himself in there," Little Rock explained, still a bit shakened.

"Impossible! Who can possibly be stronger than Boss Mu in the virtual world?" Lian Yue protested despite himself. Indeed, Mu had always reigned supreme in the virtual world. They had all witnessed it themselves. Even Shang was almost undefeatable in the virtual world. How could Lian Yue not be surprised by the news of a few new characters at the same level as Mu?

## Chapter 306: Popular

"I can identify four of them. As for the rest, information is insufficient for further deductions." This came from Mu. His bionic eyes were back to normal.

"Yeah, those people are strong," Little Rock nodded in agreement. "If it wasn't for my opponent being a little careless, I wouldn't have noticed them." He behaved just as usual. To him, meeting strong opponents was a normal occurrence. He did not know that he was already well beyond most of the advanced computation experts. After a pause, Little Rock spoke with a curious look, "The virtual world is very different from the one we're used to. The computations used look nothing like from our virtual world. Strange."

"Boss Mu, what is this place?" The question came from Lian Yue.

Mu paused for a moment before replying, "Information is insufficient for confirmation. 62 percent of the data fragments from my database is related to this place."

Lian Yue was shocked, and howled pitifully, "You can't be serious, Boss Mu, even you can't tell our whereabouts? What should we do next?"

"Here are three action plans, each one of them has about 70 percent probability of success, and each has its own advantages and weaknesses. Do you have other suggestions?" Mu asked, just as the holographic screen on Coxcomb displayed all three action plans.

The three of them shook their heads almost in unison.

"Due to the given circumstances, the decision will be made randomly." Mu acted quickly. The three action plans began to take turns showing on the holographic screen. When the screen finally stopped changing, only the third action plan, Plan C, was left on display.

After a good few minutes, Old Chief Guo finally came out of the hotel again. The spectators knew that the moment had come. Roland looked at ease, lacking any signs of nervousness.

Old Chief Guo came to a stop and stood there for a moment, as if thinking to himself, before speaking plainly, "We are humbled by your offer, but we have a few conditions."

"Pray tell," Roland gestured with his hand.

"First, your son will not be in contact with you for five years."

"I agree."

"Second, we will not be responsible for his life."

The crowd erupted into an uproar. Never had a teacher refused to be responsible for their disciple's safety. It was outrageous to accept so much money and still act so irresponsibly. This was 50 billion credits!

Just when the crowd expected Tribe Leader Roland to refuse, the man spoke with resolution, "I agree."

The people were riled up once again. They stared blankly at Tribe Leader Roland. To them, the proudly standing old fool was the most witless person ever. Nonetheless, some of the spectators looked thoughtful. These were mostly people who knew Tribe Leader Roland personally. They knew that the tribe leader would never act so imprudently. There must be some scheme behind this seemingly foolish agreement.

"We have an accord," Old Chief Guo found himself feeling oddly calm as he received the card with 50 billion credits in it from the tribe leader.

Zhang Sunli glared at him condescendingly. He stepped forward and pronounced loudly, "I did not expect that you so-called Jie experts would be so materialistic. I've overestimated you." Zhang Sunli's words resonated with many in the crowd. They too looked at Old Chief Guo with disdain, but dared not speak up.

Old Chief Guo took a quick glance at Zhang Sunli. He knew what the Boss was like, and did not care to waste the effort of arguing with Zhang Sunli.

Old Chief Guo turned to go back into the hotel, when another person spoke up, "Sir, please wait."

Recently, Old Chief Guo had been called "Sir" for more times than all the other times in his life combined. "It's not easy to be recognized as a person of higher status," Old Chief Guo mocked himself. He turned back and found that person calling him to be Shi Xin.

Shi Xin stepped into the empty circle before the hotel entrance and hailed, "I too would like to be your disciple, and will accept your two conditions. Here is 50 billion credits as payment, please accept it."

Once again, the crowd exploded in an uproar. This was the biggest drama of their lives, enough to fuel gossips for decades to come. Never again would they encounter anything like this! Shi Xin's guards were all stunned. Even Uncle Hua was speechless. He quickly made a call to the tribe leader and reported the events discreetly. He decided that if the tribe leader opposed this idea, he would force the Third Young Miss back home.

Inside the hotel, Ye Chong was already speechless. Another 50 billion credits! Why did it seem like any person could be richer than the previous one? However, why would anyone refuse money? Besides, Ye Chong needed the credits now. Even so, Ye Chong could not help but think about how poor they were compared to these filthy rich aristocrats.

Old Chief Guo saw Ye Chong nodded, and said, "Alright, since you have this determination, please join us." He accepted the card from Shi Xin and led the girl into the hotel.

Uncle Hua was struggling with himself, but he could only watch as Shi Xin entered the hotel, unable to stop her.

Shi Xin was already beginning to regret this. Was she being too rash?

She knew almost immediately what Tribe Leader Roland was scheming. Just who was behind this mysterious and powerful organization? She was sure that this group was not the full force of the organization. This was a power that could tip the scales on the power balance in He Yue galaxy. More importantly, this power was still a mystery to everyone. For now, she was the only one who could shoulder the responsibility of finding out more about this group.

It was after this chain of reasoning that she finally came to this decision.

"The girl has a bright future!" The middle-aged man in the crowd sighed with emotion.

A hundred billion credits had showed itself to the world. The people could feel the temptation, but no one acted on it for fear of the Jie experts.

Old Chief Guo entered the hotel and passed the two cards to Ye Cong. Shi Xin was observing them, and deduced that the lanky man must be the leader. Too bad that they were all wearing masks, concealing their faces.

Ye Chong said to Sang Ling, "Bring her to a room and take whatever she has on her."

Sang Ling nodded and led Shi Xin to a room.

Ye Chong looked at Greda, lying weakly on the floor, and said to Sang Tie, "He'll be your disciple from now on."

Sang Tie grinned as he rubbed his hands together. "Hehe, alright." Upon hearing that, Greda instantly blacked out. The rest of the group looked at him with sympathy. Greda will almost certainly live a bleak five years as Sang Tie's disciple.

Ye Chong nodded at Greda and said, "Take what he has on him

too."

Sang Tie gave another laugh before carrying Greda into another room.

On the other hand, Greda's guards were all released right then.

After a few minutes, Sang Ling and Sang Tie came out of their rooms, but the people they carried made Old Chief Guo's eyes bulged. Shi Xin and Greda were both wrapped up in blankets. Shi Xin was carried horizontally across Sang Ling, but Greda was carried under Sang Tie's arm, his white thighs showing occasionally through the blanket.

"What are you ..." Ye Chong began.

Sang Tie was confused. "Didn't sir asked us to take what they have on them?"

"You took everything they have on them?" Ye Chong wasn't sure if he should laugh or cry. He had intended for any communication devices to be removed from them, but Sang Tie and Sang Ling had been so thorough that they had removed everything, even their clothes. He was left with two naked disciples.

Greda was still unconscious, unaware of his naked flesh. Shi Xin, however, was wide awake, but she hoped against hope to be blacked out instead, her face now flushed with embarrassment.

"Yes," Sang Tie answered matter-of-factly. Sang Ling shared his sentiment. Hai Lian and Old Chief Guo felt like fainting. The White Streak tribe woman clinging onto Hai Lian was surprised, but soon laughed heartily at the sight.

"It's alright. What about their stuff?" Ye Chong asked.

"All destroyed, ground to a pulp." Sang Tie laughed sheepishly. Ye Chong looked to Sang Ling, and she nodded as well.

"Alright, good work." Ye Chong commended their thoroughness.

Extremists, the lot of them! Hai Lian and Old Chief Guo shared a



bewildered look.

"We're leaving the city." Ye Chong announced. Just like that, everyone stood up. Hai Lian, Old Chief Guo, the White Streak lady, Greda and Shi Xin were all carried by one member or another of the Sang tribe.

Just as Ye Chong and his group was about to leave, a woman's voice suddenly came from outside the hotel. "On behalf of the clan leader, Duo Huan of the Xue Lai Clan would like to invite you as honored guests to our place."

The crowd was silenced. Only Duo Huan's voice echoed in front of the hotel. The Xue Lai Clan had come for this group! Everyone shared the same thought.

Amidst the confusion, a man in black uniform stepped out of the crowd, wearing a cold expression. The sharper members of the crowd recognized this as Ye Bei, Consulate General of the Ye family on Lunaris.

Ye Bei stepped forward, reaching the side of Duo Bei and spoke in a low voice, "By the order of the Patriarch, Ye Bei would like to invite you all to the Ye family's place to discuss some important matters."

They're popular alright! Roland was pleased with his own foresight. The crowd around him was already gossiping loudly again. Two of the Three Aristocratic Families had issued invitations to the group. Any organization would be envious of this honor. Xue Lai Clan's Clan Leader and the Patriarch of the Ye Family were both discreet personalities who preferred to stay in the shadows. Even those within the clan or family would rarely see them in person. Now, both leaders had issued an invitation for this group of people!

"Haha, looks like we all had the same idea. In the name of our Chieftain, Feng Wuqing of the Xi Feng Tribe would like to offer our hospitality." Feng Wuqing's calm announcement was like

dropping a bomb into an erupting volcano!

## Chapter 307: Leaving the City

The appearance of the Three Aristocratic Families was a terrible surprise to Ye Chong, and an event that he had desperately tried to avoid. The rest of the group looked troubled as well. While they did not know of the relationship between Ye Chong and the Three Aristocratic Families, it was obvious that they were not on friendly terms. Besides, under the repeated cautions offered by Hai Lian and Old Chief Guo, Sang Fan and the rest finally got the idea of the strength of the Three Aristocratic Families. In Archipelago, one would never deliberately meddle with powerful wild beasts.

However, since they were enemies of Ye Chong, Sang Fan and the rest of them were ready to treat the Three Aristocratic Families as enemies too.

Hai Lian was standing beside Ye Chong. He had seen first hand Ye Chong's massacre of the Xue Lai Clan's members in Foundation city. He spoke up abruptly, "Sir, let me try something."

Ye Chong wondered at Hai Lian's sudden proactiveness, and nodded. "Alright, please go ahead." Ye Chong did not know what he was planning, but since he offered, he must be confident of the plan.

Hai Lian made to walk out of the hotel, when the White Streak tribe woman clung tightly onto his elbow, her eyes filled with terror. Earlier in the room, Hai Lian had put a mask on her face, and her delicate features were concealed behind the mask. Hai Lian patted on her hands clung onto his shoulder and cooed softly, "Don't worry, I'll be fine."

The White Streak tribe woman looked at Hai Lian carefully, but her hands finally loosened as she said, "Please ... Please be careful."

Ye Chong spoke up from the side, "Fan, go with him, keep him safe."

"Yes sir," Sang Fan nodded.

The two men walked out of the hotel together, showing no fear. The people gathering around immediately looked to them. The crowd was silent. Today's drama had been suspenseful and climactic all the way.

Hai Lian spoke, "Our leader is grateful for your kind offer. We are all honoured by your invitations. However, due to certain matters that we need to attend to, we are unable to stay here. Perhaps some time in the future, when there are no urgent obligations, our leader will visit your tribes and accept your hospitalities." Hai Lian spoke with much subtlety, but the refusal was clear. All this while, he had been a freelance mech pilot with his own reputation, and had been offered recruitment more than once. As such, he had developed a certain finesse to deal with situations like these.

The spectating crowd was large, and most of them were neutral parties. No matter how arrogant the Three Aristocratic Families were, they would not dare to be too forceful.

Feng Wuqing smiled softly, his delicate features captivating the audience. "Oh, what urgent matters do your party need to see to? Our tribe may not boast a large community, but we are always happy to lend a helping hand. Perhaps you can tell us about it, our tribe will offer what assistance we can."

Ye Bei humphed coldly, and stayed silent.

Duo Huan gave a soft laugh, which sounded like the comforting ringing of windchimes. She stretched her body slightly, her curves attracting the attention of all the men nearby. Her flat, smooth abdomen was exposed, showing her sensuous navel. The men around her inhaled sharply.

Duo Huan winked at Sang Fan and Hai Lian and said, "My two handsones, don't listen to what Sister Feng, who knows what kind of scheming she's had in mind. Why not tell me about your troubles? Oh right, the Clan Leader said that the last time was the result of a misunderstanding, no need to worry about it. Xue Lai

Clan has always been the most hospitable." Her intonations hooked the attention of her listeners in the crowd. When the people around her heard Duo Huan referred to Feng Wuqing as Sister Feng, they laughed softly despite themselves.

Feng Wuqing laughed softly, and was not offended. Xi Feng Tribe placed heavy importance on mental and spiritual training. He would not be so easily offended by words.

Hai Lian and Sang Fan were both unaffected by Duo Huan; Sang Fan due to his steady heart, and Hai Lian due to his recent encounter with a certain woman.

Hai Lian replied calmly, "Haha, your kindness is appreciated. However, this is a personal matter that we prefer to keep to ourselves."

Ye Bei's expression darkened, and he said coldly, "Are you really not going to give in?"

Hai Lian was pleased inside, but he asked sarcastically, "Oh, Mr Ye, what could you possibly mean by that?" If the aristocrats really dared to make their move in front of so many people, it would be a most foolish mistake.

"Ye Bei will not disobey the Patriarch's orders. Please don't make this difficult for me," Ye Bei sounded even colder.

Hai Lian opened up his arms and said unabashed, "Ah, please forgive us, but we really have matters to attend to."

Looking at Hai Lian's performance outside, Ye Chong began to understand his intentions. He called Sang Tie over and whispered a few orders to him. Sang Tie stared at him for a moment, but quickly grinned widely.

Both sides refused to give in. Just then, Ye Chong suddenly led the Sang tribe members out of the hotel. Hai Lian and Sang Fan saw him coming, and retreated to stand behind him.

The mysterious Jie expert group's leader finally revealed himself!

Everyone stared at the mask on Ye Chong's face, wandering just what kind of person was under that mask?

When Ye Chong came out of the hotel, Feng Wuqing's thin smile vanished from his face; Duo Huan turned more serious; Ye Bei's expressionless face turned a shade colder still.

"We're busy. We will take our leave now," Ye Chong's plain voice sounded absolute.

He led his group and began to march forward.

"Please stay." A small group of people blocked their path. Feng Wuqing and Duo Huan watched silently from the side. Those were Ye Bei's men.

"Are you looking for a fight? The Ye Family is powerful indeed, perhaps you'll even become the master of Guilar city." Hai Lian said with mock surprise and sarcasm.

Ye Bei stopped in his tracks.

Some of the people in the crowd began to mock, "Yeah, it's the Ye Family, the strongest aristocratic family, what wouldn't they do?"

"That's right, hehe, can't be part of the Ye Family without being arrogant!"

Most of the people in the crowd were not used to seeing the Three Aristocratic Families' unbridled arrogance. Some of them looked angry, including the Jin Gui Tribe Leader, Roland. The Three Aristocratic Families had ignored his tribe's power in this area as they went about their business – how could he not be offended?

Ye Bei looked terrible. Feng Wuqing and Duo Huan cursed the man silently in their hearts. However, they were both anxious as well, since their own reinforcements had not arrived yet. They were also uncertain if they could hold down the Jie experts if it came to it.

"Please step aside." Ye Chong used the word "please", but he sounded anything but polite.

Ye Bei made his decision then. Since it had come to this, there was no need to for further restraint. He stood his ground.

Sang Tie and Sang Ling were both carrying Greda and Shi Xin, respectively, but they were both rendered unconscious. Beside Ye Chong were Sang Fan and another Sang tribe member, Sang Heng. All of the Sang tribe members that followed Ye Chong into Guilar city were all elite members of the tribe.

Sang Heng took a step forward and reached for Ye Bei.

Ye Bei anticipated this. Against a Jie expert, he could only hope not to be too gravely wounded. Ye Bei lifted his left hand to block, just as quickly. Sang Heng was halfway through his attack when his right hand suddenly reached for Ye Bei's left elbow.

Ye Bei noticed the change and reacted immediately. They were both fast. The real action was over in the blink of an eye. A soft "Bam!" was heard, and Ye Bei stumbled backwards for a few steps, his face red all over.

His stumbling backward opened up the path. Compared to him, the rest of the group was more easily dealt with. Ye Chong did not even have to move a single muscle. The rest of the Sang tribe members easily pushed the rest of the Ye family's people aside.

Ye Chong's eyes shone – it was Black Cove's style alright! Ye Chong was familiar with Black Cove's combat style, and recognized it in Ye Bei's moves.

Feng Wuqing and Duo Huan were both shocked and terrified. The three of them were all their families' representative on Lunaris, and knew each other well. Ye Bei was the best amongst them in terms of combat, but he was now struck back with just one hit. It would be impossible for the both of them to stop the Jie experts from leaving.

Must they really use mechs? Feng Wuqing and Duo Huan both arrived at this conclusion. However, they were also very hesitant to act on it. If they used mechs here, it would be a direct violation of the no-fly zone regulations. They knew exactly how serious this violation would be.

Nonetheless, they could not just stand by and watch the group leave. Just then, a voice came from the crowd, "Brothers, Elder Wang just gave the order. If anyone dares to use mechs in Guilar city, kill them!" The true ruler of Guilar city had finally stepped in.

"Yeah, yeah, that's right, let's see which d\*mbass would dare to use a mech in the city!"

"Humph, don't think that Guilar city is powerless!"

The spectators all stared openly at the members of the Three Aristocratic Families. If any of them showed the slightest intent of deploying their mechs, they would face the wrath of the crowd. Tribe Leader Roland's guards kept vigilant as well. To the Jin Gui tribe, the city was their home, and they would not allow anyone to destroy it, even if it were people as powerful as the Three Aristocratic Families.

Curses and spites were thrown from the crowd. Feng Wuqing and Duo Huan exchanged a wry smile. They could not do anything now. Their actions were already pushing the boundaries, something that the He Yue galaxy would not tolerate.

Ye Bei's men could not stop the Jie experts. Ye Bei could only curse his reinforcements for being late.

Ye Chong and his group easily walked past the Ye Family's people. They immediately picked up speed.

Feng Wuqing and Duo Huan exchanged a helpless glance, and followed Ye Chong's group from afar with their subordinates. This was the only thing they could do for now. As long as they kept the group in sight, they would still have a chance. Once they were



outside the 300-kilometer no-fly zone, they will be able to use mechs. No Jie expert, however strong they were, would be able to win against a mech.

Ye Bei recovered his calm composure, and took his men with to pursue the group.

Many of the more curious people in the crowd followed the aristocrats as well.

However, the distance between the three groups slowly widened. Ye Chong's group was so fast they had managed a wide gap between themselves and the aristocrats. On the other hand, the aristocrats themselves were all physically superior to the commoners following them from behind. As the people following the aristocrats realized that they would soon be outrun, many of them gave up.

Some of these people, however, ran back instead. The fools in front of them had forgotten all about hovercars!

Both the aristocrats and Ye Chong's group were moving fast, but soon, the Jie experts began to slow down. The Three Aristocratic Families were all encouraged by this and ran on.

Ye Chong watched as the Three Aristocratic Families pursued them from behind, the edge of his mouth lifting up into a cold smile.

Rui Bing breathing was beginning to shorten. Her vision was getting blurry. What she saw was no longer a colourful world, but only the blue light shot towards her. It was as if she had entered a one-dimensional world, made entirely of lines. Everything around her seemed to slow down. She could see the Blue Crown Serpents more and more clearly, despite their lightning fast strikes. She could even make out all their small movements.

Rui Bing did not know how long she had been at it. She was panting, and sweat covered her forehead, but her heart was

peaceful. Against the possibility of death, she did not feel scared.

The Rui family's combat style focused on mental training, bearing some resemblance to the concept of mentalist training in the Sanctuary. She was not an expert in purely physical exercises, but even the mental attacks that affected Ye Chong were of no use against these Blue Crown Serpents. In this battle for survival, she did not have much choice.

There were so many Blue Crown Serpents that it was impossible to count. Besides, they were surrounded by kilometres of these flickering blue lights. They could not hope to escape.

Under the circumstances, Rui Bing could only hold her fort. More and more Blue Crown Serpents appeared around her. These snakes could attack from all angles, with some even leaping into the air and coming from above her. Seen from afar, Rui Bing and her two companions looked like they were enveloped in a blue light cocoon. Rui Bing felt her senses turned sharper, and her instincts more reliable. If she could survive this ...

Rui Bing's attacks turned simpler and simpler, as the alloy pole met its attack with greater and greater accuracy. Rui Bing never let the alloy pole hit the horn on the Blue Crown Serpents; the pole would always hit the snakes' bodies.

Shi Chongming felt a deep chill in his heart. Under the protection of the alloy pole, he and the Second Young Miss were entirely unharmed. His message calling for urgent assistance to the Third Young Miss was unanswered. His heart had chilled at that, and now, hearing Rui Bing's gradually shortening breaths, he began to feel despair.

He never would have guessed that Shi Xin's comms device was already smashed to pieces by Sang Ling.

Somewhere far away, high in the skies, a large battalion of mechs were heading their way. The 500 over mechs were organised into five standard battle formations.

## Chapter 308: Escape

The land was glowing in blue. The Blue Crown Serpent was fearsomely the pain for every man and woman who underwent their trial. You might be one of the strongest fews from your planet, but when you saw that deadly blue cloaking the entire place, the immediate despair would convince you to stumble. They came from the underground and soundlessly they travelled, silently they attacked their prey. It was already death before you noticed.

Every pilot from Ye family would have to complete such trial after passing their elementary test. Unlike the other families out there, the connection between combats and piloting were much closer than one could imagine, their hands were still used for close combats rather than tapping buttons on the control panel, which justified the hatred towards Blue Crown Serpent on their journey.

Ye Qin was the significant figure in the younger generation of Ye family, who passed her trial at flying colors at the age of 18, while also being the youngest among the only 10 females who completed the trial alive. And currently she received an order from her family, of heading to Lunaris to assist Ye Bei, who - like most youngsters in the family - had a cold, lonesome personality and a crude desire towards strength. While she disliked young men like Ye Bei, the order was an emergency, also a compulsory one, with an elaboration stating to follow Ye Bei's order wholly. "Who does Ye Bei think he is!?" She was not pleased by the setting this time.

The more thought-provoking part was, what had actually happened on Lunaris, that her family asked almost every descendant of Ye they could find to help. There were war machines, 500 of them, which would be a compelling sight even at the parking lot if you would ask me. In her family, you would surely be something if you were officially indexed in the family record. And there were 500 standard war machine models in

standby, with 500 indexed, recognized and registered pilots inside. Those were more than enough to launch a small-scaled intergalactic war. The Yue galaxy had been at peace for all these years, which at most, little conflicts would happen sometimes but it would not be as outrageous as this time, where every pilot was called on.

Ye Bei should probably know why, I'm going to have a talk-to with him once I got there.

...

What?

Her eyes rested upon the blue screen of despair, where the Blue Crown Serpents covered the place. There was something different from the crawling mess she used to see. It's a blue cocoon?! Ye Qin spotted the cocoon being constantly attacked by those Blue Crown Serpents.

She then quickly launched a full input on the control panel. Her Night Impaler was equipped with the most hi-tech detection system. It was powerful that it could give high definition zoom-in on any spot, like the cocoon for example. "What the..." There were people inside?!

That was skillful! Complimented Ye Qin in amazement, which to her more surprise, it was a female too! The female actually guarded all the raining attacks by the serpents! The Alloy Cane literally was dancing in her waving sleeves. Ye Qin was speculating if this white lady was an apprentice of some great masters.

But she should not be doing that. She had a mission to do, no time to stop. Well, she might not have the time, it did not mean she could not lend a hand.

Blue Crown Serpents were always a horror to martial arts practitioners, but they would be nothing as soon as they got into the air, fighting against mechs.

"Zi, lead two Netters and rescue those people. Don't take too long, we won't be waiting forever," ordered Ye Qin.

"Yes, Ma'am. It will only take brief seconds to handle the pests." A strong young man replied on the screen.

Three Netters zapped away from the formation and headed towards Rui bing.

Netter was a rescuing/assisting model built with great firepower. It was armed with Lux Terrain technology, which could impose a dense network of firepower to - as its name suggested - net friends or foes. The weakness was, however, its speed was mediocre, so as its guard. It was born to be the stapler between different mech models in the party, while it also had tedious demand on energy consumption, that it would be a hassle to constantly resupply the battery. The appearance was Netter was peculiar, it actually looked like a clam?

Rui Bing had changed to automatic mode herself, as she swung her cane subconsciously, so she did not notice the coming of the three Netters. Her ears had been drowned by the clashing sounds that negated her surrender to death, repetitively slamming the serpents away.

The Netters headed towards Rui Bing in a triangular formation.

"All in Battle Station."

"Set the net."

"3...2...1..."

Zappp! The Lux Terrain was launched, as hundred beams blasted from the launchers, forming the terrain itself.

Netter was the model exclusive to the Ye family, as they had gotten so used to close-ranged battles that they lacked a standard assistance on a long-ranged war. With this in mind, the Netter was built, to cover up their weakness, though the Ye family was notorious for their accuracy. The model was then designed in a

way that it did an Area-Of-Effect attack rather than the standard firing.

The three Netters were gliding in the air, reposting the terrain like a spotlight, as the ground was painfully cut open, the Blue Crown Serpents obviously did not survive. If it was not an operation of rescue, they would have turned up the power and bombarded the entire place, and the serpents would be ashes by then.

Their army was leaving, as it was rather ahead of them now. Zi did not want to waste time any longer. Madam wanted to save these people, so the Netters would save them. The side quest would be accomplished once they netted the folks.

So they lowered themselves and flew by Rui Bing rapidly, they also adjusted the range of their terrain to a diameter around 5 meters. It was like a cage that isolated the folks from the serpents.

They turned up the lever, "Full Power Initiated!" The density of the terrain intensified, that every serpent would be grilled upon contact.

Rui Bing had finally gotten out of her trance, she grabbed Shi Fuyin and Shi Chongming tightly and followed the Netters.

The Netters moved forward and cleared out a zone with their terrain. Rui Bing began sprinting, sprinting hard, on the scorching grilled ground for her and her ally's lives.

She ran on and made a close escape from the aggression behind.

She took a glance back, those horrible blue glows... Rui Bing might be a Jie expert, but she still had the nature of humanity of being in fear, that she almost tripped herself. She was fatigued, drastically fatigued. The moment she confirmed her successful escape, her adrenaline sank, that fatigue caught her steps, she panted heavily, wondering when she would fall before she noticed, hoping that she could regain little vitality from her catch of

breath.

The Netters - upon seeing the folks escaped - made a sharp turn and zoomed back to the army.

Pant... pant...

"Wh..." Rui Bing took half a minute to finally comprehend the situation, "What was that? Who... were those mechs?"

"It's the Ye family!" Said Shi Chongming with joy, "But..." His face tightened right away, "They seemed to be heading Guilar... what was happening there, that the Ye family would send such a huge army...?"

"Ye family?" Rui Bing was choked, "Ye... Ye..."

...

... ..

Feng Wuqing, Duo Huang and Ye Bei led their own underlings and chased the group desperately. The strength demonstrated by those Jie experts had convinced them to even consider about attacking in a No-fly zone. The 3 teams only hoped they would not lose the Jie experts for now, although fortunately the Jie experts seemed to be slowing down, as their distance did not increase.

A No-fly zone about 300 kilometers was rather distant to be passive. Feng Wuqing and her mates were wondering if they could deploy their mechs now. "No, I don't think that's right. It would be really bad..." They agreed on the opinion and scrapped the idea.

The landscape was tiring ahead, as it was no longer flat, rather there were slopes, even a few hills too.

The Jie experts had already entered the area and submerged into the valley. "No! You aren't going away!" Feng Wuqing and the mates panicked as they ran even faster.

Ye Bei and his own underlings were ahead, thanks to their well-built physique as required by their family. Beep Ye Bei received a

message from Ye Qin - We have entered Lunaris, coming soon.  
"Good!" Ye Bei was overjoyed.

The flocks headed into the valley. The Jie experts might be strong, but there were merely 20 of them, and we have at least 300 men on our side. It would be a daydream to capture the Jie experts without our mechs, but it also would be a joke if the Jie experts wanted to annihilate us.

I would love to have a one-on-one with those Jie experts, it would be fantastic if they stopped chickening out and turned back like a man. That is too what we desired in the first place - to cling to them.

Ye Bei and his allies were well-prepared so no fear, no worries.

But after they got into the valley, they changed their mind.

They were welcomed by 10 teams of hundred men army standing still in formation wordlessly. The atmosphere was frightening, as their mask showed an emotionless cruelty.

Ye Bei, Feng Wuqing and Duo Huan flinched.

They quickly turned back to have a glance, which then they realized a few silhouettes were circulating at the exit.

Luring the foes into trap - that was the simple yet effective strategy Ye Chong came up with, as somehow that instinct he grew up with back on Trash Planet was coming back to him and guiding him out. That was when he still piloted good old Winnie with that poor piloting skill of his, despite of which he still fought on, bravely.

And in his cold eyes, those foes in a flock about 600 to 700 were nothing but those preys he once hunted back on Trash Planet.

"Charge," briefly he spelled the commencement.

The air was clouded by countless afterimages, the Sangs finally revealed their deadly fangs again.



This speed! Jie Experts?! ALL of them?! The three aristocrats were in utter grief, as fright filled their eyes begging with mercy. The slaughter happened fairly quick. Compared to those beasts in Archipelago, killing these aristocrats would be a piece of cake. There was no letup from the Sangs however, despite the foes they were fighting being weaklings. The formation was there, so was the strategy, which boosted the efficiency dramatically.

"ARE YOU HUMAN!" Screamed Ye Bei on top of his lungs, "I KNOW YOU GO BY THE YE FAMILY'S NAME! Don't YOU too, want to know who your PARENTS-" And he was ambushed.

Ye Chong lifted his head straight away, the glow in his eyes shook like his will.

Parents... Parents? What a foreign word... If it was not the biology lesson Shang had with him, he would have assumed he never had any parent. He only remembered his Papa, but never once Papa had mentioned anything about his parents.

He knew it, he knew it well, that those words of rage coming from Ye Bei was for no one else than him.

He knew he went by the Ye family's name. His name was Ye Chong. Wait... Did that person know something? He should know something! Thought Ye Chong as he looked at the ambush... And Ye Bei was there, on the ground, no longer mobile, no longer could word his rage, no longer able to spell out the past of Ye Chong.

The war ended quickly. It happened so quick it did not feel like a war, "Like a street fight maybe." Laughed Ye Chong, realizing how ridiculous he was being unfocused by some triviality. The only entity I would care... would probably be Mu Shang, that was what I thought. It seemed like I was wrong.

He on his throne, looked at the Sangs repositioning themselves back into their formation, their eyes were bloodshot, their breath was frantic as the wild.

It was a problem, Ye Chong thought.

As long as they could not withdraw their bloodthirstiness as soon as the necessary fight had been conducted, they would be forever aimed by the enemies, they would be that bullseyes in the war field, that spotlight in the public. Nothing on them was low-profiled, which Ye Chong could not tolerate. He just wished to expand his forces in the dark, to a point where he could at least stand alone in this world.

He was small, he was insignificant, as he stood in a boundless new world of unknown. The idea of heading back to the 5 major galaxies in search of Mu Shang had already become a tale, told by a fool.

The Sangs were great assistance, yet they were poor - finance-wise and standard-wise, yes they were impeccable fighters, but their skills were mere brute force exerted crudely. They could not hide their nature, so were the Collisions they piloted, which travelled so uniquely everyone on the road would look at them inevitably. Ye Chong did not even dare to deploy the Collisions to hasten their travel.

The Sangs were great force, but they were one force that could not be deployed on a whim. Once the Collisions were exposed, Ye Chong knew what he had summoned from the defensive He Yue galaxy.

Ye Chong gave a nod to Sang Fan, who understood his intended order immediately, as he ordered everyone to deploy Collision and get into the cabin. To be frank, Collisions - despite being unnecessarily eye-catching - were the perfect tool to make a runaway, due to its anti-detection ability as well as its superior speed.

Piloted the Collisions, they zoomed away from the scene.

# Chapter 309: A Fortune in One Night

"BREAKING NEWS!"

"Extra! Extra! The 600 figures of the 3 leading Aristocrats - MURDERED!"

"No one is alive!"

The news came like a deafening blow to the residents, which spread throughout the galaxy as fast as lightning, uncontrollably. The words came from those who came after on their hovercars, who also taped the gory scene promptly. The clip had become the most viewed visual online in the next month.

The hologramic visual recited a tale, of a heartless war and a sadistic leader, convincing every resident in He Yue galaxy, that a new force had arisen from the unknown.

The networking system was then supplied with a visual of Ye Bei against the mysterious Masked Man. Although few seconds it lasted, it had caught enough attention from people. There were comments, a sea of them regarding the expertise of the Masked Man, including one Jie expert namely Cao Wuxu being the most significant one, concisely summarized - "Light yet heavy, feeble yet strong." The statement had evidently confirmed the myth that those 20 men were Jie experts themselves.

Everyone was in panic, while pessimistic ones were making wild guesses that they would lose the peace maintained in He Yue over a few centuries and they shall never have it back.

Stories were filled at the forum board regarding the identity of 20 Jie experts, how the 600 aristocratic members followed them and deceased. And concerning the murder of 600 committed by them, the actual Jie experts demonstrated strong disagreement, "That is just nonsense!" Jie experts were known to be the greatest of their field, a one-on-five or even one-on-ten would sound doable. But one-on-fifteen? The chances were just low, and now this case had

20 against 600, which literally could be translated as a Jie expert facing around 30 people at once and 30 of these people also happened to be an elite fighter and pilots from the aristocrats. "What are the chances to even survive?"

Some argued that the aristocrats were losing standards, but that was not the case in reality. In fact, as far as everyone was informed, the aristocrats were stern on their recruitment, only those whose strength was fully recognized could join them. Theoretically, the 20 Jie experts should not even win.

...

"Ye Bei! I'm here! I'm... Ahh!!!" Gaspd Ye Qin the moment she arrived. Looking at the bloody mess around, she knew she was too late. Her brain jammed, unable to process the scene. The remaining pilots of Ye family who came to the scene - similar to Ye Qin - they were first surprised, then they were angered. No one had once challenge the authority of Ye family over the centuries before.

Ha...hah... Ye Qin tried calming down, as she sent the team to search throughout the valley, and of course, she found nothing. She was not worried though, as she had already set up a group of watchers dedicated to the case this time. They would watch all the spaceships, all the mechs departed from Lunaris.

As long as these masked men left Lunaris, her men would know. She was confident in her family.

The next few days lapsed within twinkling of eyes, yet nothing was found. And that was when Ye Qin's confidence began crumbling. She was not convinced of how a huge group of people could virtually vanish into thin air.

People all over the galaxy had been trying to find out the truth, the hidden mystery. And only the Mi family was the closest to the truth, but they were not that foolish to share their intelligence, especially after their parents had warned them to zip their mouth

regarding this. The brothers of Mi family were not scarce in Guilar, but nobody would notice them. They were not pushed to the spotlight unlike the Ye family who suffered most loss. The worry was... they wondered, if it was a fortune or misfortune to have acquainted such a strong ally...

"Regarding the happening, do keep it from the people."

A request from Guo, which they accepted promptly, they had to. Like seriously these masked men wiped out the army of aristocratic members like a moving slaughterhouse. The Mi family would be hardly a threat if the masked men wanted to exterminate them.

In this incident, there was too a case of both parties being in an awkward situation - Jin Gui tribe and Shi family. And that insanely priced fee of 50 billions and those 2 tough conditions to be fulfilled were easily the funnest chitchat topic after dinner.

The reinforcement of the 3 leading aristocrats was sending signal to the people, that something was brewing. It was a chain effect whereby all forces also performed the similar military movement too.

What about Ye Chong? Well, he had already run away safely and headed back to Yi Ju, with a bunch of resources he purchased during his journey.

Ye Chong was rather satisfied of the loot this time. The Lavagold plates he brought were sold for 80,000,000 points, while the squad was paid 10,000,000 points for escorting Mi Qi and his mates. These were not everything, the best thing was the two fees he earned, a whooping 10,000,000,000 points. You should be counting the number of zeroes now. If someone were to interview Ye Chong regarding his feeling of earning a fortune overnight, he would be shouting, "It feels so good to shop!"

Sang Pu's expression was priceless when he received a request of entry from Ye Chong, who was leading a whole transporting fleet

filled with tons and tons of resources, including communicative devices, detection system necessary for the army of Collisions. Ye Chong also purchased 5000 units of Blaze-III, a close-ranged fighting model of the lower-mid tier, known for its slightly more competitive engine - a rather plain model one could say, as every other aspect was average. It could be useful for the speedy kind of pilot though. It was still a better mech compared to those advanced models he saw back in 5 major galaxies, while also having a reasonable, logical structure and design.

Other than these, Ye Chong also purchased a ship of apparatuses for mech modification, and a new spaceship literally for storing medication - that ship was for the Sangs from Archipelago since they would be needing proper medication any second being in a hideous place like Archipelago. There was also a variety of daily necessities. The Sangs felt they were dreaming when they were raided by the avalanche of purchases, even Sang Pu the laid-back leader could not help but to smile the whole day.

Guess not everyone could take on a massive wallet in one night healthily.

To avoid being suspected, all purchases were made under the name of Mi family. They were known to be merchants and obviously there would naturally be nothing wrong for merchants to make bold purchases - a better candidate than Ye Chong himself.

The joy did not last long for Ye Chong as he realized he still had a lot of problems to resolve.

He took a deep breath and began his SWOT analysis.

The first thing - control of expression. This is the main problem, if I don't find a way to resolve this, everyone would be looking at the Sangs and no one would even dare to approach them. I might have an experience or two on this, but man... how should I teach them? I did not know how but I just learned it somehow, somewhere, some time ago. "Sang Pu." Well, I'll let Sang Pu to do

it, let the Sangs settle their own problem.

"Announcement, sir has a new rule - Anyone who could not inhibit their fearing expression would be disallowed to leave the base."

"What is fearing expression?"

"How do we inhibit them?"

If I know how, we would have solved it alright.

Everyone in He Yue is watching us. I can't let you guys out just yet. It would be bad if anyone found us out, that would be a direct confrontation to the aristocrats, an intergalactic war would just happen. No, I'm not doing this, not risking it.

"Sang Ling, any idea?"

"I saw this dress thingy in the catalogue attached with our medication. I think it helps."

The 5000 Sangs were figuring out a way to inhibit their fearing senses.

"Hey, Guo!" Shouted Sang Fan.

"We can't know if we still look fearing. Come and be our judge."

"You too, Hai Lian, don't just stand there and touch those new units."

The victims... well would be Guo and the "representation" of the convention. They had to judge if the Sangs could demonstrate less threatening aura.

"No, you got to stop glaring at people for no reason," stated Guo.

"Yeah, try smiling. Yes, bring up your corners. I'll do it for you, ughhh. Lend me your mouth for a sec. Relax your muscle, I'll push the corners up," said Hai Lian, who soon realized he made the greatest mistake in his life, "Nevermind, try mayb-"

"HEY Hai Lian! You're done yet? Come and judge for us now?"

shouted Sang Pu.

That practically summarized what happened that day, the folks were dragged from one group of Sangs to another. Only Francis Jr. seemed rather eager in this, "I don't see why Hai Lian is ranting, Guo. If we do this, we could avoid doing those hell training." Now that made sense.

The second issue - Collisions. Yes, the Collisions I made were impulsive, but too visually impulsive... I guess no one would forget the appearance of Collisions the moment they saw them. That is why I bought the Blaze-III model, as a camouflage sometimes.

The thing is... how would someone from the jungle know how to pilot via an intelligible glowing user interface from outer space? How should I teach them. Okay, let me try.

"Sangs, gather up. Now let me brief you on using this new mech."

"First, as usual, take out your keystone and deploy the mech."

"Good, next, to move you give a few taps on the control panel, these few buttons to control direction."

"Sir!"

"Yes?"

"How do we turn on the control panel?"

"Why do we have to pay nails when we pilot the mech?"

The next hour Ye Chong dried his mouth, explaining on how to pilot a futuristic mech, but no one seemed to have understood him.

Okay, I surrender. "We would try something else, I have visuals for all of you." Ye Chong prepared copies of visuals for the Sangs. "Tutorial 1 - Launching: To launch a mech, first..." The visuals were playing on each projector.

"Sang Pu." Called Ye Chong again, "Lead them on this as well, okay?" And ignoring that bitter expression of Sang Pu, a new rule had been added, "Anyone who had yet mastered control of Blaze-III



would be forbidden to leave the base," announced Sang Pu.

That should be it.

One last thing, which had been haunting Ye Chong ever since they left Lunaris, remained in his thoughts for all eternity.

"Don't YOU too, want to know who your PARENTS-ughh..." Those final words from Ye Bei.

Who are my parents exactly? Why would they dump me at Trash Planet in the past?

Ye Chong had been showing negligence towards the issue, since survival was more important than some non-sensical issue of sentiments. This mystery only flashed in his mind occasionally, as it would be too far-fetched to even begin the search, having no clue, not even the slightest hint on where to start.

And when he thought he would not be thinking of this issue for the rest of his life, it showed up fatefully on its own.

The Ye family, the aristocrat which shared the same surname as his, and those words of Ye Bei, helped him to realize that he could be more closely related to the Ye family than he thought.

Could my parents be the members of Ye family? An aristocratic member? That sounds royal, and plausible as well. A nameless child born on a one-night relationship, what was it again? Shang told me once... "One-night stand"? And due to avoidance on the infidelity and responsibility, they threw me away.

Wait... Hahaha... I'm getting too Shang. I actually remembered one plot of those lame movies Shang introduced me.

He walked slowly to the window, looking at the barren world of Yi Ju. Out of sudden, he missed Mu Shang... He missed his Papa, he missed Grandpa Qian and those days of kneading dough, he missed everything, from the simple days he used to have, which already felt like a luxury.

"I should go on..." Whispered Ye Chong, "Let's just search on."  
His mind was firm, his eyes were steady.

"But to search on, there's few more things I need to do."

## Chapter 310: My Beautiful New Han Jia

In the main chamber of the Ye family, an elderly was gazing at the visual. His tussled hair was as white as his beard, looking ordinary especially with those wrinkles on his forehead and those murky eyes pondering. No one would have figured that this was the current master of the whole Ye family if it was not for the chamber he was in.

A visual of Ye Chong was projected, apparently from his participation in the competition at Blue Ocean academy back then. His speed and sharp mind, those clear eyes of intelligence, all captured in this visual. It was the only visual with his clear appearance available on the virtual networking world, but somehow the Ye family found it from another galaxy. And it was also this visual that helped Instructor Hak to track Ye Chong that year.

This mysterious young man kept changing his name. Was it Mu, or was it Ye Chong? I have no idea which his actual name was, although I feel strongly that it would be Ye Chong, since the surname gave more significance to us.

"Ye Chong... are you really the descendant of our Ye family?" the elderly asked. The questions fogged his thoughts. He looked through the information, of the effect and properties of the silver liquid, as well as its negative effects... and how Ye Chong just so happened to survive. He knew it well, that only one with the purest bloodline of the Ye family could overcome the controlling effect of silver liquid naturally without any form of medication.

Ye Chong was the only one user who managed to do that amongst the Black Covers. Then very likely he would be a descendant of the family, especially when his physique also depicted the exact characteristics of Ye. The elderly had been ordering men to capture this young man, as everything would reveal itself once he got this man. Nevertheless, Ye Chong was hard to get hold of, due

to his extreme caution and growing strength. The order of capturing him alive was not giving much help as well. The efficiency was depressing.

The elderly would not want to risk killing him. The underlings could be killed as many as circumstances led, but Ye Chong could not be deceased as long as he held the very possibility of being the descendant of the family. It would be a shocking news if every other core member was informed of this missing descendant, even though he could not remember any instance which involved an unnamed child.

The sole reason that the three aristocrats managed to be in a leading position, was absolutely their bloodline, which all three families possessed unique characteristics not the ordinary folks would be able to compete. Because of their extraordinary bloodline, their forebears expanded their forces slowly, forming the foundation for aristocrats today. "But there was a curse, sadly," muttered the old man. "Somehow there just is. Not only Ye family had unique bloodline, many families out there, at a galaxy far, far away were different in their own way, but they somehow disappeared at some point of history. There was a family... a tragic one I heard, the Sang tribe was it? Once in their glory centuries ago, and now nobody has ever heard of them..."

The bloodline was once the sole factor to glory, but it was now history, as technology was developed over the centuries. The 3 main aristocrats were competing against each other in aspects of intellects, skills and a balanced unity. These were not something doable by all descendants innately. If Ye family were to include all of the branches of their kinship, it would hit a figure about 3,000,000. The core family however, was hardly 2,000. It had been an ongoing issue on methods to preserve the purest bloodline for the next generation.

The trump card of all three aristocrats would no doubt be their strongest pilots, whom also happened to be their best descendants.

Practically speaking, taught students and descendants would share a significant difference in terms of their physique that would determine their capability being a pilot. And obviously the direct descendants of Ye family would be way stronger than a taught outsider.

That was why the elderly found Ye Chong suspicious, because that young man was clearly having the blood of Ye family, the purest one too, but he could not find any record on any of their daughters leaving the house in the past 15 to 50 years.

The puzzlement was, only both the purest blood of Ye family could give birth to a descendant with also the purest blood. He looked through the birth record of their family as well, and yes, the Ye family was rather strict on birth control, moreover, he was the leader of the family the whole time, no way he would have missed out anybody.

Well, only one possibility remained then... there must be one of our families who left the family and had intercourse with a female out there, thus the birth of a descendant of our bloodline... ... hopefully... That would mean a breakthrough of the stiffening status of their bloodline preservation to the old man, since they had been told to mate within the family to ensure bloodline purity.

It would be a major discovery if it has been proven with this person! It is all for our Yefamily. I will get this boy! Thought the old man, his murky eyes lustered. He was not worried about the Jie experts following Ye Chong, any Jie expert would be smashed with the mighty firepower of mechs. His worry, was on the other 2 aristocrats though, who seemed to have noticed Ye Chong's existence.

Meanwhile, Ye Chong, being completely unaware of becoming Ye family's main target, was getting drowned by the packed schedule of his.

Ye Chong was greatly inspired by the ancient mech model. And

he had just completed the blueprint of the improved version of Collision. The tweaks he made allowed better control and efficiency while having lesser likelihood of breakdown.

Collision-II project would be on hold for the moment nevertheless, as the production must not be done by barehands. It would require a refined craft with the aids of those new apparatuses he purchased.

But no one else in the base knew how to operate these apparatuses than himself. And he got to make 5000 of them from scratch? Fortunately he had the necessary experience on operating these that he was able to code a tutorial to be launched at the Sangs. Well... if they still had no idea what they were doing, the galaxy had this very place called "school", but only after they knew how to control their ambience.

Collision-II aside, I am doing an overhaul on my Han Jia. Yes, you heard it, the modification this time is pretty much going to be a remake, since every part would require to be redone. The materials, were certainly those skeletons I obtained from Archipelago.

Every piece of skeleton is different from one another, so I have to pick carefully while altering the blueprint from time to time, it feels like piecing the puzzle together. The process is smoother this time, thanks to the stay at Sang Family village in the past, I think my sense has improved.

The blueprint is looking good! Well, maybe it is a very unique model. Look at the originality...

Ye Chong was excited and the excitement had pushed him to his limits, he was very engaged during the process, that he enjoyed every second of it, as he was making his own mech, which every piece came from his own hands, finally.

"Okay, one two three, smile."

"Yes, keep it natural."

The Sangs were desperately trying to inhibit their fearing ambience so no one would disturb Ye Chong.

"Madame, have you seen the Papatte lately?"

"I haven't, Mrs. Morrison, they have been inside their base all day and all night."

"Right? Madame Peach, I was shocked awake by their clinking sometimes at night. I thought I was hearing things, even my husband was complaining."

"They haven't been taking any request either. Such strange group."

The housewives exchanged their thoughts outside with their baskets of vegetables.

...

"I am done!" The mech was completed, but Ye Chong was too lazy to come up with a new name, so the mech remained as "Han Jia".

Looking at his new toy, Ye Chong was pumped, his eyes were lustrous!

The new Han Jia was much smaller than most mechs out there, with a height of about 7 meters. Its wings however, were very broad and mighty-looking, which gave an impression of a butterfly. Those wings were made out of gelatin of the bones of one animal on Archipelago, while being also able to glow in blinking gold magnificently. They were perfect defense against energy-based weaponry, while being highly flexible, able to cover up the entire main body of the mech, maintaining stability in air.

The frame of the wings were in the shape of fan, which were made out of the backbones of Steelbats, with the pointy end being the tip of Edgehog - an animal exclusively found in Archipelago, which had a whole body of spikes, the toughest spike was known as

the "tip" being at the tip of its nose.

The wings could be withdrawn, while the skeletal frame could disengage and become 12 offensive tentacles - a radical design if you would say. The attack of the tentacles would be with peculiar flexibility while having high demand on the skills of the pilot. Similar to the winds, the tentacles could also be kept in the back of the mech.

Of course, Ye Chong would not forget his trustworthy dagger. With that installed, the joints were adorned with spikes, which certainly would be the eye-catcher if he were back in 5 major galaxies, but apparently such design was very common in He Yue, so with excitement, he incorporated it.

And there was a new cartridge launcher for new Han Jia, which was specially designed to store compression explosives, and possibly Beauty's Secretion, "Now only if I have that..." Sadly Ye Chong was unable to find something more corrosive than Liquid of Shang.

The engine of the old Han Jia, which the Teardrop was stored in, was removed. Yes, he eyed that Teardrop, the precious energy infinity.

The combination of a variety of skeletons gave bright colors while being not as eye-catching as he imagined. There was something charming about this combination. The butterfly wings were exuding elegance, the tiny body of the mech felt like a gorgeous lady, while the spikes seemed to be reminding the foes that this girl was a tough one. Somehow Han Jia had changed its gender overnight.

It was uncalled for Ye Chong to have produced such a mech. Regarding the feminine, "unmanly" design, Ye Chong did not seem to really care. He only wanted power and performance. "Though I must admit that, this mech is too beautiful that everyone would look at it. Not because of the color, it's just too beautiful," frowned



Ye Chong.

Well Ye Chong forgot about this issue the moment he boarded the new Han Jia. It felt like a breeze that Ye Chong would scream in overflowing joy. The body was smaller so it was more dexterous, and much faster too. And it sailed stilly in the air.

The tentacles were the lovely addition, for they were unpredictable, especially with that inhuman speed of his hands. But it would take a few times of practice to get used to the control.

My Han Jia had been transformed into a beauty.

My beautiful new Han Jia, would be surely one of the top 10 beauties among all mechs. And right when people mistook its beauty as fragility, they would soon be convinced that it was not beauty the only thing it could offer...

# Chapter 311: Makeover

Ye Chong sat at one corner near the window in the spaceship. The columns of nebula were gorgeous and calming to his soul. While enjoying the precious peace and quiet he finally acquired, he looked at the reflection of himself. Mu Shang would probably fail to recognize him at first scan too. His skin was yellowish, a pale banana yellow, while also filled with reddish blemishes over his plain features - rather threatening if you would ask me. The other passengers seemed to have agreed too, as they were very avoidant of Ye Chong, as if he was infected by some highly infectious horrible virus from unknown space. To be honest, Ye Chong was being stalked by the securities and was demanded to have a thorough bodycheck thrice before he even got on-board, well, since he looked too convincing to be infected.

Such drastic approach of makeover he used was from the ancient by the alchemists. And somehow Lunatic Guan was very much into it, as there were rich entries on the stages of makeovers in her writing. Ironically, Ye Chong picked the most despised method by Lunatic Guan, as she found the method to be too substandard, while spoiling her pretty face. That costed too much for a mere disguise.

That was not Ye Chong's concern however. He preferred a stat-boost rather than a decorative-boost. Furthermore, this method was proven to be highly effective, altering his appearance the most - exactly what he desired.

By combining fluids extracted from few strange plants in a prefixed proportion, a reagent would be formed, which would give a yellowish texture and poxes to your skin that would make you unsurprising even when you slept in one of the wards at the local hospital. The reagent was not harmful to the skin and was pretty lasting, waterproof too. Only a particular kind of cleaning agent could remove the coloring effect.

Ye Chong pondered long to figure out a proper disguise as he skimmed through the entries inside the chip given by Lunatic Guan, since he had hardly investigated this side of alchemy before. Quite some time was also consumed on mixing the reagent at the right proportion for his size. The other methods would require a few rare materials so it would be impractical to have all the Sangs discolored, although they seemed to be quite envious of the chameleon show their sir had performed, since it was a hassle to have a mask all the time.

Speaking of the Sangs, as the new rule enforced, they were forbidden from leaving the base as long as they failed to hide their threatening aura. Guo and the folks were also there, as to provide assistance on Sang Pu's works.

Ye Chong also brought a Blaze-III in the keystone for usual transportation.

He leaned against the chair and closed his eyes.

The Ye family, what kind of family it is I wonder... I came all the way here just wanting to know the family directly myself, although Sang Fan and his brothers showed resistance on this, I must.

What also hurried Ye Chong out of the base was his fear of how he lacked the understanding on the entire He Yue galaxy. Practically, he could not name anything he really knew about the place. The virtual networking world was not as common as the one in the 5 major galaxies and it was a stressful experience for him to overcome the paranoia of logging in, wondering if a super Maverick like Mu Shang would be there too. If so, it would be too dangerous. Jumping into action without knowing what you are jumping into, is certainly suicidal!

To make the Sangs less worried, of course he was equipped with a communicator.

Ye Chong was a figure from a thriller now, no one would dare to

join his screen time. That would be perfect, he just needed some silence, though the passengers could not stop their hustling whispers. There were passionate exchanges at some spots in the cabin, which were pleasing to his tensed neurons. For once, he felt blended in the environment.

But one particular discussion caught his attention.

"I heard that Kyaji was killed," a blonde young man whispered.

"Good. I was getting impatient seeing him still alive. He's a nuisance to our society." A broad faced man in his 30s was pleased by it.

"Are you sure?" One person was showing skepticism, "Were your sources reliable? Kyaji is still something you know, who would have killed him?" The participants of the conversation were being agreeable to this doubt. Kyaji had established the authority for very long with the brutality imprinted in mind of every person, especially those who frequented the trade market for they had heard various horror stories about the murder of known pilots in the hands of Kyaji.

"Meh." The blonde young man disdainfully replied, "Kyaji was nothing alright? I could simply name a handful of people who could kill him effortlessly. Say... the three main aristocrats, Brahmara\*, Ye Yin, Huang Jiming, I swear the family would slice that Kyaji like me slicing my chicken, not to mention we have 3 godly figures I have mentioned. Even Shi Tianlun from the Shi family, Mi He from the Mi family could triumph over Kyaji easily on a one-on-one."

"You have a point, but of all these figures you have mentioned, who would have the time to spare on defeating Kyaji?" Rebutted one person of the crowd, which stirred up a session of agreeable nodding from the others.

This was convincing as those aristocrats had always cared about benefits, they would not even care if the murder involved

strangers not belonged to their family.

"Although I heard the one who killed Kyaji was not from the aristocrat," added the blonde man, with a vibe of mystery.

"Who? Who was it then?"

"I dunno..." The young man shrugged.

"Oh... Aren't you that Hu Chui? Man, I really thought someone killed Kyaji at first."

"Hah, aren't you that notorious boy who cried wolf?"

The man's story started to lose its credibility in the crowd.

"Suit yourself. The fact is, Kyaji is already dead. The mech parts had been sent to Zhou Jian planet. The news would be coming up in 2 days. Well, we would know whether I am that boy who cried Kyaji soon enough." The blonde young man was not annoyed by the remarks.

Kyaji? Ye Chong flinched, wasn't that the name of the pirate guy whom Sang Tie killed?

Sadly the people thought the boy was blowing his trumpet again and had left the spot with disappointment. Ye Chong, however, was very much intrigued of the story. He got up from his seat and headed to the person, "Brother, greetings." Politely he began while habitually he maintained a 1.5 meter distance away from the young man, which turned out to be the most suitable attacking range of his fist - if anything would go wrong that is.

The young man was astonished as first but quickly he exchanged the expression with a smile, "Ohhh, hello, hello, is there anything I could help?"

"I was very much interested in your story actually," stated Ye Chong. "Regarding these few names you've mentioned, those Brahmara, Ye Yin, to be frank, I begged your briefing on this."

"You gotta be kidding man!" Exaggeratedly the young man

reacted, "I can't believe there's someone who did not know these celebs! Are you from the alternate dimension or what?"

"My apology for that," said Ye Chong, without looking embarrassed, "I am from the other corner of the galaxy, please tolerate my lack of knowledge on this."

"Mhm, mhm, alright, as long as you maintain such modesty, you'll be fine! No worries!" The young man was acting like a teacher despite his age.

"I know right. That's what I thought too," said Ye Chong as he got into a posture of listening, with a smile, and a thought muttering - if this fella tried to talk more crap I am so going to drag him to a dark corner and teach him to talk concisely with an interrogating session.

"You sure are quite a learner. Alright then, let me brief you on these celebs." The pride of the young man was fulfilled, that was like the most contented 5 minutes of his life, although those blemishes on Ye Chong's face were pushing him away slightly.

"You at least knew the aristocrats, did you?" asked the young man.

"I had heard of them, were they the Ye family, the Xue Lai tribe and the Xi Feng clan?" replied Ye Chong honestly, well of course he knew them, he just had an intensive dance party with all three of them.

"Good. At least you know something. So regarding Brahmara, Ye Yin and Huang Jiming... they are the topmost pilots in the entire galaxy. Brahmara you see, was the name of not the pilot, but the mech itself. It is the ace of the Xue Lai tribe, although no one had seen the pilot in person before. His identity has always been a mystery. Then we have Ye Yin and Huang Jiming being the ace of Ye family and Xi Feng clan respectively."

"The ace? That means they are really great, but how great?" Ye

Chong was very curious on this aspect of the story.

"'How great' you ask? Kek, well that would be a little horrifying. They had always been fighting an outnumbered battle, with a conquering victory in the end of course. Imagine you yourself fighting a thousand elites. Yup, that great." The young man was sharing the tale proudly as if he was the witness of the legend.

From the story, Ye Chong knew the person was just cooking up the story. One against thousand? Even if the thousand were piloting a Raven, they could murder the so-called ace pilots by their weight altogether.

"Well..." Sipped the young man on his drink, "Speaking of ace pilots, they were not the only few."

"Who else I wonder?" Ye Chong's interest inflated again, he got to admit that this young man knew how to tell stories despite being a typical trumpet blower.

"Well, brother, you never knew, the world is so vast that there are lots of formidable figures in the dark."

Wow, Ye Chong was impressed for the young man was actually able to spell out such universal law.

"Like... if we talk about technology, of course Xue Lai tribe is ahead of the other aristocrats. But if you mention about physical strength, Ye family would be taking that flag. Tsk, tsk, I wonder with those vitality, how long they could last on bed." An indecent expression coming from the young man, as he began munching the air, somehow reminiscing a past of his.

"Cough." He quickly got himself back to reality, "So, these two families... have their own perks, although I must say the Xi Feng clan fought in quite a strange way. We could say these families are great forces, but does that mean that all the great forces in the entire galaxy were in these families?"

Ye Chong lifted his head and stared at the young man.

"Ugh." The blemishes made the young man nearly choked his line, he swallowed his disgust, "I would say NO to that statement." And finally coughed out his words.



## Chapter 312: The Duo from Gray Valley

"There are so many experts in this world, as many as there are stars in the sky. Besides, in recent years, the various powerful forces around have been relatively stable, and rarely clashed with each other. Without battles, the relative strength of mech pilots is hard to gauge. People can only guess how strong a mech pilot really is. Take Bi Zhibo, for example. His name has been around for more than 20 years. His mech's called Nine Flames. The man's never lost, everyone's heard of him. Compared to the three super powerful mech pilots from the Three Aristocratic Families, you'll never know who's stronger without an actual fight. But will they fight just for the name? Never."

Ye Chong listened closely as the blonde man continued.

"No one really knows how many elite mech pilots there are, but there should be a couple dozen. You know, once you reach a certain level of skill, it's hard to know who's better than who. Moreover, judging a mech pilot's strength is no easy task. We're looking at piloting skills, mech models used, the interplay between these two factors, and the pilot's tactical skills and so on. Yeah, battle tactics are very important. Most strong mech pilots are good at strategizing, but some are better than others. You heard of Arwa before?" The blonde man asked.

"No," Ye Chong answered truthfully. He noticed that the blonde man's chattering had attracted a crowd around him.

"Ah, I knew you wouldn't know him. Brother, this is unacceptable. Look at you, so young and all, how can you be so ignorant? You should go to a school, get a good education, or you'll be the butt of everyone's joke and easily taken advantage of," The blonde man advised sincerely.

"Arwa is a mysterious man of skills. Rumor has it that his mech is only a normal advanced level mech, but he's a real tactical genius. He brings tactical skills to a whole new level. Besides, he's a real

good pilot, and frequently won against opponents stronger than himself. One of his most famous battles is the one with Ye Yin, where he managed to retreat completely unscathed. Ye Yin has one of the best mechs in the galaxy. This was also the only time Ye Yin did not win. Ever since then, Arwa's reputation skyrocketed, placing him side by side with other elite mech pilots. Almost every aristocratic family tried to recruit him, but he rejected them all. Hehe, he's the hero of us common people."

Arwa was obviously a famous character. A few young people gathering around him howled in agreement. Of course, there were some who showed disdain on their faces instead. These people were mostly from rich families.

"Later, it was said that Arwa had went to Gray Valley. Hah, he must be the best mech pilot in Gray Valley now!" The blonde man was obviously a huge fan of Arwa.

"Humph, best mech pilot in Gray Valley? What a joke!" Someone commented coolly from the crowd. Ye Chong looked towards the source of this voice, and found an arrogant looking long-haired man.

"What?" The blonde man and other fans of Arwa glared angrily at the long-haired man.

"Hua, don't speak nonsense," a middle-aged man standing beside the younger long-haired man reprimanded him sternly, and quickly apologized to the crowd, "Please forgive us, my friend is only joking, please don't take him seriously." The long-haired man called Hua looked unrepentant, but was pushed down onto his seat by the middle-aged man.

The middle-aged man did not look particularly memorable, his calm face was the image of a nice guy. His gray suit made him look like a gentleman. His steady demeanor and calm personality made him easy to get along with. However, Ye Chong noticed his hands, the wide palms covered with calluses. The man's wrists were

covered by his sleeves, but Ye Chong could see that his hands must be very strong.

The middle-aged man seemed to sense Ye Chong's attention. His hands jerked almost imperceptibly, but Ye Chong saw it anyway. The other man began to study Ye Chong as well. Their eyes met, and the middle-aged man smiled to Ye Chong. Ye Chong nodded back. He was not worried about exposing his own strength. Due to his physical peculiarities, his harsh training barely left a trace in his actual physique. Even the calluses on his hands would disappear very quickly.

The blonde man seemed to lose interest in his storytelling after the long-haired man's interruption. Ye Chong regretted it. The blonde man was an interesting narrator. Ye Chong had learned much from his stories. He kept the names of the mech pilots introduced to him close to his heart.

Schools were not such a bad place. The simple environment reminded Ye Chong of his days in Blue Ocean Academy. He had learned plenty from that place, but was rudely interrupted by Black Cove. The thought of Black Cove brought Ye Chong's mind back to the Ye Family. What a troublesome place!

However, Ye Chong quickly dropped that line of thought. He now realized that he lacked even the most basic common knowledge around here. If he just went out to investigate as he was now, the chances of him being successful would be less than five percent.

Hence, Ye Chong did not rush himself. Now was the time to learn more about this society. This place was entirely different from the Five Galaxies, and a place that he had to live in for the moment. To return to the Five Galaxies would require getting involved with the Three Aristocratic Families, and he could not afford to do that right now. He would have to live in He Yue galaxy for the foreseeable future. Hence, it would make more sense for him to learn how to live a better life here.

Ye Chong did a quick calculation in his mind. His talented mind was now functioning like an efficient photon processor, cool and precise. He did not act impulsively while trying to find out more about his real identity. Unlike other people, Ye Chong's upbringing had allowed him to view his problem from a very different perspective.

It would not matter if he was really related to the Ye Family. Ye Chong did not feel a sense of belonging with the Ye Family. To him, he would rather spend more time to investigate about his Papa. Papa was his real family. He cared about Papa, about Mu and Shang, about Grandpa Qian, about Nan Nan, about Hei Zi. Compared to these people, the Ye Family was too unfamiliar to him. Ye Chong only wanted to know who his real parents were. That was all. The rest was of no consequence to him.

Ye Chong soon stopped thinking about the matter. Since he had made a decision, he should just act accordingly.

Just then, the starship began to decelerate. While the deceleration was gradual, Ye Chong was sensitive enough to speed that he detected it straight away.

"Huh, why'd they start the inspection here?" The blonde man hummed to himself.

"Inspection for what?" Ye Chong could not help but asked.

The blonde man explained with a low voice, "Zhou Jian is a commercial planet, and they're wary of troublemakers visiting. There are some crazy fools who'd wreak havoc once they landed on Zhou Jian. The inspection here is more lax, and intended for these troublemakers. In other places, especially where the aristocrats stay, they'd be more unwelcoming towards Gray Valley residents."

Ye Chong nodded, understanding. If any fool were to carelessly cause destruction on the planet, the effects would be devastating.

Soon, a group of officers in blue uniforms boarded the ship. Ye Chong found many of them to be combat experts. In this irregular and narrow space, combat experts would have the upper hand against mech pilots.

The passengers on the starship were all familiar with this kind of inspection, and produced their identity cards cooperatively. Ye Chong was skeptical of the effectiveness of this inspection, since He Yue galaxy's identity card management system was quite messy. Ye Chong's identity card was bought with 30 thousand credits at Yi Ju planet, and it was an authentic card, complete with a background history for him. Old Chief Guo's connections in the local community had enabled him to deal with this matter easily.

"Is this inspection effective?" Ye Chong asked, curious.

"Not really," The blonde man shrugged in reply. "It's just to make you feel safe."

When it came to his turn, Ye Chong passed the inspection without any hiccups. The officer did not even bother to look at him. It was the middle-aged man and the long-haired man who got into some trouble.

"You're from Gray Valley?" The Inspector, head of the officers, looked at the identity card offered by the middle-aged man and frowned. The long-haired man was immediately offended by the head officer's expression, his hostile glare at the Inspector earning him unfriendly looks from the other officers back in return.

"Yes, that's right," the middle-aged man answered calmly.

The Inspector stopped his officers' hostile behavior and steadily said, "We're all commoners here, and hold no ill will towards Gray Valley. I hope your friend will stay in line, since there are many aristocrats around here. I hope you'll not get into trouble with them. That would be very troublesome for us officers."

The middle-aged man bowed slightly and said, "Please don't

worry, we'll not cause trouble." He patted the long-haired man's shoulder, and the hostility in his gaze slowly died down.

"Gray Valley ... So they are from Gray Valley," Ye Chong thought to himself. Gray Valley residents were secretive, and never spoke of that place when they were outside. Rumor has it that Gray Valley people were strong, but he did not know exactly how strong these two were.

"No wonder, they're from Gray Valley," the blonde man exclaimed in realization.

The inspection ended quickly. No troublemakers were identified. The starship was allowed to enter Zhou Jian's airspace.

Ye Chong had randomly picked a starship to switch to earlier. It did not matter which city he ended up in, so there was no need to worry about it. He only knew from the blonde man that Zhou Jian was a commercial planet.

Commercial planets were convenient. Communication was easy, and many products were available in the market. Ye Chong was now in urgent need of a few items. Perhaps he could get them here. Besides, commercial planets were usually easier to move freely about. Commercial planets were the meeting points for various powers, so the aristocrats would be more careful in these places.

For someone like Ye Chong, who wanted to get familiar with life in He Yue galaxy as soon as possible, it was a good choice of location. "Looks like I got lucky," Ye Chong thought to himself.

A blue plane came into view. Against the dark, enigmatic space around it, the average-sized planet seemed to teem with life.

He glanced at the middle-aged man, and found him smiling back warmly at him. The long-haired man beside him seemed more excited now.

The starship made its slow way towards the planet of Zhou Jian. Ye Chong looked out of the observation window, lost in his own

thoughts.

## Chapter 313: Ze Xi Academy

"If you have the money, I'd definitely advise you to attend Engradie Academy. It's the best school on Zhou Jian, and one of the best academies in the He Yue galaxy. The students are mostly from rich families, and many of them are aristocrats. But you don't look rich, so maybe you'd like to try the Ze Xi Academy. It's the best school for commoners, and the fee is cheap. While you, my friend, look a little older, it's common to see children from poorer families to attend night classes. They won't turn you down." Before they parted ways, the blonde man took Ye Chong's hands in his, and advised him with deep sincerity.

Standing in front of Ze Xi Academy, looking at the students bustling in and out, Ye Chong thought it felt surreal. His days in Blue Ocean Academy came back to him. It was impossible to forget about Grandpa Qian, Xiu and Sun Xuelin. However, times had changed, and now, he did not even have Mu and Shang by his side. It was just like the time when he was a teacher in the Academy, except that now he was a student.

Engradie Academy was a good education institution, and Ye Chong himself was not lacking money, but in the end he chose to attend school at Ze Xi Academy. The fact that Engradie Academy's many students were aristocrats was enough to help Ye Chong make his decision.

Ye Chong was in plain attire, which was why the blonde man thought of him as poor. In fact, Ye Chong had never bought any clothing himself. The ones he was wearing were bought by Old Chief Guo and his company. Ye Chong only asked that the clothing be resilient to wear and tear. Old Chief Guo knew that Ye Chong and the Sang tribe members would not be picky with fashion, so he bought the hardest and cheapest clothing he could find.

Ye Chong was not aware that people were often judged by what they wear. However, if even he found out, he would probably feel



indifferent about it.

"First step to getting used to living here," Ye Chong thought to himself. He had decided to put more effort into improving his social skills. He was not dumb, but was in fact intelligent; he knew exactly what he was lacking of. If Mu and Shang were with him, perhaps he would have remained the same way he was before. Now, however, with Mu and Shang missing, he would have to try everything he could to find them. If he could not mix with people, then how can he find Mu and Shang in this large world? Without connections, how could he find a way to return to the Five Galaxies from the Three Aristocratic Families?

Unlike the matter of finding Mu and Shang, Ye Chong was not as driven to find out about his past. However, given that he had no information on Mu and Shang, but had found some information about his past, the matter of his past had become priority for the time being. For now, Ye Chong must not only familiarize himself with the He Yue galaxy, but also study the Three Aristocratic Families discreetly, especially the Ye Family.

Ye Chong knew from experience that all fields of knowledge have a complete system. Only through systematic learning would he be able to understand more deeply. This was something Ye Chong thought of when the blonde man talked about joining academies. Aside from that, the community in schools were more isolated and simpler. He should be able to avoid attention here.

After paying the required fee, Ye Chong became an official student of the Ze Xi Academy.

Ze Xi Academy's learning policy was liberal. Students were free to choose their desired courses. Ye Chong did not choose courses for mech piloting, combat, mech modification and the like. He knew what he wanted out of this learning experience. He chose He Yue's history, language, psychology, theology, aristocracy and so on.

When he submitted his course schedule, the teacher was surprised. It was normal to see a schedule like in Engradie Academy, but the students of Ze Xi Academy came mostly from poor families - they hoped to find a reliable job in future, and so would choose courses like mech piloting, mech modification and alchemy. "This student must come from a well-to-do family, but his clothing doesn't look like it," the teacher thought as he took a quick glance at Ye Chong, but quickly arranged for Ye Chong's courses.

Ye Chong's plain clothing, horrible looks, and quiet nature had allowed him to escape attention easily.

The active student life, filled with brawls and arguments, all looked dull to Ye Chong, who had been through countless battles of life and death. He poured all his attention into studying. The humanities courses all demanded a large amount of reading. To other people, Ye Chong looked like a typical bookworm. To them, Ye Chong may look ugly, but his mild demeanor and quiet nature made him easy to get along with.

Ye Chong did not know how he appeared to other people. He only focused on his studies.

The Three Aristocratic Families were the most resilient of all aristocrats. There was plenty of historical research on them, and Ye Chong ploughed through all of them in search for clues. These courses transformed Ye Chong's mindset. If it was before, he would never had thought of searching for information from historical material.

Sang Pu and the rest kept in touch with Ye Chong frequently. Ye Chong knew from Sang Pu that the tribe members had learnt how to better conceal their threatening aura. In fact, it was a skill that they had picked up much earlier on, but had never thought of using it now. Back in Archipelago, they had used this skill when hunting. Wild beasts were very sensitive to deathly auras, so the tribe members had to learn to conceal their aura to avoid being

noticed.

This concealing skill was already second nature to them, so no one thought of applying it now. For the moment, however, they had much more to learn.

Francis Jr, on the other hand, was greatly surprised. "Wah, Boss, you look so ... So ...." He could remember the word. Old Chief Guo continued his sentence, "Scholarly."

"Yes yes yes, 'scholarly', that's right. Like a really smart person." Francis Jr looked at Ye Chong, full of admiration.

In fact, Ye Chong had changed dramatically in these two months. His cold features were now softer on the edges. With a whole two months of courses on literature and history, Ye Chong no longer consider things in only structural and calculative terms.

From the other end of the comms device came Sang Tie's muffled voice, "Lian, what's this scholarly thing?"

Hai Lian replied, "Er, scholarly, it means ... It means the person read plenty, and gives the impression of being very intelligent."

Somewhere not captured on the screen of the comms device, Sang Tie beat his chest and said, "Then I want that scholarly thing too."

"Then you should go learn from the Boss."

Hai Lian's pained groan was met with laughter from the gang. It was an enjoyable call.

Ye Chong could not help but smiled. He remembered something then, and said to Sang Pu, "Pu, remember to send someone back to the village and teach them about concealing their aura. Everyone must learn this, especially the children."

"Yes sir," Sang Pu answered swiftly.

After asking Sang Pu and the rest to study those devices used to manufacture mechs, Ye Chong ended the call. He should continue

reading in the afternoon. He had not finished his last book yet.

The truth was, Ye Chong was intimidated by all those reading at first. His mindset was almost crystallized, thinking only in terms of numbers and logic. These psychology and theology courses seemed like an insurmountable task to him. However, due to his good memory, Ye Chong managed to endure the suffering during his first month, and gradually immersed himself into this whole new body of knowledge.

Walking in the academy grounds, Ye Chong looked no different than any other student around, except for his slightly uglier looks.

"I say, Mi De, Ze Xi Academy is full of beautiful girls. I've always thought the pretty ones are all at our school!" This came from a vastly overweight youngster in casual outfit. For the initiated, they would notice that his clothing was very expensive.

At his side was another man with a hat on. "That's what you think! Those d\*mbasses back at school are all so arrogant and foolish. And those ladies, they're all proud as peacocks, the lot. Hehe, those ladies, don't be fooled by their elegant looks, it's all the work of makeup. 'Sides, you know how rotten their lives really are." The one called Mi De was a few inches taller than Fatty. His hat was worn low.

Fatty nodded, chewing his gum as he mumbled, "That's right, that's right."

"It's totally different here. Look, the girls here rarely wear makeup. Now that's true beauty. Tsk tsk, their skin is porcelain white. Besides, they're quite conservative, all about purity and innocence, nothing compared to the rotten girls back at school."

Fatty nodded strongly in agreement.

Mi De smiled cheekily and said, "Hehe, I've visited all 75 schools for the commoners. When it comes to the quantity and quality of beautiful girls, mm, and the girls' temperaments, Ze Xi Academy is

the best."

Ye Chong walked past them, and heard every word clearly. However, he was thinking, just how should he analyze these two people's behavior from a psychological perspective?

A rush of footsteps came from behind, breaking Ye Chong's train of thought. 16 of them! The assessment came quick as lightning to Ye Chong's mind.

"You two, please leave our school, we don't welcome you here!" The voice was fierce and unyielding.

## Chapter 314: Blood Spilled from a Brick

Mi De whistled and said casually, "Ah, isn't that Peng Pengcha? I say, bro, I don't think we've offended each other, why're you accosting me?"

Peng Pengcha yelled angrily, "Mi, you b\*stard, we're not done with that matter with Miss Tan!"

Fatty was curious, and asked, "Mi De, I've never heard of you dating any Miss Tan."

Mi De waved it off. "He's only referring to Beibei."

"Wow, you're actually interested in that kind of woman?" Fatty was surprised.

"Don't you dare sully her name!" Peng Peng Cha was furious, and flung the brick in his hand towards the two youngsters.

"Hehe, bro, you really looking for a fight?" "Yo, it's the Brick, a long range weapon of mass destruction!" The two of them laughed, but they also avoided the attack easily. Fights in the academy grounds was only limited to bricks, sticks and the like; no one dared to use mechs. Fighting with bricks was an entirely different from fighting with mechs.

The usage of bricks as a fighting tool first began when a student studying ancient history found out about in the textbooks. The weapon soon became widely used in almost all academies. Bricks were a kind of building material from a long, long time ago, and no longer used. It was, however, easy to make. Since there was a demand for bricks, many specialty shops began to pop up in the vicinity of virtually every academy and school. After centuries of collecting dust in the forgotten hallways of history, bricks finally had their comeback in the form of a fighting tool used in schools.

The brick flew past the two and straight towards Ye Chong. Ye Chong heard it coming, and frowned. He took a step to the right, narrowly avoiding the attack.

Ye Chong stopped in his tracks and began to listen in.

Fatty was still reasoning with Peng Pengcha, "Sigh, I say, brother, you've really fallen for it this time. Tan Beibei's a real slut, she's notorious in our school ..."

"D\*mn you!" Peng Pengcha saw red, and threw another brick at them.

Fatty might be overweight, but he was surprisingly agile. The brick was once again easily evaded. However, the brick was heading straight towards Ye Chong again.

Ye Chong was listening to them, and did not avoid the brick this time. He threw his fist at the brick, shattering it into dust.

Everyone else looked in Ye Chong's direction. They only heard a loud "Bam!", and saw a white cloud of dust spreading out before him.

Everyone was caught off guard. Even Fatty and Mi De, who were fooling around, were startled. The white cloud of dust was blocking their view of the perpetrator. Even so, the strength in the punch had surprised everyone.

Punching a brick into pieces was easy, but crushing the brick into dust was extremely hard. This white cloud of dust was obviously the result of the brick being completely pulverized.

Could this be a combat expert teacher? Peng Pengcha felt a chill in his heart. Attacking a teacher was a serious matter in every school.

Ye Chong's expression grew more serious. Suddenly, his eyes glowed sharply. He looked up and around, and found a streetlight at the center of the field. The streetlight was made in vintage fashion, reaching five meters tall, with a 2-centimeter diameter. The pole was made of alloy, and carved with various motives.

Ye Chong moved, and reached the streetlight in a flash.

This was the time of day when the academy grounds were most crowded. When Ye Chong pulverized the brick into dust, people began to notice him. Now, his astonishing speed made everyone gasp. Peng Pengcha was already drained of blood. Mi De and Fatty were also gulping heavily.

Ye Chong's leg kicked, striking out like a lightning bolt, not even leaving an afterimage of motion. No one around him could see his movement clearly.

Wham! The alloy-made streetlight was forcefully broken off from its base. The students around him stared in shock. Ye Chong picked up the streetlight pole, handling the heavy alloy with ease.

"No way!" Peng Pengcha thought to himself, horrified. Sweat rolled down his forehead as he mumbled, "I - I - I ... I only threw ... Threw a brick ..."

Just when everyone thought Peng Pengcha was done for, the shrill school alarm disrupted the silence in the academy grounds!

No one reacted to it. The alarm had never rang for the last 50 years, so no one had ever heard it before. However, the sharper students quickly realized its significance. Mi De and Fatty exchanged a look and gasped simultaneously, "The alarm!"

With that, the people around them recovered their senses. What was going on? They looked to each other, discussing potential causes of the alarm. Could it be a large pirate crew attacking them?

Mi De and Fatty signalled to each other, and made the same decision - they deployed their mechs!

Later recounts of the event would reveal that their apparent over-reaction had actually saved their lives.

Ye Chong's expression twisted. He struck the pole deeply into the ground.

The year 5087 of the He Yue calendar would come to be a particularly memorable year for everyone on Zhou Jian planet.



Ye Chong moved so powerfully that the alloy streetlight pole in his hands became a terrifying and deadly weapon.

Rumble! Soil sprayed outwards as the streetlight pole was struck deeply into the ground.

An eye-piercingly sharp and terrible cry came from beneath the earth. The upper layer of the ground rippled like waves, an eerie sight to behold.

Suddenly, the academy's broadcast sounded, "Special alert, special alert. All students with mechs, please get into your mechs now. Students without mechs, please make your way into the buildings around you for your own safety."

The broadcast was repeated over and over. Above them, mechs began to appear, while the students without mechs rushed to the nearest building they could find for shelter. However, many of them were still in daze, paralyzed by the situation.

Ye Chong ignored the broadcast, his attention focused entirely on the unknown attacked underneath the ground.

Boom! The earth before Ye Chong exploded, soil spraying everywhere around him. The academy had used real soil instead of some kind of flooring in its attempt to create a more primeval feel to the school grounds. The soil flew out and hit the paralyzed students standing nearby, and they cried in pain. However, this also shook off their paralysis. Those with mechs quickly deployed them, while the rest quickly scattered away.

The soil exploding outwards did not bother Ye Chong. He stared fixedly on the ground right in front of him. He had targeted the other party from their breathing. The five-meter pole was struck into the ground before him, half of its length beneath the earth. Ye Chong's hands held onto the pole lightly, and felt a strong vibration coming from it.

Sensing the energy coming from the pole, Ye Chong was slightly

taken by surprise, but he quickly reacted. He yelled loudly and pulled out the streetlight pole straight out of the ground.

Squeak! Another terrible cry was heard from beneath.

The bottom half of the streetlight pole was covered in blood, and a strange smell wafting from it. Ye Chong had seen all sorts of blood, but this was the first time he saw one that had such a sharp smell.

Ye Chong held the pole horizontally in front of him, and stared at the dark hole before him with wary anticipation.

Squeak! A black shadow rushed out of the hole and charged straight towards Ye Chong. He noticed a much sharper smell coming from it. The black figure moved so quickly that the people around him could not even see it clearly.

A woman's sharp cry was heard from behind him! The fact that a black figure had suddenly came out of the hole was really terrifying.

Others may only see a black figure, but Ye Chong saw it clearly. It was a rat. A rat! However, the rat was large, almost Ye Chong's size. Its crimson red eyes had blood vessels crawling all over them. Its thin and long tail was like a whip, and it had strong legs. Ye Chong could see the muscles bulging out of it, enough to make bodybuilders blush in shame. The rat had claws that reached 10 centimeters long, looking like knives attached to its feet.

"It this really a rat?" Ye Chong thought to himself in disbelief.

Ye Chong's expression remained calm, however. The thing moved fast, but was no match against someone as fast as Ye Chong. Ye Chong launched himself sideways, moving along the streetlight pole. His hands were still gently holding onto the pole, so he looked like he was just sliding along the pole, and the effect was simply quite abnormal. Besides, with his speed, he moved just like a ghost!

Another girl screamed in the background!

Ye Chong was not distracted. He tipped the pole upwards to meet the black figure.

Crack! The 2-centimeter thick alloy pole was bitten in half by the creature!

Ye Chong was surprised, but did not miss the opening. He took a quick step forwards and planted a kick on the rat's belly!

Ye Chong used all his strength in this kick. Fighting against a creature he had never seen before, he could not afford to hold back!

The kick was executed with the September Lan family's special technique! Ye Chong's right leg expanded and shrank in a very short time!

Wham! The force on the rat came like a mech's attack, throwing it 20 meters back! Ye Chong still kept his eyes on the rat. If it survived this attack, then it must be even more terrifying than the wild beasts on Archipelago.

Fortunately, the huge rat only twitched a few times before it lay motionless for good. Ye Chong finally calmed himself down. All around him were terrified people. Only half of Zei Xi Academy's students had mechs. The rest of the students were still running to the nearest building in the academy they could find.

The rat's huge body interrupted the frenzy of the students running for their lives.

Ye Chong was about to head towards the school building in front of him when a woman's sharp cry came from behind him.

# Chapter 315: Fight!

Rui Bing had a terrible look on her face. With the swarms of creatures outside, a Jie expert such as her was still vulnerable to the innate revulsion towards such disgusting creatures, as was typical for the fairer sex.

When Shi Fuyin was shocked by their experience on Lunaris last time, her fragile body deteriorated even further. She had to be moved to Zhou Jian planet, which offered better medical facilities. With nowhere to go herself, Rui Bing decided to stay by Shi Fuyin's side. She had developed a certain tenderness towards the girl.

Shi Chongming was out on an errand, leaving only her and Shi Fuyin. The sudden appearance of so many of those creatures outside left Rui Bing deeply shaken.

Rui Bing witnessed with her own eyes how the urban streets were transformed into a living hell. There was blood everywhere. People who could not escape fast enough were chewed to pieces. The sight of blood, flesh and organs here and there was nauseating.

The victims wailed in pain and distress, or shrieked in fear and despair. It was as if the world was turned inside out.

Rui Bing stood by the window, watching the tragedy happening outside from above, feeling deeply troubled.

Just what had the world come to? Why was this happening?

There was a pedestrian who could not make it in time, and his one leg was bitten off by one of those huge rats. Blood gushed out from the wound, bloodying the rat's face. The rat chewed on the leg for a few times and swallowed it. Its blood red eyes shone menacingly. The pedestrian's face twisted in pain from the sudden amputation, but before he could react any further, the other rats swarmed over him and finished him off. Rui Bing saw everything, including the expression of the pedestrian in the last moments of his life. That twisted face lingered in her mind, and her heart

ached.

Rui Bing inhaled deeply to calm herself, and began to assess the situation. However, the conclusions she reached from her observation of the situation outside gave her pause.

The rats were strong, and astonishingly so. Their teeth could gnaw through the strong compound material used to built the walls, as easy as chewing a biscuit in their mouths.

"If this was the case, then we're defenseless," Rui Bing thought to herself. The hospital's walls were all made of the same compound material, which could not withstand the assault of the rats.

She would have to fight! Rui Bing's eyes glowed with determination. As a Jie expert, she would not easily lose hope against hurdles like these.

As she walked to Shi Fuyin's bed, Shi Fuyin woke up. She opened her eyes wide and looked at Rui Bing, and called sweetly, "Sister Bing."

Rui Bing caressed her forehead and asked softly, "How do you feel?"

"Much better," Shi Fuyin smiled in reply despite her pale appearance.

Rui Bing looked at Shi Fuyin with sympathy, and could not help but worry. If they leave the hospital, would Shi Fuyin's condition worsen without the medical facilities available here? There was no other alternative, however. Rui Bing gritted her teeth and said to Shi Fuyin, "It's chaos out there. We're leaving now. I'll carry you."

"Ah!" Shi Fuyin gasped in surprised. "What about Uncle Ming?"

Rui Bing shook her head. "I don't know why he's not back either, maybe he's in trouble." Rui Bing was right. Shi Chongming was trapped somewhere outside, and in a worse situation than them.

Rui Bing walked to the window for another look, and knew that

they could not afford to delay any further. She quickly helped Shi Fuyin into her clothes. Shi Fuyin managed awkwardly due to her weak body. She was wrapped up into a large bundle since she was still feeling chilly.

Rui Bing walked to the bed and tore off a few strips of cloth from the bedsheet. She took a strip and carefully blindfolded Shi Fuyin with it. She did not want the young lady to see the hellish world outside. Shi Fuyin seemed to understand her, and smiled sweetly as she accepted the blindfold without protest. Rui Bing took the headphones from the bedside and put it on Shi Fuyin. The headphones had good noise-cancelling features. Once it was put on, she would not be able to hear anything but the beautiful music coming from the headphones.

Rui Bing tied Shi Fuyin onto herself tightly. She was not scared, nor did she hesitate as she began to move.

Ye Chong turned back to see a lady holding onto some chips in her arms and frantically looking at the ground around her. The soil around her was rippling like the surface of boiling water.

Ye Chong leaped and reached her side. He gripped her arms and began to run forward.

Clatter! The chips fell from her arms. The lady paled, and cried, "My chips, my chips!"

She struggled in Ye Chong's hands, trying to free herself and head back for her chips. However, Ye Chong's hands held onto her strongly like pincers, and no matter how much she tried, she could not break free.

"Let me go! Let me go! My chips, ooh, my chips!" She punched Ye Chong repeatedly, but it was no use. Abruptly, she lowered her head and bit deeply into Ye Chong's arm!

Ye Chong's eyes turned grim, and he struck out with his left hand!

Slap! The slap on her face was loud and clear. The lady's face was now imprinted with a red palm!

"You - You actually hit me?" The lady stammered in disbelief.

"You're sure you want to die?" Ye Chong ignored her reaction and asked coldly. The lady felt a chill down her spine, still not fully believing. It was still too early for Ye Chong to practice what he had learned in this short period. Given the emergency of the situation, he reverted to his old behavior of cold logic.

If the lady replied in the affirmative, Ye Chong would definitely let her go. He did not distinguish between men and women, but he still found it hard to believe that anyone could be so stubborn given the situation. If it was before, he might just break her neck there and then. However, dear Ye Chong had progressed much since then. He would only let her go, and leave her to her demise.

Behind them, rats emerged in great numbers from where the lady was standing earlier, and began to scatter about the academy grounds.

Ye Chong ran faster towards the school building in front of him. He did not have time to check his bitten hand. The block was surrounded by security mechs. There were also many mechs in the skies with their weapons pointed towards the ground, fully prepared for battle.

As Ye Chong approached the building, the mech closest to them stepped aside for them to pass through. Ye Chong slipped through and entered the school building.

Inside the building, people were huddling in corners, crying to themselves, or just spacing off, or gritting their teeth in anger. However, they all looked panic stricken and scared. The sudden calamity had caught them off guard.

"Madam Fei Si! It's Madam Fei Si!" "Madam Fei Si!"

A few female students recognized the woman Ye Chong was

having with him, and rushed to her. Some even threw themselves into her arms, crying. Fei Si was now behaving completely different from before, patting the students' backs and comforting them.

Strange. Ye Chong took another look at Fei Si, now with a completely different personality, and went to sit in a corner. He needed to organize his thoughts. Everything happened too quickly, without any warning! Why were the rats like that? No, there was something else he saw. He recalled then that there were other animals as well. When he turned back to look at Fei Si, he remembered seeing animals other than the rats.

Could they be mutants? The idea was immediately rejected. As someone who grew up on a trash planet, he had seen countless mutants before, but none of them were like this. These rats were even stronger than the engulfers on the trash planet.

Something must have happened!

Besides, Ye Chong found it curious that no one here had any idea of the possible causes of this calamity. If no organization on Zhou Jian planet realized anything was amiss before this, it would be very strange indeed!

But why should this concern him? Ye Chong dismissed his worries. If things really got out of hand, he can always find a starship and escape to planet of Yi Ju. Hijacking a starship was a piece of cake for him. It was a pity, though, to end his studies here. He had just started his humanities studies, only beginning to grasp the important ideas in this field.

No one paid much attention to Ye Chong. In the midst of this chaos, why would they pay attention to a random student?

There were loud sounds of battle coming from outside. Everyone but Ye Chong lifted their heads and looked outside the school building. They had always lived in a peaceful life, and had never seen actual battles before. Ye Chong was unaffected by what was



happening outside.

The battle was fierce!

Ye Chong was right. There were other mutants besides those rats. In fact, it seemed as though all kinds of animals had evolved into some kind of strong mutant creatures overnight.

Fortunately, however, they were all land animals. None of them fly. If they could, the mechs would lose their flying advantage. Most of the mechs engaging in fights outside were teachers. They were all experienced in combat, and fought with competence. It was their leadership that managed to keep the students calm and organized.

Nonetheless, the mutated creatures were all tough animals. Even when wounded by energy beams, they could run about unaffected if they were not hit at critical body parts. Additionally, the creatures were strong and powerful, moving too quickly to aim at them. It was due to their large numbers that almost any random shot would end up hitting a target.

The He Ye galaxy was more specialized in long range combat, just like in the Five Galaxies. However, the current emergency required more close range combat mechs. Without close range combat mechs at the frontlines, the swarming mutants would quickly overwhelm the entire academy, leaving everyone at risk.

The rats were terrifying enemies, especially when they attacked together in the dozens!

Swoosh! A mech flew in to the school building and yelled, "Any more students with mechs? We need reinforcements! All students with mechs please get in your mech and and prepare for battle, especially the close range mechs." The mech's bionic eyes scanned through the people around and said grimly, "The situation is critical, please lend your strength! I hope you understand one thing - your lives are in your hands! Defeat will mean death!"

The mech looked ghastly, covered with damages. Even the shield on its left arm was missing a corner, having been bitten off. Done with his speech, the mech pilot returned outside and continued to battle.

Gradually, students began to stand up and take action. In this dangerous situation, everyone began to fight for their survival.

## Chapter 316: Worsening Situation

Ye Chong did not get up. The situation was not too critical yet. If they put all available resources to use now, they would not be able to hold their defense line for long. However, Ye Chong also knew that he would not be given the chance to command the defensive forces, so he did not even try to interfere. Besides, the students' mediocre abilities were not enough to interest him, not after seeing the sublime combat performance of the Sang Tribe.

It was too bad that Sang Pu and the rest were not here. The situation was not optimistic, but not to the point where Ye Chong had to worry about his own safety. This level of danger was nothing compared to what Ye Chong had experienced before. Compared to this, the battle at Sang Family Village was truly terrifying!

Everyone around him looked distressed, but Ye Chong himself was composed.

Feiss approached Ye Chong, bowed, and said in a serious tone, "I'm very sorry for my rudeness earlier that hurt you. I'm an alchemist, may I see your hand? I have medicine to stop the bleeding."

Ye Chong kept his eyes closed as he answered calmly, "No need, thank you."

"Ahaha, Fei dear, you're alright! That's wonderful," a booming voice came from Fei Si.

Fei Si brightened, and turned to greet him, "Uncle Jalopy!"

The man was only about 160 centimeters tall, but he had a solid build, with angular, bulging muscles that made him look like a towering metal structure. Aside from that, his pugnacious looks made anyone who saw him cautious. The students around him were obviously intimidated by him, and kept their distance.

Unlike those students, Fei Si cried in surprise and buried herself

into his embrace, and began to weep. The old man was unused to handling emotional outbursts like this, and received her awkwardly as he consoled her. It was a strange sight to behold. A 170-centimeter tall woman was crying in the arms of a 160-centimeter tall old man. The old man had to stand on tiptoe.

"Fei dear, what's wrong? Don't cry, don't cry, what happened?" The old man was at a loss.

Fei Si's shoulders trembled as she continued crying. "The chips ... The chips are all gone!"

"Ah!" The old man gasped, "Fei dear, how did that happen? That's your teacher's life achievements stored in them. Didn't you store all you work these past few years in them too?"

Fei Si cried even more then, and told him what happened between sobs.

The old man's expression turned solemn, and consoled her, "Don't be sad, Fei dear, you're alive, and that's all that matters. Your teacher in the Heavens must also be happy for that. If the chips are gone, you can still redo your research; if you are gone, then nothing can be done to save you."

The old man walked to Ye Chong and bowed. "Young man, thank you very much."

Ye Chong was taken by his politeness. He opened his eyes and replied plainly, "You're welcome."

"Hah!" The old man laughed, and reached out his right hand to pat on Ye Chong's shoulder. "I knew you're a good man. You may not be the most handsome man in town, but then, hehe, you're no ordinary man."

Ye Chong was not used to physical intimacy. He stayed in his cross-legged sitting position as he put his hands to the ground and pushed his whole body sliding to the side.

The old man's eyes lit up. "You're a combat expert!"

In another city on Zhou Jian, at the tip of the highest building there, two people looked down at the tragedy unfolding below them with sorrowful expressions. These two were the Gray Valley duo whom Ye Chong had met on the starship.

"Squad Leader, the situation is worse than we imagined," the long-haired man said grimly.

The middle-aged man nodded solemnly. "Yes, it's worse than we imagined."

"This is inhuman!" The long-haired younger man said angrily.

The middle-aged man deployed his mech and said, "Enough talking, let's get to work."

Two mechs flew off into the skies.

Rui Bing ran as fast as she could, finding her footing on the buildings around her. Her movements were even more powerful than the rats. The buildings flew past her as she ran, leaving only an afterimage in her vision.

A rat suddenly leaped high up like a spring straight towards Rui Bing, who was still in midair between jumps.

Rui Bing twisted her body slightly, angling her body away from the rat in a logic defying moment, despite having no physical support to change directions.

Rui Bing's lonely white figure stood out in the streets. The countless number of rats on the streets stared at the flitting figure. The rat that jumped up seemed to inspire the other rats, as they began to squeak in excitement.

The rats began to leap up to attack Rui Bing, who was running along the rooftops of the shops that lined the streets.

Rui Bing's eyes flared up! This was the most dangerous situation she had ever been in her twenty over years of living, but she did not feel scared at all.

She evaded them all! Rui Bing moved like a white butterfly, dancing her way between the rats that continued to attack her from front and back. Her small evasive steps to the left and right were enough to impress even Ye Chong. Even Ye Chong himself could not have done it better!

All her steps were only just large enough to avoid the attacks, but swift and effective.

A rat in front was standing in her way with its hind legs crouched, ready for a pounce. Its crimson red eyes looked vicious. Rui Bing could even see its hind legs' tense muscles.

Squeak! A huge rat came from above, aiming for Rui Bing. More rats were coming for her from below and to the rear. The rats were everywhere.

Rui Bing shouted, her eyes suddenly lit up brighter than the sun! The move that she had used against Ye Chong was now executed again in all its glory! Moreover, Rui Bing was far stronger than she was back then. The power of this move was now fully realized!

The rat that came from above was almost onto Rui Bing.

Abruptly, without any warning, the rat froze, its eyes bulging. Blam! It exploded. Squeak! The rat squealed in pain. The rat fell lifelessly down from midair to the ground, landing on its brethrens that squeaked with protest.

No attack was more terrifying than this!

All the rats immediately stepped back, and looked at Rui Bing with fear.

Rui Bing was now emanating an aura that was completely different from usual. It was an intimidating quality. Her eyes seemed to sparkle with life.

Rui Bing stepped forward slowly and calmly. All the rats stayed out of her way.

This was her chance. Rui Bing picked up her speed and ran, but none of the rats pursued her this time.

A large door and a line of words came into her sight - Engradie Academy. Rui Bing heaved a sigh of relief, feeling slightly comforted, but her legs weakened for a moment and she nearly stumbled. Rui Bing's extraordinary stamina was significantly exhausted from her dangerous travel, more than she had expected.

"Hah, so you're a combat expert." The old man laughed, rubbing his hands together in excitement.

Fei Si spoke from the side, "Yeah, the student's got a few moves."

Ye Chong closed his eyes again and ignored them. The battle was imminent, and it was best to conserve his energy.

"Hehe, young man, let me show you something," the old man said in a conspiratorial tone.

Fei Si quickly burst his bubble. "Right, Uncle Jalopy's a lecturer in ancient machinery. He's got many tools and weaponry suitable for combat experts, maybe you'll find a few to your liking."

"Ancient machinery?" Ye Chong opened his eyes wide.

Somewhere from skies came a loud cry, which was immediately followed by a few more. Everyone in the school building was startled. They all knew what this meant. Perhaps there were mutants out there that could fly after all.

The old man's expression soured as he cursed the creatures aloud, before finally calming down again. He noticed Ye Chong's indifference, calm as he was, and asked curiously, "Young man, aren't you worried at all? Are you not afraid? If those creatures get in, we're all finished."

Ye Chong replied, "Will worrying help? Will being afraid help?"

The old man paused at his words, then laughed heartily, "Haha, to think that I'm humbled by a mere student at my age! I must be

getting old."

The situation worsened quickly. Up in the sky, mutant birds attacked the mechs ruthlessly. The most dangerous of these flying mutants were the birds of prey, which were already dangerous before their mutation. Now, they were even more terrifying with their claws and beaks. The sky was their territory. Nothing could move swifter than them in the air, not even the best mech pilots.

The fight on the ground was also becoming increasingly violent. There were many other animals beside rats which had undergone mutation. The most disgusting of all were the insects, such as cockroaches. After mutation, they grew to the size of millstones, but even more staggering were their numbers.

Compared to the other mutants, they were smaller, and greater in numbers, thus making it easier for them to break through the mechs' defense line.

"Ah!" A female student's voice reverberated in the building. Girls would definitely hate these creatures. Ye Chong keenly noticed a few things: 1) All the animals that mutated had grown significantly larger, 2) the animals all had red eyes, and 3) after mutation, the mutants became very violent and aggressive.

Ye Chong reacted before anyone else. He stood up quickly and planted a kick on the first cockroach that came in. Whoosh! The cockroach was sent flying.

Ye Chong's reaction reminded the people inside of what they must do. Mi De and Fatty, who were curled up in a corner, quickly stepped forward to fight. Many of the students here learnt some combat basics, and quite a few of them were actually combat students. As such, the wave of invading insects were, for the moment, halted in their advance.

Nevertheless, while the insects were not as deadly, they were still very difficult to kill. Such was the tenacity of these bugs.



Ye Chong took a look around him, and his eyes landed on a statue in the center of the school building. This gold statue was of a woman, rumored to be the work of a Master of her time, Anye Luoxue. The woman's naked upper body traced voluptuous curves, and her hands reached up, joining at the wrists with her fingers curling into the shape of a lotus flower.

Ye Chong ran to the statue and toppled it over with a kick. He then lifted the statue by the wrists single-handedly. The statue, which weighed half a ton, was summarily lifted from the ground.

"Out of the way!" Ye Chong yelled.

The students in front looked back and were shocked by the sight. They quickly leaped to the side.

# Chapter 317: Breakthrough in Combat

Ye Chong lifted the statue and attacked!

Wham! The ground shook, and three cockroaches were instantly crushed into mush. Their body fluid splattered outwards, reeking an unheavenly stench. Everyone stared in shock. The golden statue did not look that strong, but in the hands of this young man, it was like a big hammer. Poor statue! The girls nearby looked at the statue in Ye Chong's hands with pity. She should be put on display against red satin in a high class exhibition stand, receiving the adoration of thousands of admirers. Now, however, she was used like a hammer in the hands of a man with inhuman strength. Poor she!

The heavy statue seemed to also put a huge pressure on the people watching in the building. The old man gasped, "H\*ll, I didn't think he's so violent!" He seemed to think of something then, and quickly ran deeper into the school building.

It had been a long time since Ye Chong had to fight himself. It reminded him of his foundation training on the trash planet, where strength training was an important part of it.

With his growing excitement, the heavy statue weighed like nothing in his hands, swinging around in the air. All the students and teachers watched, dumbfounded. The ground that trembled with each attack using the statue reminded them again and again that what they were seeing was really happening.

"This is crazy!" Mi De swallowed heavily.

Fatty nodded mechanically. "It's inhuman! Is that guy some unknown master in the combat faculty?"

The other people in the building had the same thought. Only the combat faculty would harbour such a crazy person. They never imagined that he was actually a student from the humanities faculty. There were so few humanities students that none of them

were here to recognize him.

The statue swung over easily and blocked the path of another rat that managed to enter the building. He loosened his grip and stepped lightly, and was right in front of the rat in the next second. His hands moved, and the statue drew an arch midair. Ye Chong was now holding onto its waist.

The people around him watched, stupefied. They saw a student carrying a half naked statue by the waist in a suggestive fashion. The female students blushed, and Fei Si's cheeks also reddened in embarrassment.

Ye Chong did not care for these trivialities. He wrapped his hands around the statue in the next moment, avoiding an attack from the rat. Those who understood the situation regretted his move, since he was now in a most vulnerable position, with his back to the rat.

When everyone thought Ye Chong was going to lose this time, his next move surprised them all. Ye Chong bent backwards, still holding tightly onto the statue, and pushed the statue to the back and down.

Wham! The head of the statue hit precisely on one of the rat's paws in a decisive attack. The paw was instantly reduced to a useless lump of flesh. The rat squealed in pain.

The people around him gulped heavily at the terrible shriek.

Ye Chong did not stop at that. He leapt backwards in a somersault, landing on the rat's back. What happened next made everyone watching felt a chill in their hearts.

Whish! The statue seemed to disappear from Ye Chong's hands. They heard a loud "Clang!", and the rat's head suddenly exploded, blood and brain matter splattered across the floor.

What an attack! Those from the combat faculty exchanged looks of shock and fear. None of them seemed to be able to see that attack clearly.

In fact, Ye Chong's attack was simple. He had used the statue to strike at the rat's head. However, his attack was too fast to be observed clearly. The loud clang was from 15 consecutive blows to the rat's skull.

Ye Chong was too engrossed in the fight to notice his audience. Calmness had always been his way, but his long suppressed fighting instincts were now finally awakened. Before he met Mu and Shang, his fighting skills might be deplorable, but he did not lack the passion for combat

However, after meeting Mu and Shang, Ye Chong was deeply influenced by Mu, and began to learn to think with cold logic. That was when Ye Chong's battle style changed markedly. It was only when he met particularly strong opponents that Ye Chong would feel his initial fervour for battle. However, even these occasions were getting rarer.

The simple bare-handed battle today had finally reignited Ye Chong's long absent feelings of enthusiasm.

Ye Chong launched himself into the hoard of insects, waving the statue around like a scythe, attacking furiously. The only thing that annoyed Ye Chong was that the statue was unsuited for more versatile ways of attacking. He could only use it to hit directly on the enemies. There was nothing he could do about it. Ye Chong lifted the statue and hammered down again and again. Blood and flesh flew across the battlefield. The sounds of bone crushing never stopped.

When the disaster finally ended, people would return to this school building and find that the flooring in front of the building, made of a strong compound material, had been crushed to smithereens.

The statue was tough, Ye Chong will give it that. While it was now heavily deformed, there were no cracks on it. Anye Luoxue had created only five artworks in her entire lifetime. She was

extremely fastidious regarding the material she used, and this statue was the one she took most pride in. However, this wonderful statue was now deformed beyond recognition, and covered with all kinds of gore and tissue.

Ye Chong never imagined that the deformed statue would still be preserved in the end, placed on display in the largest art museum on Zhou Jian planet as testimony to this calamity.

Just then, the old man wheeled over a bunch of stuff with him and arrived. "Heh, come come, there's something for everyone. Haha, I never thought my job would actually come in handy." He had with him an ancient wheelbarrow, carrying all kinds of ancient weapons, and metal machinery that the others had never seen before. The other people recalled then that the old man was a lecturer in ancient machinery, and quickly approached him. The old man was gratified and excited, realizing that his own obscure field of study that he was usually mocked for by others in the academy was finally useful today.

Seeing Ye Chong exterminating the insects in front, the old man picked up an archaic lance and threw it towards him, shouting, "Hey, young man, take this!"

While Ye Chong was now in a state of heightened excitement, coolness was still his default state of mind. As his stamina slowly decreased, he gradually came out of that state of excitement. He heard the old man's voice then, and saw an archaic lance coming towards him.

Ye Chong immediately relinquished the statue and received the lance. The lance was a long forgotten weapon, but one that Ye Chong was most familiar with, second only to daggers. When piloting the Harmony of the Winter Aria, its weapon of choice was Blue Winter, a lance. Mu had even designed a set of lance techniques through his calculations.

Ye Chong now used these techniques. He drew straight lines or

arcs across the air, attacking swiftly with the principle of maximum efficiency. His every attack with the lance hit dead on target, and his footwork was impeccable.

The lance was made of metal alloy, but weighed like a feather compared to the gold statue. Besides, the sharp tip of the lance made it even more effective in drawing blood. As such, Ye Chong's efficiency increased sharply, and his stamina was exhausted more slowly.

After learning so many kinds of combat techniques, Ye Chong now had a much deeper understanding of combat. The lance swung around unpredictably, as Ye Chong modified and improved on Mu's lance techniques. They were now Ye Chong's very own set of moves. He grew absorbed in this process of creativity. His moves were highly varied - September Lan Family's moves, Black Cove basic combat techniques, and the Sang Tribe's moves were all experimented on, as he tried to combine all of them while balancing their strengths and weaknesses. Ye Chong had always learned bits and pieces of everything, and never stopped his research in combat. He had also learned under the September Lan Family's system. All these experiences that given him enough strength to achieve a breakthrough in this moment.

The endless stream of insects had given him the best opportunity to enhance his skills.

The tip of the lance glowed, swinging around unpredictably and strangely like a firefly dancing in a summer night. The insect's tough exoskeleton crumbled easily under the assault of this pin-sized dot of light.

The battle felt easier and easier. Ye Chong's movements grew smaller, but the tip of the lance still managed to find the weak spots of those insects with surprising accuracy.

The people around him watched in awe. Ye Chong was like a magician to them. They were lucky to witness the transcendence

and transformation of a combat expert right before their eyes. This was a valuable experience that one can only encounter through fate. Ye Chong would never have guessed that, 20 years from now, three of the students here in the school building would become Jie experts themselves.

This was Ye Chong's first real breakthrough. Ye Chong believed that, at least in terms of combat, he would be able to win against Mu and Shang. He had found what Mu once called the spirit of combat! This was an important factor in combat alongside strength, angle and timing.

From a long time ago, Mu's strength seemed insurmountable to Ye Chong. All this while, his greatest hope was to become stronger than Mu. Now that he had achieved it however, at least in terms of combat, he did not feel happy at all.

"Mu, Shang, where are you?"

# Chapter 318: My Idol!

Whatever that was happening, that had happened, that was going to happen on Planet Zhou Jian struck in the eyes of everybody in He Yue galaxy. And as the mass had demanded the specific broadcast, all entertainment channels - be them talkshows, musical channel or adult program - had their schedules cancelled. The streaming of Zhou Jian had occupied every single channel online, with countless hologramic cameras capturing every single tragic moment at every single corner of this commercialized, advanced planet.

The whole galaxy seemed to have joined the historical moment, as they spectated the greatest catastrophe of He Yue galaxy in the past 500 years.

All forces available in the galaxy had been gathered, as soon as announcement was made at each faction. The leading aristocrats also sent out their best rescue team, where the Xi Feng clan had a team of 10,000 registered pilots heading to Zhou Jian straightaway under the leadership of Huang Jiming, the ace pilot; while the Ye family, having also a team of 10,000, was marching their way with Ye Yin at the head; Xue Lai clan had offered 8,000 of their best forces, as they held hands with an unconventional leader choice, an unknown lady whose name was Xue Nuolan, causing the crowd to wonder at her actual identity since the public had been expecting Brahmara the great to lead such significant operation.

This should be the most major military operation ever in He Yue, with all the 3 main aristocrats running simultaneously.

The fountain was there, yet fire was afar. They had tried to travel at their quickest, still Zhou Jian would take a 30-day galactic travel, what would remain at this poor planet after 30 days? Would the greatest army be welcomed with ruins and dead bodies?

The misfortune of Zhou Jian did not end here! The planets nearby were too weak to provide any proper assistance. Only a



handful of major pilot squads attempted gathering as much forces as possible. Technically, Zhou Jian had been quarantined at the moment with a severe order coming from all rulers from the surrounding planets of forbidding entry of any escaped of the Zhou Jian episode. Certainly, people were displeased by such inhuman decision as noises swarmed upon the government the moment it was announced.

Speculations had been given by the experts, revolving around the instance of viral mutation. Given that the experts had taken the right direction of their prediction, the virus would soon cause another apocalypse the moment the population of Zhou Jian leaked their way to other places of galaxy.

There was a need for quarantine, emphasized the government, as a solution to block the escape path for the Zhou Jian residents, even if it would extinguish their lives, it was the cruel regulation of humanity.

The virologists of all known establishments including hospitals and academies had been summoned promptly to gather up at the safehouse guarded by the aristocrats, to perform research to find out that very hope to salvage humanity.

The world was cruel, so cruel that it would shatter every last bit of faith, sympathy and kindness of humanity. But that did not mean humanity should forsake their tenacity in pursuit of hope.

On the screen, countless men, women, children were engulfed by the mutated lifeforms. The public was tearing up, as they once again recognized the fragility of humanity, while the camera in high-definition, as if a punishment, delivered every frame of bloodshed to everyone out there. The flying limbs, the fleeting blood, the piercing scream, the pound of flesh, they rolled, they fell, like a play of reality taken place in front of the public.

A hellish nightmare, a nightmarish day.

...

Ug.. Ugh...

Bi Bo woke up drowsily, his tiresome eyes found a girl nearby, while his ears discerned the fiasco out there. "Finally!" The girl was pleased, "You have waken up!"

"Where... are we?" Muttered Bi Bo, as he took a careful look at the girl, who had a short hair, a fine curvy brows with a pair of frightened eyes, in the uniform of Ze Xi academy - she should be a student... Bi Bo was an experienced journalist, so he could tell.

"This..." The eyes of the girl darkened, "This is the school's building... and you were knocked out by a piece of rock, those dirty mice had appeared so I dragged you all the way here."

"Thank you very much!" Sincerely Bi Bo replied, he could imagine what a hassle it would be for a feeble girl like her to drag him away from the occurring danger, and she never thought of running away, still thinking of saving people while she could. Such kind heart. Thought Bi Bo, who had seen enough dark side of humanity.

"It's... nothing..." Blushed the girl, "Really..."

Bi Bo gave a brief smile, "So how's everything out there?" His bag was still by his side, which he quickly took a look inside - phew, the camera was inside.

"Not looking good..." Frowned the girl, "A lot of injuries."

Bi Bo took out the camera and performed a transmission to the HQ, at least he brought a super advanced hologramic camera that could transmit visual and communication directly to the HQ.

At the HQ of Green Planet Media Corp., in the midst of depression, one shout from a staff broke the silent spell, "Sir! We had caught Bo's signal! He's still alive!"

"Great! He sure is tough!"

"Oh my gosh... thank god..."

The office had regained its liveliness in the older days.

A good news finally, after the whole day of distressing reports...

"So what are you doing!" Urged the director in a shaky voice, "Get it on already!" His mind was interpreting this as a golden opportunity to get more profit, as all other channels had been playing the visuals from the street cameras, now if Green Planet had an exclusive report from a local journalist itself...

Bi Bo's handsome, well-proportioned face was then projected on the giant screen, his eyes remained expressive with his edgy brows, although looking all worn out and weak.

"Bo, you fine there?"

"Bo, take care!!"

Those words from his colleagues were more than comforting.

"Ahem..." Began the director, "Bo, are you hurt there?" When the director cleared his throat, it would mean everybody else should keep their mouth shut.

"No, of course not." Bi Bo did not really like this director to be honest.

"Well, good..." The director continued, "Forget our former plan, now you only need to capture everything happening there. You could add in your own content, all to your liking, I would not interfere with your decision, on one condition : your camera, must be on the whole time. Simple isn't it? How do you think?" The former plan between them was to have an interview of an important function at Ze Xi academy, which was also the whole point of Bi Bo traveling there.

The director then paused a moment, pondered, "Bo, if you did your job well, and could come back alive, I would hand over my place."

Bi Bo was quiet for a sec, his hologramic lips then lifted, "I

understood. I would do my best." Wow this director sure knows how to make empty promises, "come back alive"? I seriously wonder if I even could see the departing port at this point. I'll do it anyway... I am a journalist, an ethical journalist who loves his job after all. I would abide by the truth and tell everybody what exactly had happened here. Even if the director never made his promises, I would still do the same.

"Wait what?" The girl was shocked, "You're a journalist?"

"Yeah." Smiled Bi Bo as he turned his head to her. "I got to go." He got up quickly, "Take care." Holding his camera, Bi Bo walked to the outside, the camera was as tiny as a man's palm, but it was mighty.

"Ah..." The girl got up too, biting her lips as she saw Bi Bo leaving the building. Out of bewilderment, she followed.

It was a horrendous scene when Bi Bo headed to the outside. All practitioners were holding all sorts of weaponry as they fought desperately against those mutated insects, as they crawled in aggression with their wriggly, disgusting appearance. "Kiassssk!" Their cries were echoing in the ears of the men, as the stench of blood followed.

There was one particular figure which caught Bi Bo's attention. He was standing at the center, the top position, with an ancient lance in his hand dancing wild, protesting against the brutal raid of the insects. Obviously, he got hold of the situation, which explained why the frontline had not been intruded successfully.

Bi Bo was amazed, as he mustered the last few words he could mention on a formal journalistic stream.

"Welcome to Green Planet channel, we appreciate your attention as no matter who you are, what your occupation is, where you are and what you strive for in life, I believe... that you should be watching this very planet now on the broadcast. And we, Green Planet channel, shall bring you the latest information on the

incident from another perspective."

The scene was then switched back to the studio, "Our Journalist Bi Bo was on a plan of interviewing one academy on Zhou Jian planet, while fortunately being the survivor of the first wave attack. Now, he is trying his best to present us what exactly is going on in Zhou Jian. And by here, we, the Green Planet Media Corp., show our highest respect towards his profession."

The visual followed, with an intensive war apparently, of humanity against the primal nature. The lance-wielding man had become the center of attention.

The war was hideous.

"Based on the information we have gotten from Bi Bo, he and another survivor are currently located at one building in Ze Xi academy, "The situation was bad," they say, as they have yet to find any rescue team around. These warriors on the field were the students and teachers of the academy itself. Let us applaud the bravery they had gathered, for they would not simply let their head down to violence...", said the hostess with her sweet voice, grimly.

The audience rating of Green Planet channel skyrocketed as it was the only channel with an on-the-spot report. The director then received countless sharing request from the other channels, which he, without hesitation, accepted promptly.

The audience stared at the screen, showing immense concern on the fate of Zhou Jian.

A lance-wielding boy? Of course we know who that was. Apparently, Ye Chong, your skill had caught the attention of the public once again.

A flashy move by a potent impaler, with a cold expressionless face, sweeping the wave away, Ye Chong had ascended as the idol of every youngster out there immediately. When the world needed

a hero, a nameless one had appeared with his impeccable skills.

"Wow, dude, look at this."

"I never knew a lance could be this great."

"I am going to be his apprentice."

"So where do I sign up?"

The replies flooded the forum board.

"As far as we have observed, judging by the apparel of this bright young man, he should be a student of Ze Xi academy. Certainly, he had demonstrated us what a fatal attack and an absolute defense are! The situation remained under control with his contribution. Thanks to this hero, again!" Said the hostess intensely.

"Well, well." Began one of the invited guests, "Ze Xi academy has some great students there, hasn't it? Such skill from merely a student, I am very amazed. He is the real deal of the martial arts, maybe he is a Jie expert, if you would excuse my crazy speculation. He's really talented for his age, I don't think it's a sin to call him a genius." He was a martial arts practitioner as well.

"Yes I must agree. Ancient lance has been a long-forgotten weaponry for years. Not many practitioners knew the correct way to wield it, probably he's the only expert remains in our galaxy. From his techniques we could see what kind of potential an ancient lance possesses, it's all about the swing, the sweep and the impale," added the other guest.

"Please, everyone, do not bother with the lance alone, as this boy has some really interesting movement. You could take a look at his steps, tiny yet precise, I would say he's a very experienced practitioner, too bad we have yet gotten any information on this boy. I am very much curious of his background. Furthermore, as you could see his aiming, somehow he seemed to be fully aware of the weak points of these creatures. It's a cleaving attack from him at all those points to take them out promptly. Bravo! You could

also have look at his chest, particularly his breath, it's very calm, nothing unnerving could be seen, which means his vitality is at its prime. I salute thee!" This guest was clearly more knowledgeable than the previous two.

The show went on. The glow was glaring the moment he span tip of his spear. That slender silhouette he formed with the guard of his spear had been marked in the mind of the people, causing a trend of ancient lancing once again. The visuals had been extracted and madly distributed over the galaxy, becoming an analyzed tutorial for every fanatic.

Ye Chong was focused in his fight, being unaware of the craze out there, while the lance seemed to have his soul imbued, which would reach every insect coming to him.

The carcasses of insects piled beside his swings, while his cold eyes were giving off a peculiar glow.

As legend said, once every practitioner achieved the status of a Jie expert, a new unique ability would be unlocked.

That was when Ye Chong obtained his new ability.

## Chapter 319: What way?

The crossing lines of his lance reflected in his sharp eyes. It looked like as colorful as hallucination when Ye Chong sliced through the insects of all kinds of color crowding upon him.

What are these?

There were blue linings over the bodies, which were pale and obscure. Ye Chong realized if he focused on one of them, the blue linings would turn clear, the dots and lines would become extremely bright.

There were mice?

The mouse's eyes were bloodshot, the whiskers were as honed as its fangs. Its limbs were firm, while its dark gray fur were like rustling stiffly.

4 lines and 3 spots to attack! On the dancing blue lines over the body of the mouse, the few lines shone bright.

Ye Chong waved his lance which sank into one spot quietly.

Kikkk!!!! The mouse squealed and collapsed. Ye Chong exerted one last force to take his lance out, which then blood was spilled over the place.

Ye Chong was surprised. Could it be...

He took a look around, as his lance jerked, aiming those blue spots that shone the brightest in the crowd.

Kurrrppp!

Splash!

The creatures around shattered! Blood was spilling sky high.

The camera of Bi Bo had captured this epic moment and everybody else saw it with their own eyes.

In the rain of blood, the boy stood still with his lance.



The place was soon dead silent, with everybody behind Ye Chong looking zoned out in disbelief.

Martial arts was a well-established field in He Yue, but the potency of a practitioner had been long undermined by the emergence of pilot, where at one point people began treating martial arts as a mere form of physical training, while the Jie experts had hardly demonstrated their skills. As scarce as visuals of their performance were, Jie experts remained as a myth in the heart of the people despite their living existence.

Their identity had been redeemed today however, as people once again beheld such amazing performance of his nameless boy. People did not know where he was from, they were not sure if he was a Jie expert himself, but his skill was an eye-opener, an epic execution convincing enough to make people pick up the knuckles and blades again.

As they realized, martial arts could be so great.

Ye Chong was not expecting to be this influential, reality was however, if it was not his performance, the martial arts in He Yue would soon decline to a stage like its counterpart in the 5 major galaxies. He was not only the savior of humanity, but also the salvager of ancient martial arts. His performance eventually became the silver bullet that prolonged the existence of martial arts for the next 500 years, whereby this very boy would be the most significant as well as the most mysterious character in the historical record of martial arts development in He Yue galaxy. Teachers of the following generation would also play the visual of this boy's performance as a motivating source at the beginning of their course.

Over ages, people had almost forgotten martial arts, it was the first time they had seen such intensive performance.

The world exploded, in excitement and passion.

...

The hostess, as well as the guests at Green Planet channel had their mouth open. A few of them were quivering over anticipation, as they gave comments in slurred language. Bi Bo was also overwhelmed on spot, as on a few occasions he nearly dropped his camera. The visual was shaking, "What the hell! Hold your camera right! You Bibbidi Bobbidi Bo!" Cursed one of the annoyed audience.

Ye Chong was full-indulged in his new ability, he did not notice the gazillion gazes coming from the outer space.

His style had changed! A menacing strike, under the guidance of those bright blue lines, as the fleshes of the creatures flew again. The audience was stunned, seeing the striking contrast of massacre being conducted by an expressionless boy.

Slowly Ye Chong realized the meaning of the new addition. The shining point would be the weakness of the creature, which could cost its life if pierced; the blue lines on the other hand, would be the dissecting direction, which would lead to a perfect slice if the lines were followed, causing a devastation on its body.

Ye Chong was feeling this new ability being identical to the analytical system on the Guardian.

He pondered so much that he did not notice the weakening attack from the creatures as he jumped into one of the crowds, into action again.

?

And soon Ye Chong, in the midst of his hunt, noticed the reality.

The carcasses were everywhere, and he could see the tails and the legs, coated in green fluids and blood, while the screams echoed within his ears.

People were amazed. The boys were enthralled, the girls were captivated.

That coldness of Ye Chong's face was no longer fear-inducing,

rather it had formed a marvelous portrait of one lonesome hero, whose mind was clearer than the water, stronger than the beasts as he stood upon their carcasses with pride, wielding the lance in metallic glow.

"Ye, is that you?" At another corner of He Yue, everyone on the Coxcomb was stunned, while Mu's mechanical eyes blinked frantically.

Ye Chong was still unaware of the hidden cameras, as he approached the students and staff, seeing how all of them collapsed on the ground out of extreme fatigue. The trainees of the alchemy department were weaving in and out of the group, giving those injured a good bandage and cure.

The creatures at the academy had retreated, yet the war remained roaring out there. Ye Chong's brows furrowed, there were other places being attacked and it would be bad if this would carry on. Their forces were weakening while the waves of creatures seemed endless. In the midst of worry, a few female trainees scurried out of the building, in their drained faces they screamed upon Madam Fei Si, "Madam! Madam! Something... something was making noises at the building..."

"Something? What something?" Everyone had their attention on the girls, as the madam asked worriedly.

"Ah... Uh..." The girls seemed very frightened as they tried to squeeze that very word from their trembling lips, "Mice! I think it's the mice!" And one of the braver ones shouted, "They seemed to be chipping the walls."

Gasp.

Other than Ye Chong, the people flinched, realizing the horrible ability of the rodents, it would be a terror if the mice had bitten through the walls. More people would die...

It seemed hopeless, although Ye Chong did not look regretful, as

he had done everything he could. A single man was still a single man against a war of millions, at least he had unlocked a new ability. He walked to an elderly, "Sir, may I ask if you still have any relative here?" The elderly was apparently the professor of ancient mechanics. While he appeared to be worthless to every other staff, he was the priceless individual that Ye Chong needed, Ye Chong would be taking him away, by hook or by crook.

"What a strange question," muttered the elderly while he scowled briefly. "I had been alone the whole time, I do not have any other relative than Madam Fei Si, my mate. So I wasn't bothered by death either." Oh no, one extra person to hold. Thought Ye Chong as he glanced at Fei Si, now how in the Zhou Jian do I lift two persons away safely.

Madam Fei Si, as witty as she was, caught the undertone of Ye Chong.

"I am not leaving without everybody," she said firmly, although the people were confused as hell. Her statement did not shake Ye Chong even the slightest though, as he never intended to escort these two persons the gentle way. He already had a few tricks in mind to get Fei Si moving if she was being resistant.

Without a word, Ye Chong began walking towards the outside, with the people clumsily followed, including Bi Bo.

The rodents were taking up every last corner of the academy. Nobody would have imagined such horror in the past. The citizens thought the rats never existed in their life, they had hardly seen them even at the valley, till they saw the entire infantry of the pest. "I can't believe it." Nope, I believe it - Ye Chong was not surprised, he had seen the similar infantry back on Trash Planet. They were naturally adaptive and highly reproductive that's why.

Unless... if I... If...

A crazy idea came into the light of Ye Chong out of the blue, as his schemata ran rapidly on the logical chain, he then had a drastic

U-turn, heading back to the building.

He came to Fei Si at the end of the queue, "Where are the chemical stored by the alchemy department?"

It was logical for an academy to have a storage as alchemy was a study that would require a shocking amount of reagents daily.

"Huh?" Fei Si was bewildered, "There, not very far ahead." She pointed at one direction and said.

"How far is 'not very far'? Be precise!" Ye Chong seemingly did not fancy the vague reply.

"Uh..." It took a moment of ponder, "3000 meters? I guess?"

3000 meters... that's 3 kilometers, I would need a mech. Thought Ye Chong as he hummed at her reply, "You, me, there, now." Concisely he stated, "Both of you as well." He pointed at Mi De and Fatty. He knew their capabilities, they were quick catcher too, just a little timid sometimes.

Both Mi De and Fatty of course were paralyzed by the cold gaze and stern finger of Ye Chong, they nodded their heads repetitively and walked to his side.

This unnamed boy probably had an idea to solve the issue somehow. But why the alchemy department? Does he know alchemy? Madam Fei Si, as an alchemist herself, could not picture the relationship of Ye Chong's plan and the alchemy studies.

Ye Chong deployed Blaze-III and pinned his lance on the wall, then he led Fei Si to the cabin, "Please, allow me to come along." A voice rang behind.

It was Bi Bo, who also deployed a mech, courteously stating, "Please believe in my ability, as the direct descendant of head of the family himself, Bi Zhibo."

# Chapter 320: The Descendant of the Great

The line of Bi Bo was spread to all corners of the world.

Wait, that was from the journalist Bi Bo? People were shocked upon hearing the name "Bi Zhibo", who was the very well-known pilot. So Bi Bo was the son of the great pilot himself? The people were skeptical however, wondering what had made a son of an established pilot headed elsewhere for career, like an ordinary journalist for example, since having such a father would have guaranteed him a head start for a successful career.

Bi Zhibo? The blonde young man had mentioned lots of names, there was one Bi Zhibo as far as Ye Chong could remember. He took a glance at the determined-looking man, "Alright," nodded Ye Chong. "Come with us."

"Wow that is just clever!" One of the audience shouted excitedly, "That excuse had worked! Everyone, we could see more of this!"

Certainly the audience wanted to see more of Ye Chong as they were curious to see a highly skillful martial arts practitioner transforming into a full-time pilot in the field.

The performance of Ye Chong was lasting enough to be remembered by people for a century.

Blaze-III was booting there. Although it was a mere model massively manufactured from a factory, somehow it had become a mysterious model as this mysterious boy piloted it. Could it be a modified mech? The audience wondered.

Blaze-III was in fact a standard close-combat model that nobody really cared due to its average components. There were the Blackgold shield of Ye family, the magnetic blade better than those you have grown familiar with back in the 5 major galaxies.

Parrying spear was also a standard equipment for all melee models. Blaze-III had a balanced attack and defense, only the mobility was slightly an eye-opener which Ye Chong aimed at the

beginning anyway.

Blaze-III might be indecently equipped, but Ye Chong did not show any disdain. The design of the main body was still reasonable, the engine was great, the range of movement by its limbs was wide as well. Weaponry-wise, Ye Chong did not see the significance of adding more ornaments to it since the chance of his weapon breaking was pretty slim during battle. Moreover, having more weapons did not translate as being more potent in battle.

Ye Chong held Fei Si and got into the cabin, "Hey boy!" Shouted the elderly down there, "Take great care of her! Don't bother to see me again if she got into something!"

Mi De, Fatty and Bi Bo also entered their own mechs afterwards.

Bi Bo's mech was a spider-model, with 6 gigantic legs holding a flat disc body in green. There were a few ranged weapons revealed on its body, reminding the people that his family, particularly the head, Bi Zhibo was known for his godlike shooting skills, although the people wondered if the son of the legend himself would do as good. The spider mech was a radical design of ranged model, which had totally discarded the ability to fight in close-range.

The mechs both Mi De and Fatty deployed were also the advanced models, which left Ye Chong's mech looking quite shabby among the four of them.

Ye Chong soon realized that those blue lines he saw before had disappeared. He could not even see the palest lining anywhere when he looked at his control panel... but when he took a look at Fatty and the others, those faint blue lines would appear again. The density of blue lines probably were directly proportional to his mental concentration.

Or the blue lines only work on living things?

Speculated Ye Chong in shock, since the ability was really new to him. He had seen similar lines and dots on the Guardian but it

worked utterly differently.

Ye Chong the sensitive fighter was very much disturbed by the constant intrusion of these blue lines, that they still felt distracting even at the palest. Ye Chong wondered if he would be seeing blue lines on every person or animal for the rest of his life, that they would be his target only awaiting to be killed forever.

If that was the case, it would be horrifying. Ye Chong did not hate slaughter but only would do it when there was a need. He would not want to become an actual bloodthirsty barbarian. And histories had taught him that any strong man would be the public enemy once he was tainted by the name of murderer, and soon his demise would arrive.

"Are you alright?" Said Fei Si, seeing Ye Chong acting odd, "Is there anything wrong?" She was wondering if the fight had fully consumed him just now.

One cabin and two persons felt a little cramped indeed. Physical contacts were practically unavoidable. Ye Chong would have some muscle memory at the bottom usually when the contacts happened, but the blue lines would disrupt him whenever he took a look at Fei Si.

Sigh... what a pain. Is it even good to have such ability? At least it seems to be not applicable on non-living things or I should be swallowing an energy firearm now. I wonder if I could resist the urge of slicing through those lines whenever I saw somebody in future.

The happening was giving Ye Chong chills as cold sweat rolled over his forehead.

"Are you seriously alright?" Asked Fei Si in concern, "Your face doesn't look right." Fei Si thought Ye Chong was a man with great stamina, never she would think that he would be so drained after battle.



"I..." Ye Chong's eyes were wavering, "I don't know the road, guide me."

"Aren't you a student here? How could you not know?" Shocked Fei Si was.

Beep. Ye Chong showed ignorance as he activated the mech. He had been having his own study on history and literature the whole time, how would he know where the other department was?

Upon seeing Ye Chong's lack of reaction, Fei Si zipped her mouth afterwards as she stood behind Ye Chong. There was only one seat in the cabin anyway, so Fei Si had to bow and hold the back of Ye Chong's seat. It was so tiring that Fei Si had already started panting briefly after the activation, with her sweet breath constantly tapping the back of Ye Chong's neck.

It was her first time being this close to a man, she was a little nervous.

Ye Chong on the other hand was feeling nothing other than the itch on his neck. He had a battle to fight in the end.

They were 3000 meters away from the destination, so they had to fly, as they would only arrive at the destination in the shortest amount of time under the assistance of advanced technology. There were also mutated lifeforms in the sky, but not as many as on the ground.

"Testing." Ye Chong turned on the communication channel and engaged with the other 3 members. "Yes, we got it."

"Alright, let's move." The 4 mechs zoomed into the sky, in a formation of diagonal with Ye Chong at the front.

Bi Bo connected the camera to the slot of his mech. Now his broadcast would go in a clear view from his mech.

The audience was anticipating.

A mutated vulture headed towards them upon eye-contact.

Ye Chong was already prepared for his first fight. This was just a birdie compared to the time he fought the Steelbats.

His hands gently placed on the control panel. He rose his fingers and... WAIT.

He realized a critical problem as he sweated heavily, his Blaze-III retreated to the center of formation, "I could not attack. Protect me."

Ye Chong was going to start his first barrage of input, but he almost forgot the fact that he was not the only one in the cabin.

Fei Si! She was still in the cabin. He almost killed Fei Si accidentally and failed the whole escort mission.

Fei Si was fragile, with a poor physique not even close to a matured man, and his mech did not come with a pressure-buffering protection system. He could still do those dramatic turns but she would be killed as the drastic change of pressure would rupture her bloodstreams! It would depend on her luck if she would also become a splat of flesh over the floor.

With Ye Chong leading, Fatty and the others were once calm towards the enemy ahead. Unfortunately, their trump card suddenly withdrew himself and pushed forward the two novices who failed to react in time, as they still remained at the back.

Dammit! We are going to crash into the vulture! Ye Chong was sweating heavier. He held the lever carefully as he feared even the slightest acceleration would destroy the beauty behind.

The mutated vulture was approaching and Ye Chong's blood ran cold. Blaze-III had already taken a defensive posture but the collision occurred upon contact could be fatal to Fei Si, with a chance over 80%.

I'm sorry Fei Si. I promise I would avenge you... I would—

Zap!!

A red beam pierced through the center of the vulture's head.

Kiaakkkkk!! The vulture flinched and was grounded very soon after. There was a crater on the ground, with the carcass in one piece. The vulture could be seen as very tough from this.

The beam was fired by none other than Bi Bo at the back of Ye Chong.

Phew... Ye Chong was relieved.

Bi Bo was in fact the descendant of the great.

# Chapter 321: The Alchemy of Ye Chong, Returns!

AH!

Huh?!

Mi De and Fatty were suddenly grabbed back to reality from that blast of Bi Bo, as they inched towards Ye Chong gracelessly.

"I don't get it, why can't he attack out of sudden?"

"This is ridiculous."

The audience was having a fiasco, as they found the sudden withdrawal of the hero strange.

And Ye Chong gave a brief explanation, which sent chills to everybody. "Did he say there's a lady bowing right behind him?" They could not imagine how Ye Chong could keep a straight face when a beauty was there, but well they could imagine how they would hate themselves if the beauty died because of their carelessness. People did fear if Ye Chong, as the last resort, would eventually neglect the beauty's fragility and went straight ahead to avenge her by shooting down that mutated afterwards.

Because of Bi Bo's camera connected to the system, every exchange occurred in their communication channel was broadcasted through Green Plant channel. So the audience received a lecture about safety of others and how heroes like Ye Chong could be helpless sometimes.

Nevertheless, the audience was a little underwhelmed by the nameless hero's premature end of his show, as his Blaze-III was actually the fragility itself, since with Fei Di in, it could not take neither the slightest collision nor a sudden acceleration, which had taken all its avoid-ability away.

The unexpected guest to save the show was, however, the son of the great pilot, Bi Bo himself.

There had been statistics on the forum board, stating the fact that Bi Bo - in the 21-time-attacks he delivered - had shot down 23 mutated lifeforms, technically meaning that he had literally killed two birds with one stone, twice. The marksmanship was amazing.

"Are experts so common these days?"

"We already have 2 aces out of 4 strangers, man!"

"This is not even an official military team!"

Back at Green Planet Media Corp., the director's back was wetted by cold sweat as the director seemed to be unable to stop the shudders he was making himself. Bi Zhi... Bi Zhibo! Oh my He Yue, Bi Bo's father has been Bi Zhibo the whole time? No... what have I done? If Bi Bo really could not make it back here alive... his father could be wiping out the entire Green Planet... I had heard stories about his insanity...

"So that's who Bi Bo actually is..." The colleagues stoned upon the visual, as they could not picture that Bi Bo who could hardly harm a fly being the expert of marksmanship. The hostess herself was also stupefied at the happening on screen.

Bi Zhibo, with his eyes calmly at the screen, was watching his son taking up this sudden trial of his life. There was no pride on his expression, rather, there was worry, as he sighed, "Bo, please, make it back alive..."

Some experts on forum also stated that Bi Bo was using merely a standard model of energy shooter according to what they had observed. It was not the sniping model as one would have expected, yet Bi Bo was dealing significant amount of damage on the foes. The accuracy, the skills, the mentality, with three combined, he was the most frightening silent killer one could imagine.

Thanks to his contribution, the journey to the building was hassle-free. Those vultures were knocked down the moment they

came towards the formation.

To be honest, Ye Chong was also surprised by the Bi Bo's skills, till a point he got to admit that ranged weaponry was far more efficient than melee strikers, and Bi Bo was the first perfect representation of that ever since Ye Chong viewed Mu Shang's performance on Recursion.

Ye Chong was wondering what could possibly happen if he had a fight with Bi Bo, he might share bit of possibility winning but well that was a meaningless thought, since when one's combined force reached a certain point, there would be too many factors that could alter the outcome of their battle.

At least there was no blue lining on the visuals. Ye Chong sighed in relief, as he realized there was, luckily, still few limitations to his new ability. Sadly he did not have the leisure to test on his new ability just yet.

"There!" Fei Si pointed at the building on the screen, in all hope and joy she asserted, "There it is!"

"All units prepare to land!" Commanded Ye Chong.

The surrounding of that building was rather empty compared to the disaster out there. There were mutated lifeforms, but only a few of them, which were shot down by Bi Bo promptly. They made their landing immediately and gathered at the entrance, which seemed to closed. The building had been fully evacuated, seemingly.

Fei Si went to the entrance, "This is where all the chemicals are stored, the security level here is high." She then took out her identification. The group was feeling thankful of not seeing any more of those mutated lifeforms coming.

The security level is high indeed. Thought Ye Chong as he saw Fei Si performed the verification process, five times, at least.

Tick. Beep Beep Beep. The gate was opened.

"Okay, we're in," stated Fei Si. "Relax, the walls here are made out of super strength alloy, while the interior is completely shut out to the outside world with its own ventilation system." Those descriptions were more than comforting to the team, especially Fatty and Mi De who both collapsed to the ground, being glad that they somehow had found a fortress to catch their breath.

"Wait." Fei Si was curious about the plan, "You haven't told us what the plan is in your mind." The gazes of the team gathered upon Ye Chong, so were the audience before the screen.

"Gather things." There was no direct answer from Ye Chong, "Get me Berlin's Solution, Powdered Emerald, Powdered Seedling, also..." He listed around 7 more items and shut his mouth completely right after.

So he knew alchemy after all?!

Really???

Bi Bo and the other 3 were looking at Ye Chong in bewilderment.

"Holy Lunaris! He knew alchemy!"

"Could he stop giving himself more character settings, we are getting a headache over here!" The audience boomed, discussion exploded like fireworks, especially those professional alchemists as they began putting on their thinking cap, figuring out what those items would combine into.

"Oh..." A random reply from Fei Si, her mind was more interested on the product of the listed items, but she had never heard of such formula in her student's days. Is he... a real talented alchemist after all? Thought Fei Si, her eyes looking at Ye Chong in disbelief. Well, those materials he mentioned are common enough to be all inside.

Ye Chong stared at Fei Si zoning out. He frowned. What the hell is this woman doing right now? Is she actually wasting precious time standing there? How long is she going to th- "So where's the

material?" Ye Chong could not help but to interrupt her session.

"Oh... OH!" Fei Si was grounded back into reality, her face reddened, "Berlin's Solution is around ... here..." She was very familiar with the building itself so she would guide the team, while Bi Bo and the rest would be the free labor of the day.

The next moment was confusing to Fei Si, for she saw Ye Chong carrying the entire cabinet of those mentioned items to the outside. "Do we really need all these?" Wiped her sweats, she asked softly.

"Mhm." Ye Chong did not give a proper response as he began the alchemy process.

Berlin's Solution, as mentioned, was a highly common reagent and the academy had about 300 tonnes of them in store.

But obviously it was impossible for Ye Chong to carry out the entire 300 tonnes of them, he took 3 miniature containers, which was labelled to store 3 tons at once and he did not seem too happy with the negligible amount, as he continuously added all sorts of materials into the solution, skillfully. Those skills, he was an alchemist? Really? The doubt remained in Fei Su's head. And seriously, what in Zhou Jian he's making??? Could anyone tell me?

Bi Bo took his camera and aimed at Ye Chong's face.

Ye Chong's solemn expression was projected throughout the galaxy, with no longer the cold cruelty he had during the battle, but the inner focus of a craftsman. Men always look the most charming when they do their work. Absolutely, again, his expression had become the model of the youths afterwards, as they would remember the legend.

Ye Chong was having his first time combining reagents of such sizable amount. He got to be cautious since the final product could be very harmful, if his formula was right.

It lasted for quite sometime. Ye Chong's expression remained



still, so was Bi Bo's camera.

Then he got up and tightly screwed the cover.

"Alright, we are heading back," said Ye Chong to the 3 men, then he looked at Fei Si, "While you, stay here." The building was evidently safe from the mice's attack. The structure was clearly for the security of those medications.

"No!" Shouted Fei Si, "I am going back with you guys!" What does this guy mean I'm staying here? What I'm going to do? And I haven't know what he had just made! So, I'm not staying here!

Ye Chong's brows tightened again. Sang Ling is way stronger than Fei Si. Both are females but why there has to be such a difference between both of them? Does this woman lack intelligence or something? If she could use her brain for once... Ye Chong did not intend to carry her along, as he was feeling unpleasant being tied by someone on the battlefield.

If it was not the condition the elderly had made, he would have dumped this woman. As long as he wanted to take this elderly away, he would have to consider about Fei Si, but that did not mean he would spend the next few precious minutes to have a talk-to with her. Her feelings were never part of his consideration, on condition that he could carry both of them away.

Ye Chong then deployed Blaze-III, displaying ignorance.

The remaining men looked at each other, bewildered.

"Prepare to take off. We each take a container. Bi Bo would ensure the course being clear." Ye Chong had someone attained the charisma after leading the Sangs, his words somehow were very convincing and pressuring, especially with his cold gazes and how he could murder gazillion rodents without a skip on his heart.

They deployed their own mechs immediately, nobody dared to lift their head and take a look at Fei Si.

Hmph... Fei Si's eyes were wet, as she bit her lips, while Ye

Chong carried on with negligence.

The 4 mechs took flight in roars, with Bi Bo leading this time. "Man, Bi Bo is the man of the show this time, his spider mech has weapons everywhere!" Exclaimed one audience.

They might be amazed but wonder if it was because of Ye Chong's godlike performance before, those shootings had only won over a handful of applause.

So the audience was more attentive on the containers they carried.

What are those?

They seemed to be extremely careful about it. Mi De and Fatty were behaving as if they were embracing a timed bomb. Bi Bo was hitting on his final gambit, as he shot down every single enemy approaching right away.

The flying disc was firing at all corners, like a shooting stronghold.

Ye Chong was feeling great with such a strong aid.

Under the cover of such potent firepower, they arrived by the sky above the main school building gracefully. Bi Bo had shot down everything, that those mechs formerly clearing the sky finally had the opening to land themselves to help their allies on ground.

Pant... Pant...

Bi Bo's eyes were red, his breath was heavy. The shooting was stressful, the aiming was tiring.

He should be joining the professionals with his skill. That was what everybody else thought.

"My gosh! Is he hacking?"

"Is he really a reporter?"

"Only if he's my teammate in County Struck."

"Like father's like son!"

The audience was fortunate enough to view the show today, as two super experts had emerged from the crowd, with one being the king of marksman, another being the lord of lancer. Both of their backgrounds were also unknown to the audience as well, although most of the spectators were more concerned on the lord of lancer, since it was rather logical for the son of Bi Zhibo to be this great.

The lord of lancer, one who triumphed over a wave of mutated creatures, who also knows how to do alchemy?!

The ground around the main school building was densely covered by rodents and insects.

"Jezuz!"

"Oh stop!!" The audience felt like throwing up, it was very disgusting.

"Stay here," said Ye Chong at the channel. "Ye-Yes sir!" The two members quickly replied while Bi Bo remained highly cautious.

Ye Chong piloted the mech to the ground carefully, right above 100 meters, the floor was suddenly open, and the container got off from his grip.

Like a meteorite, it crashed to the ground.

Splash!

3 tonnes of liquid spread throughout the ground.

People were expecting something, but to their disappointment, the rodents seemed to be unaffected by the solution, as it just slipped through their toes.

"FIRE! Bi Bo! Now!" said Ye Chong.

Bi Bo was stupefied, "There's no target for me to-" He realized something as he raised the gun again and pulled the triggered.

A beam of light hit the container accurately.

And the next moment was again, historical, memorable, impeccable.

# Chapter 322: Problem

The blue flame spread outwards quickly, and everything down below burned up into hell on earth. It was hell for the mutants! The mutants shrieked unceasingly as the blue flames blossomed. The flame slowly but surely unfurled outwards!

Interestingly, there was no smoke. The blue flame burned silently. Amidst the silence, the devastating mutant shrieks were chilling. One by one, mutants were reduced to ashes, leaving only their skeletons intact.

It was chaos down there. The insects that came into contact with the liquid were even more pitiful. Once the blue flame caught onto any of them, it would quietly burn with tenacity. No matter how they rolled on the ground, or jumped, or screamed, the flame would not die down. The blue flame would slowly eat into their skins, and the rats would shriek even more miserably. They would burst into a rage and bite anything around them in a frenzy, but gradually, their lives would be drained from their crimson eyes. The blue flame would continue to burn through muscle and flesh, until they turned to ashes.

Everyone was shocked!

What an eerie spectacle! What a strange blue flame! Even Valiance looked eerie, quietly hovering in midair!

Everyone was stunned by this most curious scene.

Even though the mechs were already flying high above, the heat rolling off the flames forced them to climb up even higher.

Even Ye Chong was shocked! He had only wanted to produce a strong flammable liquid, since he knew that almost all organisms would be wary of fire. The Bluefire chemical was the most usable of all the formulas he remembered.

In Lunatic Guan's chip, the introduction to this liquid was simple. "Bluefire is a highly flammable liquid, suitable for

combustion. It originated from the Fei Family." In Lunatic Guan's chip, anything that did not originate from the Guan Family would be specified clearly.

Ye Chong did not know of any Fei Family or whatnot, but since Lunatic Guan had described it as a strong flammable liquid, it should not be a problem.

In fact, the description was too simple that Ye Chong was beginning to worry about its effectiveness. However, he never imagined that the liquid would be so resistant. It was a good thing that Ye Chong had thrown the bottle of liquid far from the school building, or he would have hurt the students.

A long time ago, the Bluefire chemical formula was a well protected secret of the Fei Family, which enjoyed a long history in alchemy. The flames burned blue, and served as a defense measure for students of the Fei Family. Back then, the Bluefire chemical was so famous that Ye Chong would never have imagined it. As time passed, powerful families withered, and energy weapons rose to become weapons of the new age as its predecessors faded into history. Lunatic Guan had precisely searched for the formula for this long forgotten Bluefire chemical because she had seen it mentioned more than a few times in the literature left from long ago, speaking of its great power.

However, times had changed. Even the once rare materials used to synthesize the Bluefire chemical were now but the most basic materials for alchemy. Lunatic Guan did not study the Bluefire chemical any further. She had much too many options for self defense, most of them safer and more effective than the Bluefire chemical.

Once, the Fei Family would only produce small bottles of this chemical. No one would produce tons of it like Ye Chong did!

The world was silently mesmerized by the quietly burning blue flames. Everyone watched the holographic screen before them

speechlessly!

Mi De could feel the goosebumps all over him. He was sweating all over, as if he was in a desert. However, his extremities were ice cold. Even his heart was nearly frozen. The thought of his mech carrying such a dangerous chemical made him shudder.

All the students and teachers at the school building paled, be it those in the building or the ones in their mechs. They were the ones closest to the blue flames. Some of them even felt their hair curling and drying up due to the heatwave from the flames.

The ferocious mutants were slowly quieting down now. The blue flames continued to burn silently.

Ye Chong had already recovered from his shock. He spoke to Mi De and Fatty through the comms channel, "Throw the bottles in your hand down below, take care to aim carefully."

Ye Chong's words startled them, and Fatty nearly lost control of his mech. The two of them moved ever so slowly and carefully, flying towards the two other corners of the school building and dumping the bottle of liquid in their hands down to the ground, before sprinting back to Ye Chong.

Bi Bo's face was white as a sheet, and even missed a few shots. Fortunately, he lit up the chemicals in the end.

Perhaps people would slowly get used to mech battles; perhaps a battle between warships would not be staggering anymore; perhaps even a planet exploding would not be shocking news. Nevertheless, they were all afraid of this blue flame.

This was a primeval and mysterious force, burning so strongly that the mutants were reduced to ashes right before their eyes. It took only minutes, from just a blue flame.

Humans will always be afraid of the unknown.

The students and teachers in the school building all stopped whatever they were doing and watched in stupefaction.

From high above, three blue flowers burned, forming a triangle around the school building. Beside the blue flowers, little wisps of blue flames were scattered about. These came from the mutants that were burned, scurrying away madly, but quickly losing their lives to the fire. The blue flame did not stop then, but continued to burn.

The rats retreated. All the mutants retreated, running away faster than the way they first entered the scene.

The heat from these three sources of blue flames soon began to overwhelm some members of the fairer sex. All the mechs now served as transport, since no one dared to walk close to the blue flames.

The fire burned on for three days and three nights. Just as the people learned to fear the fire, some of them also began to realize its worth. They had all heard Ye Chong pronouncing all the ingredients for this chemical. When the blue flames began to burn, almost every alchemist began to look for the ingredients that the mysterious young man had listed down.

However, no matter how they tried, they could not replicate the power of the Bluefire chemical. D\*mn that Bi Bo! Why record only the face? Why? They did not see how the young man produce the chemical, nor the amount of each ingredient used.

From that day on, a new problem was introduced into the field of alchemy. The problem was so well known that almost every alchemist knew about it, and can even easily recall the eight ingredients for it.

If was not until three decades later that an alchemist called Charles solved the formula for the Bluefire chemical and gained instant fame.

Of course, Ye Chong would not know about all these. Looking down at the blue flames, he began to calculate its effective range and possible applications.



Students who were left in the school building were escorted by the remaining mechs to the medical block, where Fei Si was. The truth was, no one wanted to stay in the school building any longer. The terrifying blue flame had left a deep mark in their psyche. The medical building had a more solid structure, so there was no danger of the freaky insects entering the building.

Everyone still looked taxed from their experience. Just the day before, they were but normal teachers or students, but in the past few hours, they were plunged into a battle of life and death. They watched their comrades being engulfed by the wave of mutant rats, or their beloved teachers swallowed up by the mutants.

It was horrible! Everyone's eyes were filled with fear. Just what was happening to them?

Never had they been so close to death!

Since Ye Chong was here, there were not many casualties. Most of the victims were students who tried to stop the insects from entering the building. The teachers and students who were fighting against the rats were protected by mechs, so they were mostly safe. However, the mechs were covered with chilling bite marks. The old man himself was only slightly injured, mostly because his combat style was simply too bold. Once he began fighting, he would be oblivious to his own safety.

Ye Chong remained silent, sitting in his corner.

However, no one dared to be disrespectful to him. In some ways, he was everyone's savior. His excellent combat skills and the terrifying Bluefire chemical he produced left him shrouded in mystery.

The most curious thing about him, though, was the fact that no one recognized him. No one knew his name or specialty.

Ye Chong closed his eyes for a very simple reason. No one would be happy to see blue lines dancing everywhere. More importantly,

he was considering something. This being the matter of how to return to the planet of Yi Ju safely.

Sang Pu and the rest did not know about Ye Chong's situation, and Ye Chong did not try to contact them. They would not be of help, being far away on Yi Ju. It would take some time for them to reach him. He would have to deal with his problems alone. As Ye Chong suspected, Sang Pu and the rest were indeed ignorant of his situation. As Ye Chong had ordered for them to learn how to hide their aura before being allowed to leave the base, none of them had left.

While Ye Chong had supplied plenty of resources for the base, they did not include any kinds of entertainment or virtual world connection facilities. Of course, the Sang Tribe had no concept of entertainment; Hai Lian and the others were being trained harshly under Sang Pu, who could not stand having mediocre subordinates, so they did not even have time to consider such luxuries.

Ye Chong would have flown away in Han Jia in search of a starship, if it were him alone. He was not afraid of the mutants in the skies. However, he had decided to bring Old Jalopy and Fei Si with him. The old man was the most important and Fei Si was only a bonus.

As he reached the school building, Ye Chong finally sighed in relief. The old man and Fei Si were safe for now. That meant he was finally able to head out and find a starship.

Ye Chong deployed Valiance, ready to search for a starship. Without a starship, escape was impossible. Bi Bo, being a professional, wanted to tag along with Ye Chong, but Ye Chong's unfriendly glare had him sitting back down quietly in his corner. He would not dare to fight against this killer. Besides, the fact that they had so many survivors was largely due to this mysterious young man. It would be unwise now to invite public wrath.

Zhou Jian planet's docking zone was a wreck. Bodies lying here and there bore testimony to the disaster that had struck this place. Numerous starships were left at their stations. The hustle and bustle long associated with this place was absent, leaving only a dead silence.

Ye Chong searched the bodies carefully, and soon found a starship's signkey. Based on the identity number on the signkey, he took only three minutes to find the corresponding starship. It was an ordinary midsized starship. He activated the signkey and opened the hatch to the starship. Ye Chong went inside. The ship was empty. Everything looked organized inside. It seemed that the starship's crew did not make it.

However, Ye Chong quickly discovered a significant problem. He was only a single person. Even with the old man and Fei Si, they were only three. How could three people fly a starship? Once, Ye Chong did not have to worry about these problems. It was only now that he realized how blessed he was before!

What a quandary!

## Chapter 323: Ambush

Ye Chong exited the starship. Just then, he heard a rush of footsteps. Amidst the silence, he could hear them clearly. Based on Ye Chong's sharp hearing, he could identify 12 people!

Ye Chong bent down and hid behind the starship. He could make out a group of huge men surrounding a young boy, about eight or nine years old. The boy wore a white formal attire, looking around himself with his large and dark, keen eyes. The 11 men around him did not look particularly strong physically, but their eyes betrayed their keen senses.

Ye Chong found it odd. While these men looked sharp, their physique and stride indicated that they were not particularly skilled. Another curious thing was, they all had energy guns holstered by the waist. A few of them even had energy guns in their hands. This was the first time Ye Chong had seen anyone in He Yue galaxy armed with an energy gun.

These 11 men might not be particularly skilled physically, but from their formation and the wariness in their eyes, it was clear that they were well trained. The twelve of them were walking towards a starship.

"So the docking zone was also attacked," the young boy sighed wearily, with a sense of maturity that belied his age.

One of the men bent down and said to him, "Young Master Ming, our ship is straight ahead. We'll leave here soon. The Tribe Leader wished for you to return home as soon as possible. She's very worried about you."

The young boy frowned and complained, "Back to that dull place again. Just when I thought I can finally enjoy a few years outside, and now this had happened." His expression turned into one of rumination. It was cute, seeing a young boy showing an adult expression, but none of the men around him laughed.

"It must be man-made!" The young boy deduced, "Any clues?"

"None," the leader of the subordinates shook his head. "The Tribe Leader also thinks that it's a man-made disaster, but no one knows who's behind it yet. If the perpetrator is found, they will meet death so easily." The subordinate spoke earnestly. Indeed, if the perpetrator was identified, they would become public enemy number one of the entire galaxy.

The young boy spoke ruthlessly, "If I find out who did this ... Humph, d\*mn it, ruining my vacation! Unforgivable!" He gesticulated wildly in excitement. The subordinates around him could not help a smile this time.

Lying in hiding near them was Ye Chong, who had planned to make use of them the moment he saw them. What he lacked now were crew members for his ship. These people were here just in time! It was obvious that they were planning to fly their own starship and leave this place. They must know how to fly a ship.

Ye Chong was like a hunter, lying in waiting for the perfect moment. The blue lines in his sight continued to dance around. The dots and lines would shift along with the movements of the people in this group. This gave him a headache.

As they got nearer and nearer to his location, Ye Chong's eyes widened.

They were now only 10 meters apart. Ye Chong chose an excellent location, shaded from view, and with a metal plate blocking right in front of him. The close distance was very much preferred by Ye Chong as a combat expert.

To get within 10 meters of a Jie expert was definitely a fatal mistake!

Ye Chong bent his knees and sprinted, staying close to the ground as he headed straight towards the group! The ambush startled them all!

They were too close together!

The short distance resulted in a nightmare for the victims of a Jie expert with explosive strength.

The man closest to Ye Chong could only lift his energy gun halfway before Ye Chong landed a gentle chop on his neck, disabling him.

The rest of the men were well trained, and kept their composure despite the surprise. The man right next to the young boy quickly grabbed the young master close to him. The rest of them surrounded the young master, staying between him and Ye Chong.

Those with guns took their shot immediately without care for their comrade.

It would be a terrible disgrace if Ye Chong managed to let them get away given the short distance between them. He stepped lightly, easily avoiding the shots. It was their comrade who got injured, but he held himself admirably and did not even sigh in pain.

Ye Chong was surprised by their shooting skills! Just now, at least three of the energy beams barely grazed past him. In fact, Ye Chong could see from the way these men reacted, shooting back calmly despite his ambush, that they were no average bodyguards!

However, even the best shooters would lose against a Jie expert in close range combat.

Ye Chong moved evasively like a shadow, making himself a difficult target. This group of men were skilled combat experts compared to most, but they were still full of holes in Ye Chong's eyes. If he wanted to kill them, they would have all been dead by now. However, Ye Chong needed all of them alive, hence the extra effort.

The young boy was the key! Ye Chong slipped in like a fish, pushing his hands against the men!

Bam! A few men were thrown outwards like an explosion.

There were two left in front of Ye Chong. The man kept the young master firmly behind him, staring straight at Ye Chong.

What a sharp gaze! Ye Chong was impressed, but also curious. Why would these people be so easy to defeat?

On the other hand, why was he still looking so calm?

Suddenly, Ye Chong felt a dangerous aura! He moved without thinking, stomping down strongly on the ground, crushing the flooring beneath him as he jumped to the side!

It was this instinctive reaction that saved his life!

An energy beam as thick as a finger shot through his arm, where his heart was just milliseconds ago.

The pain! Ye Chong could not remember the last time he was injured, and now he had nearly lost his life. On his left arm was a bloody wound that went right through his arm, big enough to fit a finger through it. The edges of the wound were seared black, and his skin was slightly burnt from the energy beam. Ye Chong did not have time to check if it had hit bones. As long as it was a flesh wound, a few hours was all it would take for him to recover himself.

D\*mn it, there was someone else!

Ye Chong felt a chill down his spine. What a terrifying shooter! From the beginning of his ambush, he had moved swiftly throughout, an elusive shadow in the men's eyes. To think that the shooter could fire so accurately at him despite his speed! If he had not stepped aside at the last minute, that shot would have killed him!

The timing of the shot was also flawless. Seeing his comrades being defeated one by one, the last man still managed to use his young master as bait. He must be a seasoned veteran.

Swoosh!

Another energy beam grazed past Ye Chong's ear and hit the ground in front of him.

He felt a deep chill. Ye Chong could feel death closing in on him. His leg muscles suddenly expanded. This was no time to hold himself back! With the September Lan Family's techniques, Ye Chong launched himself forward, his steps seemingly light, but full of power.

The strong-compound floorings crumbled under his heavy footsteps, filling the air with debris. The dust also made Ye Chong's figure even harder to see clearly.

Ye Chong was now giving all he had! This was the fastest he had ever been!

He saw the man leading the young master away hurriedly, and ran towards them under the cover of the debris. As long as he could get his hands on the young master before he was shot by that hidden sniper, it would be his win.

Ye Chong shifted his position frequently, advancing quickly like an elusive ghost. However, the danger that he felt from earlier never disappeared. Ye Chong believed that the sniper was better than this.

Despite his indirect advance forward, he was slowly closing in on the man and the young boy.

Three meters! Only three meters. What was three meters to a Jie expert? It was only a step away.

Ye Chong suddenly inclined forward, making ready to leap!

The feint worked.

Swoosh! Another energy beam shot past, bruising Ye Chong's scalp as it hit the ground, leaving a big hole.

The opening was there. Ye Chong's bent knees straightened,



launching himself forward. The man suddenly turned around, hoping to delay Ye Chong if for a moment. He knew exactly how capable his comrade was. Even with a slight delay, this terrifying ambusher would be dead for sure.

However, Ye Chong was still clear headed. The man saw a blur of movement and lost sight of the ambusher. Immediately after, he heard the young master's pained cries. The ambusher's hand was around the young master's neck, and he was looking coldly back at him.

The young master wore an expression of agony.

"Come out," Ye Chong said coldly, and finally relaxed a little. He did not forget to keep his hostage right in front of him. He was still shaken by the strength of that hidden sniper.

Ye Chong finally found the sniper. This was not due to his sharp eyesight, but the blue lines he saw. The sniper was well hidden. With Ye Chong's amateur skills, he would never have found him. Even so, the blue lines he saw showed the exact picture of the sniper in ambush.

"What excellent camouflage skills," Ye Chong thought to himself, impressed. It was impossible to see the sniper with the naked eye. Besides, the location of choice was ideal to cover his comrades. He could only see faint blue lines on the sniper, but none of the bright blue lines of blue dots.

Ye Chong's left arm was already disabled, hanging lifelessly beside him. Blood gushed freely from the wound, flowing down along the arm, along the fingers, and finally dripping on the ground.

The last man standing before him spoke in a low voice, "Who might you be? Why do you attack us? I think there must be some sort of mistake ..."

Ye Chong ignored the man and narrowed his eyes. He put more

strength into his grip, looked straight at the sniper's location, and said, "Come out."

The man standing before him paused. This person was strong!

"You win," a hoarse, male voice said. The sniper finally stood up from his hiding place.

He could see bright blue dots and blue lines on him. If Ye Chong could still move his left hand, he would have thrown his dagger at that very moment. Having such a dangerous character near him felt highly threatening.

Too bad his left hand was disabled.

The ambusher lifted his hands high above his head as he came forward. Ye Chong finally saw the dangerous character clearly. The man had a square head with wiry hair, and hard facial features. There were horrible wounds spread all over his face like a web.

The scariest part about him, however, was his hollow, lifeless eyes.

"Hit them unconscious," Ye Chong said to the sniper.

The sniper obeyed acted hesitation, rendering all the other bodyguards unconscious, including the last one standing. He did not play any tricks. That would be unwise against a Jie expert.

"Bring them here."

The sniper worked like a laborer, carrying all the unconscious men into the starship that Ye Chong had opened. Looking at all the unconscious men, Ye Chong finally allowed himself some satisfaction.

Bam! The sniper was also taken out, lying unconscious with the rest. The young boy in his grip was also given the same treatment.

Ye Chong finally heaved a sigh of relief. His face was growing pale. Now, he must treat his wounds, or he would suffer heavily

from blood loss.

Before seeing to his wounds, however, Ye Chong took out the red tendrils and tied them all up securely. These red tendrils were a specialty produce from the Red Sea, with incredible strength. The ones Ye Chong had with him were of the finest quality. It would be impossible to escape from them with brute force.

After all that, Ye Chong finally headed towards the medical bay. Every starship was equipped with medical facilities, since space voyages were typically very long.

Ye Chong returned to Ze Xi Academy five hours after he left. Beside looking a little pale, with an extra hole in his left sleeve, Ye Chong did not look like an injured man. He had spent some time to treat the wounds of a few of the injured men. He did not want the captives that he went through so much trouble for to die from blood loss. His efforts and injuries would have been for nothing then.

Fei Si noticed Ye Chong's return and ran to him in a panic. "Good! You're back. Sigh, they're infected by a virus."

"Virus?" Ye Chong was surprised.

Fei Si nodded. "Yes. it must a mutation of the H virus. Only the wounded students and teachers were infected." She brought Ye Chong to see a few infected students. They looked ghastly with brown spots all over their bodies as they lay curled up on the floor.

Ye Chong was startled. "You mean, all those who were wounded are now infected?" He remembered clearly that Old Jalopy was also injured.

Fei Si hesitated for a moment before replying, "That's very likely. In humans, the H virus was transmitted through blood. In other animals, however, they can be transmitted in many other ways."

"How did you verify that it's the H virus? Why do some of the other injured ones still look alright?" Ye Chong asked as he took a

glance over at Uncle Jalopy, who still seemed to be in good health.

Fei Si explained, "My teacher and I study the H virus. The H virus can lay dormant for an uncertain amount of time. Some will take a lot longer, and others shorter. It can go up to 10 years, or as short as 24 hours for the symptoms to show." She spoke with concern.

Ye Chong looked straight at Fei Si and asked, "Is there any cure?" He could only be thankful that Old Jalopy was still looking alright for now. However, if the infection remained, the old man would be just like a time bomb waiting to explode.

Where else could he find an expert in ancient machinery?

Fei Si looked crestfallen. "It's a pity that the chips are lost. They have information on about 30 thousand over mutations of the H virus that my teacher and I have discovered. There might have been clues in them. Sigh, they were my teacher's legacy." The chips were already stomped to pieces by the mutant rats. However, she also knew that this was not the time to dwell on these matters. After some pondering, she said, "We can analyze the structure of this particular strain of H virus, and see if a cure can be derived."

"If?" Ye Chong frowned. He did not like the word.

"Yes, I cannot guarantee a cure," Fei Si explained helplessly, "The H virus is highly compatible with other viruses, and is frequently used for cultivation purposes. That's the scariest part of this type of virus."

"How will you analyze its structure?" Ye Chong asked.

When it came to technical questions, Fei Si replied promptly, "An ultra-micro analyzer will do." She added, "Only Engradie Academy has it. They have the resources."

# Chapter 324: Chance Encounter I

"My dear lady, how can I be of service?" This came from a young man in black formal wear. He was a handsome fine man with an air of politeness and a smile that spelt mischief; in short - he was a ladykiller. In fact, he had a long and successful history of winning over girls. Aside from that, given the situation, who would reject his advances? He laughed to himself inside as he looked at the woman in white training garb before him confidently.

If his guards had not arrived at the academy in time, the academy grounds would have been full of corpses by now. The Elante Family had a thousand mech pilots stationed on Zhou Jian planet. While it was a pity that only 500 of them came to his rescue, Xiye was already quite satisfied. The academy's safety was now in his hands.

When Engradie Academy was plunged into crisis, the 500 war mechs had arrived to restore order. They quickly cleared the academy grounds of mutants and rescued many students and teachers.

As an aristocrat, Xiye understood his advantage. The Elante Family was on par with the likes of aristocratic families like the Shi Family and the Mi Family. While they were still a level below the Three Aristocratic Families, it did not really matter. Here in Engradie Academy, he was free to do as he pleased. There were only two people he had to be wary about, but they did not seem to be in the school at the moment.

He knew that true descendants of any of the Three Aristocratic Families would receive secret internal training since young. It was when they were 14 years old that they would be sent to other Academies for further studies, and always under disguise. Only the Elante Family that specialized in intel would know of this secretive precaution.

The young woman in white before him had hooked his interest.

What with her refreshing aura! Tsk tsk, she must be some kind of combat expert, and she kept a serious expression on her face. Xiye imagined her looking sweet and mellow beside him, and felt his pulse quickened. However, he also thought it odd - such a peculiar lady should be famous in the academy, so why had he never heard of her? And who was that girl she was carrying on her back? Was it her sister?

"For shame, for shame, I've neglected my research," Xiye thought to himself.

Rui Bing took a glance at Xiye. She was obviously not taken by the man in black formal wear. Her expression turned cold as she said plainly, "Please leave."

"What a personality!" Xiye's eyes lit up. As an experienced ladies' man, he could tell the character of the other party with just few words. He smiled sincerely and said, "Please believe me, I mean no harm. Your sister does not look well, is she ill? We have professional doctors here, perhaps they might be able to assist you." Roundabout ways to speaking were usually quite effective.

Rui Bing's face showed hesitation. On her back, Shi Fuyin was indeed not in good condition. She could feel the heat coming from her back. Shi Fuyin was having a fever.

"Thank you," Rui Bing answered succinctly, but not looking the least bit grateful. Aside from Ye Chong, she did not like talking to other men.

Xiye bowed slightly and replied politely, "I'm deeply honored to be of service!" He was secretly pleased. If she accepted his help, the rest will be easier.

Shi Fuyin was not well. However, with the excellent facilities available at Engradie Academy, and Xiye's ingratiation, Shi Fuyin's condition was eased.

Rui Bing ignored Xiye. She sat down cross-legged and did not

move, guarding Shi Fuyin.

Ye Chong and company finally arrived at Engradie Academy. Together with him were Bi Bo, Mi De, Fatty and Fei Si. The rats had vanished from the streets, but it was still a horrible sight to behold. The roads were lined with corpses, and there were traces of blood and organs everywhere. Some of the bodies were already chewed to an unrecognizable state. The buildings that lined the streets were also in desperate need of repair.

Even someone like Ye Chong, who was no stranger to chaos, was moved by the sight of the disaster. The rest of them were even more so. Bi Bo's recorder brought this spectacle to his viewers. The video caused quite a stir. Many of the audiences vomited on the spot. Fear and panic began to spread among the public.

Mi De and Fatty quickly noticed the recorder in Bi Bo's hands. They were not like Ye Chong, who did not recognize what it was. Due to their family backgrounds, they were sensitive to reporters. Bi Bo quickly noticed their attention on him and switched off his recorder. Bi Bo's decision invited protests from the audience. Five seconds later, the customer service department of the Green Planet Channel was overwhelmed by numerous requests. The entire Group grew extremely anxious, but Bi Bo had not only switched off his recorder, but also his comms device as well.

What happened later, and where the nameless young man had vanished to, remained mysteries till today.

The holographic screen turned dark.

"Boss Mu, are we going to planet Zhou Jian ?" Lian Yue asked carefully. Zhu Ling and Little Rock both looked to Mu. Only Qiu Man gave a cold laugh.

Mu shook his large head. "No, our position is too weak for now. The probability of us being destroyed before reaching Ye is above 95 percent. Besides, it will take at least 25 days for us to reach planet Zhou Jian. By then, there is an 80 to 85 percent probability

that Ye has left the planet. Many experts on the virtual world were recently focusing on Zhou Jian. I had no opportunity to hack in."

Everyone went silent.

At Engradie Academy.

An ugly looking middle-aged man shook his head vigorously. "Ultra-micro analyzer? No, no. What can a young woman like you do? Don't worry, our academy's experts are all working on it, there will be results out soon. Rest assured, once the results are out, our academy will publish it all for public access."

Everyone exchanged glances speechlessly. Mi De and Fatty each went to one side of the overweight middle-aged man. Mi De smiled and said, "Come on now, Director. We're just using that bl\*ody thing for a while, really, it's just for a moment, just a very short while."

The Director of Teaching Affairs immediately cut him off and yelled angrily, "What bl\*ody thing? That's an ultra-micro analyzer, an ultra-micro analyzer, alright? The only one on the entire planet!" The director gestured emotionally with his one fat finger.

"Yes yes yes!" Fatty quickly continued the exchange, putting on a flattering smile. "Don't mind him, Director, what would he know? This ultra-micro analyzer is the most precious thing, only an aristocratic academy like ours will have. The young lady's from a public academy, she's never seen anything so high tech. Yeah, we should let her get a taste of it, err, educating students from other academies is also one of the noble duties of our fine academy!" Fatty spoke while quietly passing a card over to the Director.

The Director of Teaching Affairs caressed the card in a familiar gesture and immediately smiled and nodded, "You know best, fatty! Hmm, now that I think about it, you're right, we and the Ze Xi Academy have shared a long history of friendship. Assisting them with their students is also a good deed! Ha, a marvellous idea!"



Mi De and Fatty quickly nodded and smiled agreeably while the rest of the group watched in stupefaction.

The Director led everyone into the alchemy building, reminding them, "There are many wounded, and the academy's hospital is damaged, so the wounded students are all placed here. Please try to stay quiet and not disturb the patients."

Everyone nodded, thinking that the Director's attitude towards the students was actually not bad.

"Sister Bing, it's so stuffy in here, I'd like to go out," Shi Fuyin spoke softly. "As expected, they are a pair of beautiful sisters," thought Xiye, who had waited near them for some time. As an expert ladykiller, he knew the importance of patience. How can one expect to have a beautiful lady's willing company without some patience? What he was doing now was akin to slowly simmering a dish, awaiting its final result.

"Hmm, alright!" Rui Bing opened her eyes and abruptly stood up. She lifted Shi Fuyin easily and left for the outdoors, moving quickly without giving so much as a glance at Xiye nearby. If he had not helped Shi Fuyin to secure a spot for treatment, she would have physically forced the annoying man away.

A group of people was coming from in front of her, led by a middle-aged man that looked like one of the higher-ups of the academy. Rui Bing slowed down her steps.

Ye Chong was now having a considerable headache. Blue lines were jiggling all over his vision, annoying as hell. If not for his mental fortitude, he would have gone crazy. He could even feel his vision degraded because of them.

Ye Chong unknowingly took a glance at Rui Bing, coming from opposite the corridor.

Rui Bing stopped abruptly, her eyes glowing bright as she yelled coldly, "Who is it?" Her white training garb fluttered in the still

air.

Ye Chong felt like his head was whacked, and the blue lines vanished from his vision. This sudden change startled him greatly.

The lady in the snow white training garb! Ye Chong stopped walking despite otherwise.

He looked at the woman carrying another young lady, wearing that familiar snow white training garb. Her face was as refreshing and crisp as clear snow. Ye Chong's mental impression of the face wearing the white training garb now turned up clearly.

The white training garb enveloped a pair of soft but callused hands. Her smooth, fair neck, and that unforgettable sweetness that he tasted on the tip of his tongue all came back to him.

Rui Bing's eyes also landed on Ye Chong. Did that feeling of being watched come from him? The person looked familiar, be it his figure or his movements, but the face was a stranger to her.

Ye Chong stared dumbly at Rui Bing. He was reminded of Shang, of Mu, and of his time at Blue Ocean Academy. For a moment, he was lost in his memories.

The rest of the group gave a curious look at Rui Bing, who was carrying Shi Fuyin. What's with the question? No one did anything strange. The Director of Teaching Affairs began to lecture, "Dear student, please lower your voice, don't disturb the other students ..."

The first to notice Ye Chong's strange behavior was Fei Si. His face was blank most of the time, so the sudden emotions that showed on his face was too obvious to go unnoticed.

Ye Chong recovered himself, and quickly thought of a very important question that needed answering. He finally stepped forward before Rui Bing.

"It's me!" Ye Chong said. He was not sure if the lady in the white training garb still remembered him.

## Chapter 325: Chance Encounter II

Rui Bing felt a jolt, nearly dropping Shi Fuyin from her arms. Shi Fuyin gasped sharply, holding tightly onto Rui Bing. Rui Bing seemed to not hear her sharp cry, her eyes staring straight at Ye Chong in disbelief.

Just then, a wind blew, and Rui Bing's eyes lit up with pleasant surprise. It was the smell! While the man looked completely different from him, the smell was definitely his! Ever since young, he was the only man she had ever been so physically intimate with. She recalled the last time he licked her neck, and her fair neck colored instantly. It was also that moment that allowed Rui Bing to remember Ye Chong's body scent.

This man before her was Ye Chong, she was sure of it.

To the rest of the group, the cold eyes of this lady in white seemed to melt in that instant, as she looked longingly at Ye Chong.

"Could this be Sister Bing's dream man?" Shi Fuyin studied the man curiously. His almost terrifying face had shocked her. What a pitiful man! This was Shi Fuyin's first thought. However, she was also very curious of him. The others may not see it, but Shi Fuyin could see the blush on Rui Bing's neck clearly. For a man to win Sister Bing's heart, he must have his admirable traits.

Shi Fuyin could read people's emotions easily. She could see Xiye's flattering efforts clearly, but she could also easily sense Rui Bing's coldness and even distaste towards him. Whether it was his demeanor or his actions, Xiye was full of aristocratic qualities. The fact that Rui Bing despised flattery from such a man, but loved another man like this instead was very curious indeed!

Ye Chong and Rui Bing looked at each other in silence, remembering their past.

No one could have not guessed the relationship between these

two. All of them stayed quiet. Fei Si wore a complicated expression. She was not sure what exactly she was feeling, except that it was not exactly pleasant.

Could she have actually fallen for him? The idea suddenly came to her, and startled Fei Si. However, she quickly rejected it. How was that possible? The man was so cold, an apathetic fool. He was ugly, and had even slapped her. There was nothing good about him at all. How could she have fallen for him? What a ridiculous idea!

However, the image of bodies covering the floor, and of a young man holding a lance steadily at the center came unbidding to her mind. She also remembered his focused expression when performing alchemy.

Fei Si suddenly felt her cheeks burn a little. She looked around her guiltily, and relaxed when she found no one watching.

"Let's find a room," Ye Chong looked at the group around them. This was not the place to talk.

"Alright," Rui Bing replied without hesitation.

Mi De muttered by the side, "No way, Boss, that's too much! You're gonna do it right after you meet?"

Fatty nodded as well. "Yeah, that's right. Boss is Boss alright, you're too straightforward! I like it!" Fei Si heard their discussion and blushed even more. The Director of Teaching Affairs, on the other hand, looked like he was also moved by their reunion as he looked at the pair happily.

Rui Bing looked at Shi Fuyin in her arms, and Shi Fuyin immediately offered, "Sister Bing, why don't you let me down, I'd like to stand for awhile."

Rui Bing nodded, and put Shi Fuyin down.

In one of the rooms, Ye Chong and Rui Bing looked at each other speechlessly. After a long moment, Ye Chong finally spoke up, "Why are you here too?"

"I was kidnapped," Rui Bing answered simply.

Ye Chong was surprised. "Kidnapped?"

Rui Bing nodded, saying, "I don't know the reason for it."

"So that's how it is ..." Ye Chong was a little disappointed. He had thought Rui Bing would know how she arrived here. He thought of something else, and asked, "How are Grandpa Qian and the rest?"

"They're well."

They exchanged words back and forth like this in a plain manner. If anyone were there to hear it, their jaws would drop. However, the two of them felt comfortable with it.

Suddenly, they ran out of topics to talk about.

Silence filled the room for a long moment.

Rui Bing lowered her head and suddenly asked a very sharp question, "When are you ready to marry me?"

"Marry?" Ye Chong paused. He was no longer as oblivious as before, and finally had a better sense of what marriage implied. He tilted his head at Rui Bing and asked, "Why should I marry you?"

"You kissed me," Rui Bing answered, wasting no words. Her neck was turning red again, but she kept her gaze firmly on Ye Chong.

"Kiss" was a term that Ye Chong had seen before in books, but the actual mechanism and action involved was still a mystery to Ye Chong. However, in all the major literature that he had read, kissing only happened between people who fell in love with each other. None of the books had ever really described this act. Of course, "love" was also a bit difficult to understand for Ye Chong. However, in many of these literature he read, it was the first step towards marriage.

"I did not kiss you," Ye Chong searched his memories for a full three minutes before he replied with certainty.

"You did!" Rui Bing said without hesitation, and a steely

resolution.

"I didn't!" Ye Chong shook his head. He was confident of his own memory.

"You did!" Rui Bing was unyielding.

Ye Chong looked at Rui Bing. He never thought she would be so insistent. Could he really have kissed her? Ye Chong felt a little uncertain. He knew nothing of kissing, from the beginning of the act to the end of it, the process of it, or even the coordination required between the two parties involved. He was confident of his memories, to be sure, but in this matter at least, he was not an expert.

Ye Chong made his final struggle. "I did not kiss you, probably."

"You did!" Rui Bing's eyes shone with determination.

"I did?" Ye Chong asked carefully.

"You did!" Rui Bing's tone sounded so certain.

It seemed that he really did kiss her. Ye Chong sighed regretfully. He did not fully understand this woman, but it was obvious that she did not take this matter jokingly. However, when did he kiss her? And what was kissing all about? The naive Ye Chong was now thinking of these questions. What would Rui Bing do if she knew?

"When did I kiss you?" Ye Chong asked warily. He might be able to tell from Rui Bing's reply just how in the world kissing was done.

Ye Chong watched as Rui Bing's face flushed into a deep red, the blush spreading in plain view from her neck to her cheeks.

It looked like he really did kiss her! Ye Chong's final hope was dashed. However, he really wanted to understand what this mysterious action was all about.

Rui Bing lowered her head even more.

Her breathing shortened and her face turned red. She had

lowered her guard, looking very different from the usual Rui Bing. Ye Chong guessed that he probably would not get anything out of her.

As expected, Rui Bing said nothing for a very long time.

In the end, Ye Chong concluded the topic, "Well, let's set this question aside for the moment."

"Alright. I'll be with you from now on." Rui Bing's expression returned to normal.

He tilted his head and looked at Rui Bing, and Rui Bing understood his meaning. Without any warning, Rui Bing's eyes shone brightly with an odd light. Ye Chong felt his body tense up together with a heightened sense of danger. Just when he was about to move, he felt something like strings appeared in the empty air and bounded him up tightly.

Almost instinctively, Ye Chong's eyes lit up. The vanished blue lines appeared once again. The numerous blue lines danced around like fishes in his vision in a fast and disorganized pattern.

The blue lines jiggled vigorously. Abruptly, the lines all converged to a single point. His vision was empty except for a bright, blue dot.

Without further thought, Ye Chong's throat contracted quickly, releasing a shapeless soundwave from his mouth straight towards the bright blue dot.

Mortal Roar!

The blue dot trembled in the air, but did not vanish. Ye Chong felt the air around him pulsating. His eyes shone even more brightly. His throat contracted again, and he released another soundwave.

The blue dot shook more violently.

The third Mortal Roar hit the blue dot.

Crack! A soft sound, and Ye Chong felt the binding in him gone.

The floor in the room was covered with broken glass. It was a mess. The air in the room continued to pulsate.

Rui Bing said nothing, only looking at Ye Chong, but her short breath indicated that it was no easy task. Ye Chong was also breathing quickly. That short match earlier had strained him.

"You've improved a lot," Ye Chong said with approval.

"You too." Rui Bing and Ye Chong exchanged a glance, and smiled at the same time.

Ye Chong took out Guardian's dimension keystone. "For you, put it on. The voice activation code is Number Two."

Rui Bing's face turned red once again, but she sounded an assent and accepted Guardian's dimension keystone, putting it on her right hand's ring finger.

Just then, the door was forcefully broken through from the outside.



## Chapter 326: The Shi Family's Fury

It was Xiye outside. He had two huge men with cold eyes beside him. The two bodyguards were startled by the mess in the room, and quickly stepped forward to protect Xiye.

Xiye looked at Ye Chong with hostility. He noticed the ring on Rui Bing's right hand ring finger, and his face twisted horribly. He remembered clearly that Rui Bing's had no jewellery of any kind before this. There was only one answer to his observation. This incredibly ugly man must be Rui Bing's old lover.

Xiye tried hard to control his emotions. He did not immediately turned on them, but spoke politely, "Dear student, you must be from another academy. Hmm, from your uniform, it must be the Ze Xi Academy. Dear student, I deeply apologize, but due to our limited resources, we do not currently accept students from other schools."

His politeness was not aimed to please, but his words allowed no argument. Right now, he was practically the one person who had the power to keep Engradie Academy safe. 500 mech pilots was not a force to be trifled with, especially at dangerous times like this.

Xiye laughed coldly inside. He had seen all too many women, and they were all alike. He believed that this particular lady must have recognized the reality of things. Without his protection, she will find it difficult to survive. Who would throw away their own lives without a care? It was hardly a choice for her, but he really enjoyed watching the woman he was interested in facing this decision. It made success felt all the more sweeter!

Even if the woman was foolish enough to reject him, once the two of them left and she came to realize the practicalities, she would definitely come back to him begging for mercy! It felt wonderful to control someone else's life! This was not the first time for him.

"Such is the fate of others," Xiye thought to himself with a feigned air of philosophy.

The two guards quickly realized their master's plan. One of them quickly activated his comms. If the two of them refused to leave, they had enough manpower to make them.

Rui Bing's expression darkened. She understood the situation outside clearly. As she saw Xiye's cold eyes turned cold, Rui Bing unleashed her own sharp, cold aura like a blade unsheathed. The two guards were startled, staring at Rui Bing. They now regretted not bringing more people with them as a precaution.

Ye Chong looked at Xiye silently, his expression unchanged.

Just then, someone spoke from behind Xiye, "Oh, what a ridiculous world this has become, since when has Engradie Academy become a certain someone's?"

The voice made Xiye's face twitch. This was a voice that he dreaded to hear within the academy.

Both Mi De and Fatty entered the scene looking carefree, leaning on each other as they watched Xiye, grinning widely.

Fatty added, "Yeah, that's right, these days, the sun must have shined too brightly that some of the nonsensical fools start to crawl outside to our world, so scary!"

Seeing Fatty with Mi De, Xiye's expression turned sour still.

"What do you two mean?" Xiye asked in a low voice. If it were someone else, he would have chased them off forcefully. These two, however, were the only two people he was wary of in the academy. Usually they would fool around and keep clear of his way, but this time they had chosen to get involved with his business.

"Could they be friends of that ugly man? Friends? Humph!" Xiye laughed coldly inside. It was unwise to go against him at this time. He had thought these two were smart, but it seemed that he had

overestimated them.

"I say, handsome, you've always been chasing girls, ruining the lives of innocent young ladies et cetera et cetera, we've hardly bothered to get involved. Hehe, to think that you'd offend someone strong today! Are you tired of living?" Mi De said this with a cold smile, and without fear. He knew exactly how strong Ye Chong was.

"Xiye, let's be honest, you have no right to speak as you did. De and I are getting involved in this matter today, just give your best and we'll take you down. But let me warn you, you better think carefully about this, humph. In this matter, against my family and the Mi Family, humph ..." Fatty said this in a low voice. He may looked like a joker most of the time, but he spoke with great severity right now.

Xiye looked at the two of them with a still expression, but he was secretly beginning to doubt himself. The Mi Family and the Bibiqi Family were at the same level as his family. If these two opposed him for real, he would have a hard time in the future.

Just who was this ugly man? This was the main question for Xiye. Why would Fatty and Mi De put themselves out here to help him?

"Who is he?" Xiye asked lowly.

"None of your business," Fatty replied briskly. Ye Chong's identity was a mystery to everyone. None of them could had any idea.

"So Mi De is from the Mi family," Ye Chong thought to himself in surprise. The Mi Family was the only aristocratic family he had some relation to. From the looks of it, however, he had not figured out who he was. Ye Chong could not be bothered to make himself known.

Xiye took a quick glance at Rui Bing. She stood silently beside the

ugly man, her eyes shining brightly in way that was familiar to him. It was the way a woman's eyes would shine when in blessed happiness.

He felt a deep envy growing in the depths of his heart.

Just then, a large group of men came running towards them. They all looked strong, their stride powerful and steady. Their strength was undeniable. These were 100 of the 500 mech pilots under Xiye. Behind them were more than a hundred mechs hovering mid air, looking at them threateningly.

Xiye was secretly overjoyed, but did not speak. Fatty and Mi De watched with horror and surprise.

These mech pilots came in and quickly formed a barrier around Xiye. The rest of them surrounded Ye Chong and the others.

"Xiye, what's the meaning of this?" Mi De asked grimly.

Xiye was quite happy to see the looks on Mi De and Fatty. The pressure that they put on him moments ago vanished in an instant. He smiled unpleasantly and said, "Mi De, I suggest that you stay out of this matter. My business with them has got nothing to do with you both. People are always so eager to get mixed up in matters that they're not capable of dealing with. Tsk tsk, that's not such a good idea!" Xiye's sarcastic remark angered them both.

On the other hand, Mi De and Fatty both understood their situation clearly.

Fatty patted on Mi De's shoulder and exchanged a look. Fatty turned over to Xiye and said, "Very well, Xiye, we'll remember this." He turned to Ye Chong and said sincerely, "Boss, sorry about this. We were not prepared for this, and have failed. Let's leave."

Ye Chong nodded, but did not move.

Rui Bing took a look at Shi Fuyin and grew worried. Shi Fuyin was not well. If they leave this place, her condition might turn even worse. Rui Bing stole a glance at Xiye, surrounded by his

guards, and calculated her odds of capturing him alive.

Shi Fuyin smiled sweetly at Rui Bing as though she had seen through her thoughts. However, she did not look scared or worried. Instead, she stepped lightly towards the Director of Teaching Affairs, directed her large, innocent eyes at the Director, and said plainly, "Is your academy really chasing us out from this place?"

Shi Fuyin's unusual reaction gathered everyone's attention. Mi De and Fatty exchanged a look, and saw the surprise in each other. This fragile looking young lady managed to utter those words calmly, as though the one who was threatened was not her.

"As expected, the Boss has unusual friends!" Mi De and Fatty both came to the same conclusion.

The Director avoided Shi Fuyin's gaze and took a glance at Xiye. He quickly turned away and mumbled to himself, unable to say anything absolute.

Xiye was extremely pleased. This was the best moment of his life. The people he had always been wary of were now suppressed, the fates of all these people were also in his hands. The only thing that annoyed him was that these people showed no fear at all. "Humph, just wait until you're outside. You'll come back begging," Xiye thought to himself, his expression was tinged with cruelty.

It was simply too bad, not having these beautiful sisters. Xiye looked at Shi Fuyin, his eyes filled with lust. However, he quickly rearranged his expression back to an image of politeness.

Just then, the angry voice of a man came from afar, closing in to them, saying, "Who dares to chase out a member of the Shi Family?"

This was immediately followed by a clashing sound. The mech pilots around Ye Chong and his company fell outwards. A large group of people came storming towards them, and quickly

surrounded Ye Chong and others in the center.

The mechs hovering in the air under Xiye were silent. All around them were numerous mechs, pointing their dark and deadly guns at them.

"Uncle Ming!" Shi Fuyin's eyes brightened up as she cried with joy.

The one who came was Shi Chongming. Back at the hospital, he had left her to find the local members of the Shi Family. However, the mutant disaster struck, and he was surrounded by rats. He escaped with difficulty, and finally found the Shi Family's person of highest authority on the planet. When this person in charge heard that the Second Young Miss had arrived on Zhou Jian, he looked at the rats outside and turned pale. The person in charge immediately brought all his men and followed Shi Chongming to protect the young miss. Shi Chongming's comms device allowed him to locate Shi Fuyin, and that was how they could quickly arrive at her location.

As they entered, they immediately saw the Second Young Miss surrounded by a group of men. They saw red and pulled out their weapons. As Shi Chongming made his grand entrance, he heard Shi Fuyin's question, and his grim expression finally developed into fury!

The Second Young Miss was being chased out from the academy. If this had happened, he would definitely not survive his next visit to the Family. Besides, he had watched the Second Young Miss as she grew up since she was a child, and had grown attached to her. He would not stand seeing her humiliated thus.

"The Shi Family!" Xiye's brain exploded! The Director of Teaching Affairs suffered even more, blacking out almost instantly.

Shi Chongming was like a furious lion, his red eyes slowly scanning all the people in the room as he asked in a low voice,

"Who was it who wanted to chase out a member of the Shi Family? Who was it? Show yourself!" Shi Chongming snarled. No one had dared to humiliate a member of the Shi Family like this ever before, much less the Shi Family's Second Young Miss.

The Shi Family's combatants all looked angry. Once the order was given, they would attack. Ever since they joined the Shi Family, they obtained a sense of superiority that they could not have found elsewhere. Now that this superior status was challenged, how could they not be offended? Besides, this was the Second Young Miss being humiliated! If other people found out that the Shi Family's Second Young Miss had been humiliated right before their eyes, they would never be able to live with pride again.

This humiliation can only be resolved with bloodshed!

# Chapter 327: Analysis Results

Xiye was completely flabbergasted. The Shi Family! It's the Shi Family! None of the mech pilots around him dared to move. They were also shocked by the turn of events. With the exception of the Three Aristocratic Families, the Shi Family had the greatest military strength, and was the strongest of all the aristocratic families. Everyone knew not to meddle with the Shi Family.

This soft and fragile looking young lady was actually the Shi Family's Second Young Miss! Mi De and Fatty gaped at her. Of all the young masters and young misses of the Shi Family, only Shi Xin appeared in public more often; the rest of them were lesser known.

Just then, a large fleet of mechs appeared in the sky. They covered the skies like a huge, dark cloud, numbering no less than a thousand. Everyone looked up at the mechs. In their current situation, a thousand mechs or more was a formidable combat force.

Xiye began to feel hopeful. Was this the reinforcement that his father had sent for him?

This final hope was dashed into pieces.

"Mi Moxin, Consulate General of the Mi Family on Zhou Jian planet, here on orders to protect Young Master De!"

"Tuo Ge of the Bibiqi Family greets the Young Master. Please forgive our delayed arrival!"

Xiye felt his vision darkened as he slumped to the floor.

Xiye's full name was Hanmen Xiye. The Hanmen Family was also an aristocratic family, but his father had told him more than once to stay away from the Shi Family. Who would have thought that he would be unlucky enough to meet the Shi Family's Second Young Miss, who had never shown herself in public? Xiye paled, knowing that he was doomed.



Mi De and Fatty looked at Xiye and smiled gloatingly. There were many unwritten rules in the world of aristocrats; open humiliation was one of the greatest taboos. Be it intentional or not, such an act was unforgivable. They did not have to lift a single finger. The Shi Family will not let Xiye get away with it.

Xi Ye was doomed! His father was but one of the elders in the Hanmen Family. Given the situation, even the Hanmen Family Patriarch's eldest son would be handed over to the Shi Family. If they did not, it was highly unlikely that the other aristocratic families would side with the Hanmen Family in their inevitable war against the Shi Family.

Xiye and his 500 underlings were all subdued. The Shi Family mech pilots eyed their captives with hostility. They bowed to Shi Fuyin in shame, and herded Xiye and his 500 men to the side without showing any emotion. Xiye and his men would suffer physical punishments for their mistake.

Bi Bo watched everything from the side. He noticed that the mysterious young man had shown not even a glimpse of nervousness through it all. Did he not feel afraid at all?

Shi Chongming quickly calmed down. He reported everything to the Lord of the Shi Family, Shi Tiancheng. Shi Tiancheng was furious, and began to plan the Family's reaction to the incident. All of their forces around Zhou Jian planet were diverted towards that planet to protect Shi Fuyin. On the other hand, they took up the matter with the Hanmen Family.

It was right then that the unspoken agreement amongst all the forces from the Three Aristocratic Families to reach Zhou Jian planet together was broken by the Xue Lai Clan, which sped up their flight towards Zhou Jian planet. No one knew why they accelerated their travel, but the fleet from the Ye Family and Xi Feng Tribe followed suit, keeping up from behind.

"This is?" Shi Chongming looked at Ye Chong, and asked

courteously.

Rui Bing said, "He's my husband." She said this easily and calmly. However, the sharp Shi Fuyin saw clearly that Rui Bing was beginning to blush from her neck again.

Ye Chong took a glance at Rui Bing. She seemed to be at ease with the man. He then looked to Shi Chongming and nodded, introducing himself, "I am Chen Mu, pleased to meet you." He was not dumb enough to contradict Rui Bing.

Chen Mu was the name. Mi De, Fatty and Bi Bo searched their memories for a certain strong character called Chen Mu, but came up empty.

Rui Bing stood silently beside Ye Chong, saying nothing, but her eyes betrayed her happiness. Beside them, Fei Si felt an inexplicable sadness in her that she felt like going outside for a breath of fresh air.

"Rui Bing's husband," Shi Chongming thought to himself, surprised. Rui Bing was beautiful, and not weak like the average member of the fairer sex. She was decisive in her words and actions, and was highly skilled in combat. He had never seen such a mysterious woman before in his life.

Unlike her, this ugly man before him did not seem to have any redeeming qualities. He did not match Rui Bing at all. He looked horrible, and his body seemed weak. Aside from his calm eyes, nothing about him seemed particularly outstanding.

However, since he was Rui Bing's husband, Shi Chongming dared not be disrespectful. After all, Rui Bing had saved the lives of the Second Young Miss and his own. This was a debt that he could never repay.

The ultra-micro analyzer was located at the lowest floor of Engradie Academy's alchemy building. This building had over 800 levels, and stretched over a large area, proof of Engradie

Academy's financial prowess.

The Director of Teaching Affairs introduced with a careful tone, "This here is the ultra-micro analyzer. This is the person in charge of the machine, Old Xu. Any usage of the machine must be done under his supervision and guidance." The Director was awakened from his blackout through no gentle means.

Old Xu looked quite energetic. He was a friendly person, and welcomed them all into the lab. His skin was well kept, looking fair and smooth despite his old age. He had stubby fingers that made it hard to imagine him utilizing the complicated machine.

Even Ye Chong was impressed by Old Xu's control of the machine. His stubby fingers moved easily and swiftly across the controls due to his familiarity with the machine that it was hard to keep up with what he was doing.

Only Fei Si was able to understand what he was doing with the machine. Old Xu seemed to notice Fei Si's professional observation of him, so he continued working even more seriously.

After a full half an hour, the results of the analysis were finally out.

Fei Si studied the results, and her expression turned grim. Everyone else including Old Xu looked to her for answers.

"This heterogenous body is probably created with the H virus as base, cultivated using specialized techniques. It's definitely artificial," Fei Si concluded with confidence.

The term "artificial" made everyone squirm. This meant that everything that had happened was the result of some mastermind. This was no natural disaster. There was a human perpetrator behind this.

Old Xu looked at Fei Si, his fair-skinned finger rubbing against the bridge of his nose.

"This virus is easily transmitted between animals, humans can

also be infected, mainly through contact with blood. It uses Variant 890 of the H virus. The virus is highly compatible with other viruses, and can be easily combined with other viruses of choice. My teacher had discovered mutated variants before, but we were not ready to apply this knowledge for applications yet. I never imagined that someone else has begun to use these mutated variants." Fei Si's words brought a heavy atmosphere to the lab.

Old Xu's finger paused for a moment as his eyes flashed with excitement. His reaction was noticed by Rui Bing.

"How do we cure the infected people?" Ye Chong asked the one question he was most interested in.

Fei Si looked to Ye Chong meaningfully and turned away. "I still don't know how to completely cure them yet, but we can use Batong liquid to synthesize a suppressor for the symptoms. It should be quite effective."

Old Xu's finger trembled slightly on his nose.

"Do we have Batong liquid here?" The Director asked Old Xu. Old Xu nodded and said, "Yes, a lot of them."

"Then let's get to it, some of the students are not looking good!" The Director urged hurriedly. Engradie Academy might be better of than Ze Xi Academy, but there were still many casualties. The conditions of the injured students were worsening.

Fei Si's research into the H virus was extraordinary. After drinking the Batong liquid, the infected students all felt their symptoms relieved. The Director immediately offered a position for Fei Si at Engradie Academy, promising wonderful benefits, but was turned down by her.

It was only a temporary measure, but now that they found a way to ease the symptoms, Ye Chong and company must quickly return to Ze Xi Academy.

Rui Bing followed Ye Chong from behind like it was the normal

thing to do. Knowing that she would now part ways with RuiBing, Shi Fuyin smiled gently at Rui Bing and said, "Be careful, Sister Bing. Uncle Ming, assign 300 people to Sister Bing for her protection. Tell them that they must obey Sister Bing's orders at all times." She spoke the last sentence with steely determination. The fragile young lady seemed to gain a tough quality in her.

Shi Chongming nodded and headed outside to carry out his orders.

"Mo Xin, assign 300 people to this man here. They must all obey his words," Mi De gave the order to his subordinates.

Fatty gave the same orders, "Tuo Ge, assign 300 people to this man for his protection. Whoever dares to disobey will be disavowed by the family."

Mi Moxin and Tuo Ge looked at their young masters, full of questions themselves. They exchanged a quick look between before leaving the room to execute their orders.

The Director of Teaching Affairs was shocked. Just who was this young man, that Mi De and Fatty would each send 300 people for him, just when manpower was a precious resource? His wife was not a simple woman as well, for the Shi Family to send 300 people for her protection.

Heavens, with this, the two of them had 900 people who would fight for them!

## Chapter 328: Frightening Deduction

Who are these people? The Director was very perplexed, yet he did not have the courage to ask, since he was rather fortunate for both of the mysterious figures to stay silent after the happening.

Everyone of Ze Xi academy, including students and teachers, was baffled by the scene where Ye Chong, with a white lady by his side, led an entire pilot team of 900 and returned. There were crazy amount of deductions on his actual identity, "He has got to be from the aristocrat!", "No! He must be some leader of a secret organization!" were the entertaining classics back then.

Both Fatty and Mi De were no longer there, while Bi Bo finally turned on his camera after being disconnected from the entire galaxy, which was exploding with agitated worries as the customer service of Green Planet channel seemed to be overwhelmed by the incoming calls begging for more. The leader of Green Planet Media Corp. also almost had a heart attack. It was an intensive exercise as the staff got to catch their breath at last.

Ye Chong was relieved only after seeing Old Jalopy taking down the entire bottle of Batong liquid. Meanwhile, Fei Si was very much occupied being the doctor among the infected students, "We have to do something or their health would only worsen," muttered her as weaved in and out of the crowd. Rui Bing had no idea how alchemy worked so she would stand by Ye Chong's side instead. And apparently, what Ye Chong knew of the alchemy studies was literally different compared to what Fei Si was doing.

After much reunion, both Ye Chong and Rui Bing remained silent, where one of them was just standing there, the other was... just looking at the crowd.

People would be very much confused if they saw this pair of typical Beauty and the Beast elsewhere, but they were in Ze Xi academy, where people would not consider Ye Chong being the beast appearance-wise, for he had demonstrated the strength of a

beast, skill of a legend. The imagery of he holding his lance as he stood in the midst of death had long replaced that plain appearance of his.

He was not the beast, he was the hero. A hero in a relationship with a beauty, that was more than typical. Nothing strange, it was reasonable.

The audience exclaimed upon the close-up at Rui Bing. She was not that absolute beauty, nor she could be the definition of beauty itself, there were beauties out there who looked more amazing than Rui Bing, like Feng Su or maybe Qiu Man. However, the audience exclaimed because her less-competent appearance had been enhanced by her charm - the sense of coldness while retaining a hint of chivalry - which was already bewitching enough.

This very lady was in her white garb, while her gaze wafted around the unappealing man.

It was a man's dream to have such a beauty staring at him dreamily.

It was a woman's dream to be pure as her white garb to be able to stare at man with a chivalrous spirit like hers.

The imagery had conquered the generation, as it became a fantasy, an ambition of the younger folks.

"And I'm here..." Muttered Fei Si, wiping the sweats over her hair. The job was a tough one, as she had to go through every single patient at the ward to see the level of impact of Batong solution on the patients with different dosage.

She gasped and walked to the couple on the show, "Get over here," said Fei Si expressionless, "I have something to talk to you." And she stormed to the school's building.

Ye Chong raised his brow, and quickly followed. Being somehow connected by soul, Rui Bing also lifted her steps the moment the man did.

Bi Bo knew something was happening but he knew he was a journalist, not a paparazzi.

Inside the empty classroom, the three of them stood silently.

Fei Si gave a glance at Rui Bing and turned back to Ye Chong, "I have not finished my words back there," said she indifferently.

Rui Bing and Ye Chong looked at each other. They then awaited what Fei Si was going to say.

The gesture of rapport pinched the heart of Fei Si, "If I was right... the design of this particular heterozygote is actually..." Fei Si halted, she took a breath as if mustering her last bit of strength, "It is actually meant for humans..."

The statement had blown both of them away.

If the zygote was meant for human from the beginning, then ...

That would be horrible... any other lifeforms be the rodents or the insects, they would absorb the incompatible zygote and mutate-So that was why! That was why the raid occurred... "If the code would cause such boost on the creatures, while being meant for humans... then!!"

"Then those who created the codes in the first place, they wanted to create reinforcement, an army of inhumanity!" Whispered Rui Bing, her eyes were wide.

"Are you sure?" Asked Ye Chong grimly, his eyes glaring at Fei Si.

She took a deep breath and were very much affirmed to her answer, "Yes, I am."

"But then..." Ye Chong figured out something, "If the heterozygote genetic code in the virus is meant for humans, why aren't the infected trainees mutating yet?"

"Apparently, the virus seemed to be a failure since it appeared to have a very poor compatibility with the human body. From what I have observed thus far, the virus would cause more likely a



negative effect on the body. If there was no aid given, the virus would eventually lead to death of the host because of heart dysfunction, capillaries rupture as well as oversized muscular system."

"Is there a way?" asked Ye Chong.

"Assuming..." Hesitated Fei Si, "If you could find their own subject, maybe I could try."

"What do you mean by 'their own subject'?"

"Subjects of their experiment on this virus in the first place." And Ye Chong immediately understood the meaning of it.

"Old Xu!" Rui Bing suddenly broke into the conversation, "Something seemed fishy on him. His eyes were odd when you mentioned about the H-virus."

Preposterous. Thought Fei Si as she gave a frown. Old Xu was one with such amazing hand on the control panel, she respected him. Furthermore, judging someone merely by their eyes was just ridiculous.

Ye Chong, however, was on Rui Bing's side, as his expression tensed up, knowing that Rui Bing could never be just seeing things.

His schemata ran, ran wild and bright, as within seconds he had predicted the forces behind all these. It could never be a work done by one or two people. Ugh... goosebumps seized him. He seriously hoped he could just grab Rui Bing, Old Jalopy with Fei Si and leave this cursed planet at once! This is a terrible, dark place! Realized he.

Beep. Ye Chong's communicator rang.

The screen was projecting a warning from the patrolling airforce.

"They are coming."

# Chapter 329: The Annoying Pimp

The mutated lifeforms are coming!

They had raided the entire sky - a larger wave than before.

Were those the beast stampedes from Archipelago? Thought Ye Chong.

The leading force was obviously still the mutated rodents, since they were the typicality of reproduction itself the whole time. The new members to the army were those gigantic organisms, looking hideous with their distorted appearance. Among them, those gliding in the sky were the most harmful and aggressive as unpredictable their movements were.

The war took place again.

And people understood what they had to do. Less talk, more work, survival be at top priority. They were the trained pilots of military units, they were well-informed of the thumb rule on war field.

The 900 standby units zoomed into the sky, as they arranged at 3 complete formations. The professionals were still different than those greenhorns down there. For starters, their mechs were already far superior, since the Aristocrats were very generous on military. Moreover, every formation was led by a highly experienced pilot.

The trainees were frightened by the waves of mutated lifeforms. The battle they had before looked like a warmup now.

The pleasing news was, at least the nameless boy brought 900 professional pilots to join their force. The building of alchemy department also provided a sturdy stronghold for their safety.

All openings of the building had been shut tight.

People gathered inside, hiding at the storage deep inside the building specifically, with only one corridor opened up to another

storage containing their living resources. The food could last them easily half a month, and technically most of the the materials prepared for alchemy classes were edible by nature as well. The security cameras at the exterior allowed them to remain connected to the world outside.

Fei Si was producing something. She was the only person who had clearly comprehended the every step of Ye Chong when producing the Bluefire solution. She was, an experienced and well-supplied alchemist after all. She certainly could reproduce the same solution after one observation at Ye Chong's hands.

Bluefire solution would be their sole defense now. She did not ask for assistance from the trainees however, she was doing it all by herself. She had to, since one could imagine what a disaster it would be if everyone was aware of the methods to produce such horror.

Ye Chong joined her the moment he saw her moving. Rui Bing was still standing at the side, with her eyes attracted by the man in work.

Both of them acted quickly as a massive amount of Bluefire was produced in the end. Ye Chong planned to make a drain and pour these in to build an effective wall, but they did not have the time, unfortunately.

The army had already arrived by the academy itself.

Ye Chong and Fei Si had produced about 30 containers of Bluefire, 3 tonnes each.

The war was intense when they transported the containers to the parking lot.

Every entrance to the building 50 floors and below was shut. The rodents were no longer an issue, they only had to watch out for the flying ones. What all the galaxies shared in common was the fact that there would always be a landing port and connecting tube at

every floor of every tall building. One might be warned about the intrusion of these unknown flying pests via the connecting tube, but man, the people simply did not have the time to do so.

900 mechs were assigned to every corner around those tubes. Well, it was a saving grace indeed for Ze Xi academy was just an average school, with a budget that looked as shabby as its own school building when compared to the fancy 800 floor tall alchemy department building of Engradie Academy. The school building of Ze Xi academy had only 200 floors, so the amount of defense required to cover up the entire building was much lesser than they imagined.

Under the instruction of their own respective leader, they guarded every of that transparent corridor connected to the building. The mutated avifaunas had insane vitality, one would not even see a scratch on their wings if it was not a critical hit. They were fearsome and aggressive as ever, while they came in flocks and retained their mobility and agility as their former entity, which were not something a machinery could compete, a painful issue.

And these were the starters, it would be a true horror if one would look upon the ground.

The ground was rumbling. The ground was shaking. The waves of mutated lifeforms shuddered, the waves of mutated lifeforms went silent.

Scarlemender was hardly 7 meter long before and with the power of the virus, it had grown into size of a mech, while becoming more belligerent than before as it landed its few tonnes of weight upon the cracking ground, leaving craters behind its every step. The iron fortress of the alchemy department might not last under its attack.

The gigantic monstrosity was not limited, they were scattered around the army and would crush any foe with the enormous

impact they made on every move. At least one group of their allies lost the climbing ability with the overwhelming weight gain after mutation or it would be nasty business to deal.

Thump! Crash! Thup! The mutated lifeforms were charging towards the alchemy department building, knocking into the walls again and again. Dents began forming on the surface, but as far as the budget of Engardie Academy guarded, the walls were not cracking yet at the moment.

The wave this time was greater than before.

Ye Chong deployed Blaze-III while Rui Bing took out the Guardian almost immediately after. The monochromic vision was very much foreign to her eyes. Bi Bo also jumped into action with his spider machinery.

Most pilots were disappointed when Ye Chong deployed - of all mechs - a Blaze-III, which was a typical model for the greenhorns to be given a disdainful stare on.

Sigh, newbie was being newbie again, let him be, let him be the hero he tried too hard to be. Thought every pilot from Mi family and Bibiqi. The guy probably was the Mr. Richie Rich they had grown up hearing. Well, that made sense when the two young masters of the families called them to take care of him. It was unbelievable for the families to waste the resources on a pathetic Richie Rich like him. Oh, look, that journalist boy called up a spider mech, must be an expert. Oh, was that a Miniature mech? Those got to be the bodyguards for this little novice there. Meh. Who else could he be? Some legendary warrior from another galaxy?

Guys, look at that eager face of his, he wants to join us.

The pilots were alarmed.

Oh please, someone keep him at the garbage place.

"Sir, it would be very helpful to head back to the storage if you

could. Let the men do the war for you," announced the leading pilot of Mi family air force promptly.

"Yeah, sir, it's safer there. We could do all the work," added the leader of Bibiqi family pilot force.

"Fight your own war. Don't bother me." Mi De and Fatty did once mention these forces would listen to his orders but deep inside he knew, he was not the person to give sensible commands in war, it would be better to let the experienced do their job. Moreover, these men were not the Sangs and because of that, it was very unlikely they would listen fully to his orders.

He made up his mind to let them do their job as they said, till the moment they began working on their formation, and Ye Chong was shaking his head violently as one of the aggressive rodents on the street.

What is this? Are you sure they are trained?! Thought Ye Chong, although feeling uncomfortable to send his disdain directly as if discriminatively. Compared to the Sangs, these pilot forces were looking like a fresh graduate from military pilot school. G-nat\* would have been simple to defeat if one of them, with their intelligence, realized they could have lured the G-nat to be killed by their allies and not having an endless dance from Waltz to Tango with the flying insect in the air for the last 3 minutes while being unable to take it down.

I am not sure how potent the Sangs are in He Yue galaxy. But logically, these 900 men should have been above-the-average pilots. So why? What's all these kindergarten hide-and-seek nonsenses?

Ye Chong was determined when he hopped into the cabin. The leaders of the 900 pilots began cursing silently. "Quick, stop him!" Sent they, a few of their allies to hold up and "kindly" escort that restless pimp back to the building.

Bi Bo's camera had been switched on ever since Ye Chong

returned from the classroom with Fei Si and Rui Bing. The audience got worked up upon seeing their hero getting into action again, as they anticipated the next surprise from him. He was finally alone this time, without anyone to hold him back in the cabin.

The 6 mechs zoomed from the army and hovered near both sides of Blaze-III, with a plan to seize Blaze-III first to force him grounded, so that they could get off and capture that mischievous boy back to the building. Bi Bo did not intend to come forward, instead he adjusted the angle quickly, expecting something epic soon.

Blaze-III was holding a container as it flew, looking like a tortoise in front of those standard war machines. It seemed like it had been destined for the pimp to stay as a pimp.

"It looked like the end... Sigh." The audience was disappointed.

Ye Chong frowned and muttered, "What the heck are they doing?"

And the moment he began, people were stunned for the next 10 seconds.

# Chapter 330: Blazing Like Fire!

Blaze-III joined the battle silently. With its appearance being unsophisticated as the 900 mechs around it, it struck the people as the next movement transformed it into an oddity. Acrobatically its metallic arms were looking elastic out of sudden, they were waving gently, flexibly, making a perfect curve when the container was lobbed beyond the crowd it was surrounded in.

Blaze-III's engine had been activated once the container left its palms. And within 0.6 second, the velocity had been maximized. The manual did mention about the minimum launching time of Blaze-III being 0.9 second yet Ye Chong somehow saved that 0.3 second. Any folk from the spectator's area might assume the insignificance of that 0.3 second, but to any pilot like you and me, that 0.3 second could produce miracle.

As the required time for acceleration decreased, the pressure the body had to withstand would proportionally increase. While 0.9 second was already the quickest a typical Blaze-III could boot - on paper that is, one could imagine how it felt to force-boot within 0.6 second. It would be easily terrifying by just looking at it.

Booting an unmodified mech quicker than the recommended safety duration or making an illusion of elasticity on mechanical arms, either of them was enough to make a few spectators spring from their seats. Now, imagine both of them happening together. Certainly people would be fixed on their seats, while their brains were jammed.

The performance did not end here. Blaze-III, a model to be assumed for the novices that could barely do a thing, had somehow taken steroids somewhere in the dark. And it got into position again.

Super short-ranged quick turns! Speckled Moon Spin! Thomas's Spin!



Ye Chong chained three sets of moves in a distance of less than 300 meters. The formation around Blaze-III had been distorted. The trained pilots were trying their best to hold this pimp up by intuition, yet every quick turn Ye Chong made, they were slightly pushed away. And Ye Chong performed 12 quick turns in a shot, excluding the 6 feints he pulled off to mislead their undertrained foes.

Ye Chong did not spare the next few seconds as the Speckled Moon Spin pretended that he was going to leave. The pilots panicked as they broke through their formation, launching their machineries upon Blaze-III.

To end the show, Ye Chong lifted Blaze-III from the closing crowd with a Thomas's Spin. The container landed right within Blaze-III's proximity and the mechanical arms gave a gentle flip and sent the container right ahead.

The last 10 seconds lapsed in dead silence. No one spoke, the commentators all zipped their mouths. The audience was wordless.

"Holy..."

And they began screaming uncontrollably. People were jumping on their beds in their rooms, the hotel had been exploded with hurrahs. No one understood their own scream, nor their friends'. They just screamed, for this moment impossible to be put into words.

Amazement. Pure amazement.

The audience had been overwhelmed by the performance. The world had been dominated by a mere Blaze-III.

The pilot had demonstrated something beyond the beauty of martial arts, that people would pull their hair, jumping in craze.

Meanwhile, the 6 pilots were still unnerved by the last move, so were a majority of the audience before the screen. They could not

comprehend a thing that happened, but it would not stop the audience to board on the hype train.

A strong visual impact. It was a mind-blowing scene to the laymen at the spectators' seat, while it turned out to be a mind-dominating view to the pilots. The unwritten rule of the records of history was this simple - an instance or a person would become the classic, a known tale for the following centuries, once they were reminisced, or they were retold to the following generations of their impeccable doings.

And this very visual was destined to be a legend since the day it was created. This single tape had topped every other downloads in the visual ranking within a year, and was incorporated into more than 50 types of learning materials for piloting. Certainly the number of times it was quoted in academies was simply astronomical.

The few seconds of visual had told many, many stories. That gentle toss leading the entire scene had shown how the entire situation was under the grasp of this mysterious boy.

People had researched it, professionally. They concluded, while the movement seemed to be all graceful and enchanting, the difficulty was of insanity. Based on the outcome of their experiment, technically the number of inputs required per second would be easily gazillions in order to achieve the particular effect. One could already imagine the APM of this mysterious boy when he laid his hands on the control panel.

All these inputs, accomplished within 0.6 second of acceleration, were convincingly inhumane of the boy to the public. Was he even a human?

The more intriguing was the intelligibility demonstrated by this boy. Super Short-ranged Quick Turn, Speckled Moon Spin, Thomas's Spin... all were not the most indigenous moves utilized by a senior pilot today, yet the boy had applied them creatively,

within a brief 300 meter range... The condensation of movements chained by the intense quick turn had once again verified the speculation that the boy possessed an inhuman physique, while it also had successfully fulfilled the goal of holding the enemies thanks to the peculiar shifts cleverly disguised by Blaze-III.

Speckled Moon Spin was a shocker. A Moon Spin was typically identified by the orbit made by the mech during the travel, which formed a virtually perfect circle like the moon, whereas a speckled one would be a consecutive repetition of these rapid spins. Speckled Moon Spin was known for its minimal changes of spatial pattern during the performance, as it would almost seemingly creeping its way, in an intense velocity which was perfect for runaways. Thomas's Spin was... quite the contrary, the movement was large while being comparatively slow.

The conventional sequence would be an alternation between Thomas's Spin and Speckled Moon Spin, but this Blaze-III was preferring being the deviant, as it actually attempted a runaway using the slow Thomas's Spin while using Speckled Moon Spin as its cover.

Convention? Yes! That's why!

It was a little puzzling to most pilots out there at first, yet their eyes went wide open when they thought it out. Since it was a convention, the foes would assume the mech running away whenever it performed a Speckled Moon Spin, yet in actuality it was taking a cover. That would be a method to disrupt the formation of the foes! The deception would work, the formation would loosen and then the pilot would use Thomas's Spin to drastically remove himself! Thomas's Spin was slow but the range was more than enough to overcome the opened gap!

The boy had completed 3 typical techniques within the range of 300 meters, evidently telling the foes that he was not giving them any second to ponder on counters. That would be the key to succeed in a fight.

Moreover, the timing of he escaping the siege and grabbing the falling container were impeccable. Assuming it was no coincidence as he managed to do that, that would be a rather frightening standard of deducing prediction.

The last move of Blaze-III was an actual technique of martial artists, though performed via mechanical limbs, which seemed so graceful however, proving the extreme APM of the mysterious boy.

It did not sound that it lived to the crowd's craze but it was pretty logical for Ye Chong to be this phenomenal, as he was born in an age of those who wielded great skills despised their visuals being publicized, where all of them refused to be a research material for they never wanted to risk having their weaknesses identified and thus eliminated. So an actual visual of mech performance was a hard-find. Of course the crowd would go crazy over a once-in-a-blue-moon high-quality visual in high-definition.

The pilots who were watching the performance had been stoned, including those in the flying mechs who almost got gashed by the flying mutated lifeforms.

The pilot of Blaze-III was feeling otherwise however, as lethargically he tossed the container, like a hardworking construction worker.

And all containers had finally been launched, Bi Bo immediately ignited the Bluefire reagent.

Dimming Blue, the phenomena of a chemical reaction had once again bloomed, gorgeously!

The flames of Dimming Blue were a warning sign to all the pilots who were again astonished by its overwhelming vigor.

Soon the flames formed a complete circle, protecting the alchemy department.

A golden figure rapidly zapped across the wall. In a winding golden line Rui Bing travelled in the Guardian. It was not her usual

velocity but she was getting used to the Guardian.

Certainly, those mutated lifeforms trapped within the circle would be the best dummy for her to practice.

The afterimages of golden threat stacked up quickly as Rui Bing's movements accelerated. That pair of daggers sliced through the weakness point identified by the system skillfully. Rui Bing came attacking wildly like a feline with honed claws. Unlike Ye Chong, she was truly the descendant of martial arts. And a close-combat model like the Guardian was a perfect match for her, especially with the strength-enhancing mechanism which could overcome the weakness of her naturally low vitality as a woman.

The monstrosity flinched, as desperately the mutated lifeforms looked for ways to escape. Their compatriots rapidly decreased as Rui Bing swung her blades.

The audience was feeling relieved, as the pilots seemed to be regaining the control of the situation.

And that was when Ye Chong's pupils shrunk drastically, upon seeing the screen.

# Chapter 331: Battle Royale

No time to ponder!

By classical conditioning, Ye Chong's hands swept over the control panel once again.

Hundreds of beams came from the stampede of mutated lifeforms below.

E-Energy beam?!

Boom! Boom! Crash!

The beams passed by hovering mechs in the sky. They exploded, burnt and fell into a handful of meteorites.

The plot twist was shocking to everyone.

Apparently Blaze-III was the monstrosity's main target as quite a few pillars of light came towards Ye Chong. He reacted quickly with a rough swing and dodged them gracelessly. Nevertheless, the two arms of Blaze-III had been destroyed by the beams. The core of the main body remained intact, most fortunately, or Ye Chong could not imagine himself joining the falling stars.

The beams continued as Ye Chong frantically inputted new commands on the control panel. Blaze-III was carrying out one standard dodge after another while Ye Chong, having cold sweat over his forehead, was slowly being consumed by it. Blaze-III was facilitated with a standard pressure buffering system yet Ye Chong was getting wobbly by the constant drastic turns he made. The beam attack was so ferocious and dense that no matter what he did Blaze-III still got hit on its right leg. One could see the circuits as well as the gears dripping in black revealed at the wreckage. How would the machinery fight with only a single leg left?

The grand debut of Blaze-III was now a memory, as pathetically it hovered. Ye Chong almost saw himself becoming part of the memory too, if it was not for his quick action. The audience was

still in the aftermath of the plot twist, unable to react.

The sudden raid had demolished most of the mechs in the sky. More allies had fallen in the next few minutes. Ye Chong could foresee a hundred of them had gone into debris. "No! The mutated lifeforms can't be firing!"

"Humans? There were snipers?"

The pilots of the three teams realized the cold fact to their demise.

"This is unforgivable! We are fighting for men and we get hit by them?" The pilots were enraged as they removed themselves from the stampede of lifeforms and headed towards the source of firing. They fired up all their ranged weaponry and drastically looked for that very damned target to launch a barrage.

It was hard. The snipers were lurking within the lifeforms. Their disguise was great as well.

The stranger thing was, despite being within the bunches of mutated lifeforms, the snipers seemed to be unnoticed by them.

The pilots wondered, of what kind of relationship both the snipers shared with the mutated lifeforms, that they could avoid being attacked by them. The snipers had ascended into the newest enemy of humanity.

Little did they know, that there was Bi Bo's camera capturing everything the whole time. The happening had been broadcasted throughout the galaxy and these little assassins had become the public enemy.

Ye Chong was unnerved, as he realized strength would not be his safety charm, since luck would also be part of the account. At least he was not part of the major misfortune.

The beams showered again and Ye Chong zoomed towards one of the landing sites of the near building. Blaze-III did not decelerate even when approaching, not because it did not intend to, it was

because the situation forbade it to. The beams were chasing it and Ye Chong carried on his insane APM to perform clumsy dodges to survive. He could guarantee that he would become ashes the moment he turned down his gear.

The strength of these snipers was stronger than he thought. It had been a while since he last met pilots that could push him to the corner like this. Moreover, the snipers after him were not one or two, but literally seven of them!

Right when he was 3 meters away from the parking site, he opened the cabin of Blaze-III and quickly ejected himself! Ye Chong made a peculiar twist with his body, dodging that very beam millimeters away from his waist. He could almost hear his heart pumping, his body shivering, as the twist was made out of his habitual caution, never would he expect they would fire at him even at brief second like this.

The tip of his toes touched the ground, the muscles of both his legs contracted dramatically. Boom! A crater was made below as he launched himself like a fired arrow, all the way deep into the connecting tube.

Another beam followed 5 centimeters from his back as he made a new twist to dodge it. The beam missed him but landed on a poor mech in the air instead. Boom! The mech swallowed its debris.

His back was wetted by cold sweat. His neck was stiff, warning him to never turn back. A few tips he made with his toes again, zigzagging his way into the darkness of the tube.

Was it safety? He thought.

He was panting heavily. The brief inhumane execution consumed a majority of his stamina. His nerves were wrecked. Feeling lightheaded, he almost fell. He was drained as sweat fell off his fringe. His clothing was soaked by his sweat of fear.

Within the last 3 minutes, he had experienced the dead-or-alive



for countless times.

It's been a while. He thought.

At some point of time he got so strong that he was no longer concerned about the tricks the foes seemed to know. He had always been the leading person in a battleground, unlike today.

Blaze-III was still crappy as I thought! Oh my Fal galaxy... I would have died with this piece facing the real deal.

The 7 men were true killers. While 6 of them seemed to have a shabbier shooting skill than Bi Bo, the strongest one of them all - the seventh man, was giving Ye Chong most fears, as the last few shots that trailed Ye Chong to the building, were by none other than him. Lady Luck was by Ye Chong's side today but not sure if she would be, on the next battle they faced again.

Leaned against the wall, Ye Chong could not stop panting.

The war had gotten more chaotic. The remaining pilots were certainly not outnumbered by these few snipers. But from the aspect of skillfulness, it was battle between a whole bunch of novice and a handful of adepts.

The pilots were angered by the sudden attack at first. But they quickly calmed down and tried to regain control of the situation. After losing around a hundred of mechs, the figure seemed to have stabilized. There were still mortality from their sides, but not at a rate as horrendous as before, while mechs of those pesky snipers seemed to have decreased as well.

The fighting mechs zoomed towards the mechs facing the army of mutated lifeforms below, showing no fear, no retreat on their side.

Nobody could witness the death of their teammate one after another with folded arms.

Dead or alive. To battle or to die. The spirit was kindled among the men. They no longer feared those terrifying beasts stampeding

right before them.

In the dim sky, different kind of beams were exchanged, with occasionally flames of the explosion of a fallen ally. The cruelty of war had just been blatantly presented to the world.

Bi Bo's face was calm, yet his eyes were convincingly wild, as filled with a kind of untamed rage of a wolf in sheepskin. He was not a blind-shooter, neither he was a blockhead, soon he could already distinguish the potential relationship between these pesky snipers and the mutated lifeforms.

The Spider was on full fire!

As trained by his father the great, his shooting skill was impeccable!

His sequence of shooting only consisted of lock-on and fire, all within a matter of split second, while aiming every fatality of the target mechs. He had smashed 4 mechs so far.

Rui Bing in the Guardian was observing the warfield under the guard of Dimming Blue. Her man was certainly a risk-taker, a super risk-taker too, that on a few occasions he just had to gamble his life performing acrobatics to scare the soul out of her. "At least he is safe." She was relieved. All mutated lifeforms inside the circle of Dimming Blue had been cleared. She had started getting familiar with the first toy Ye Chong gave her - the Guardian.

And nobody seemed to have noticed there was also a godlike expert here.

Her eyes aimed those nasty mechs who tried to strike her man just now, as her body lowered, her feet sank to the ground. She made a leap, hurled herself over the boundary of blue flames, into the wave of mutated lifeforms.

The golden figure weaved in and out of the monstrosity. The Guardian was the perfection for quick, small movements, while speed was the bread and butter of Rui Bing. She zapped her way

under the enhancement of the Guardian, none of the mutated lifeforms could even catch her sight.

Soon she approached one of those mechs. Yes. That mech was the one who tried shooting Ye Chong.

Within the scope of darkness, countless fine white lines formed a three dimensional model of the target, rotating and enlarging quickly. Rui Bing was then flushed by the data stream of infinity, with the surrounding fading out and only the three crossing lines of target remained!

## Chapter 332: Coordination

The dagger in her hand cut exactly where the three white lines were. While the dagger was not Rui Bing's preferred weapon, her three swipes were quick and true. Rui Bing continued advancing forward without delay, not even looking back at the results of her attack as she vanished into the endless hoard of mutants. Even the mech pilot did not realize that his mech had received three blows. Guardian had excellent anti-detection properties.

Boom! The mech exploded without warning, its fragments spraying outwards, killing the mutants around it. Where the mech had been was not a black spot of charred earth. The explosion was so strong that it left an eight-meter circle of clearing.

The ambushing mechs had scattered around the area for better cover. On top of that, the explosion went unnoticed because of the chaotic situation.

Guardian was a miniature mech, less than two meters tall. Rui Bing moved between the towering mutants that could easily reach up to five meters.

Rui Bing used the same method to finish off another two mechs. By then, the unusual casualties finally drew the attention of the other party. However, they did not spot Rui Bing yet, even though they were sure that someone was hiding out there and attacking them.

When the fourth mech exploded, the ambushers finally felt a little frightened. It was a truly horrible experience to face against a powerful and invisible enemy. Up until now, they still did not know who the enemy was!

Amidst the chaos that unfolded on the streets, the use of optical systems was disastrous. The countless number of mutants moving around on the screen and the narrow vision afforded was more than enough to confuse the viewer. Any mech pilot would surely

be overcome by dizziness very quickly.

In the flight runway, Ye Chong deployed Han Jia. After some rest, his stamina returned. He slipped into the pilot cabin easily and put his hands gently on the controls. Ye Chong exhaled softly and put his hands to work.

Han Jia's first battle began.

In the flight runway, Han Jia continued to pick up speed. Ye Chong's face was as cold as marble. He breathed steadily, now in his top form. As the exit grew larger and larger in view, he shivered a little in excitement.

The flight runway was not wide, so Han Jia kept its colorful wings folded. The exit grew closer, and when Han Jia finally emerged outside, it spreaded out its large and beautiful pair of colorful wings.

Han Jia flew across the sky like a butterfly, marking its first voyage into battle.

Bi Bo was too focused recording that he did not notice the mech that silently hovered in the air like a butterfly. Bi Bo's recorder was based on optics, so Han Jia appeared clearly on it.

Outside Zhou Jian, one could hear the ladies shouting excitedly amidst the crowd as they watched the holographic screen, dazzled by what they were seeing. Women were always vulnerable to pretty things, much less something as beautiful as Han Jia. They gasped in awe at the mech, wondering what kind of mech it was.

Han Jia looked down from above at the dense spread of mutants on the ground. Laser beams continued to shoot from below towards the mechs in the sky.

Ye Chong quickly locked on one of the mechs. This was a red and black mech. The pilot was an excellent shooter and a powerful fighter. The mech had brought down no less than 15 mechs. Unlike other laser beams that were slightly tinged with yellow, its lasers

were a bright red, and could deeply penetrate armor. It must be this mech that had nearly hit him. "He must be the leader," thought Ye Chong to himself.

Han Jia's colorful wings reflected a kaleidoscope of colors from the sun's rays, sparkling like the rippling surface of a lake.

Han Jia dived with its wings folded. It shot down so fast that everyone was surprised. The mech experts all gasped in awe and stood up in excitement.

Lightning! It shot down like lightning! The mech left behind a colorful afterimage that looked like a straight brush of rainbow.

"That was fast," the experts all thought to themselves in shock.

The red and black mech enlarged quickly on Han Jia's holographic screen. Its every detail was captured clearly. Han Jia's mechanical palms conjured up its two daggers, both in a brown-gray that looked like wood. It looked like a bad match against Han Jia's beauty.

The red and black mech did not notice the impending danger as it searched for its next target.

Gray Cross attack!

The brown-gray daggers drew an "X" in the air. Han Jia swished past the red and black mech with only a meter's distance between them.

Han Jia moved so quickly that the red and black mech shook a little from the air pressure that dropped while Han Jia passed by.

The mech pilot inside was vigilant, and knew instantly that something had flew past his mech. However, his holographic screen showed nothing at all.

How was that possible? He was shocked. This was impossible! A terrifying thought occurred to him then. Could it be ...

He quickly recalled the mechs that exploded for no reason

earlier. That must be it! The mystery was solved. He was anxious to warn his subordinates about it, but he never had the chance. The violent explosion swallowed him up. He lost consciousness as his vision darkened.

By now, Han Jia was already a few hundred meters away from the mech. Han Jia's two daggers were mixed in with Do Kun stone, which made them fatally sharp.

"Where are you?" Ye Chong asked through the public comms channel. He also activated his optical system. Han Jia's scanning system and photon processor were its most deplorable parts. It would be impossible to find Rui Bing through them. Hence, Ye Chong took to asking through the public comms channel, unafraid of being overheard.

As expected, Rui Bing recognized Ye Chong's voice. "I'm here."

Ye Chong quickly scanned through Han Jia's optical system and found Rui Bing. The gold humanoid was leaping from one mutant's back to another at high speed.

Guardian had a malleable shell, and was tight fitting. Rui Bing's body curves were all finely traced out on the humanoid mech. If Shang were here, he would surely be stunned by her perfect measurements. Due to her long and persistent combat training, Rui Bing's body was all muscles and no fat.

Han Jia flew low towards Rui Bing.

Ye Chong suddenly spoke through the public comms, "I'm behind you, jump!"

Rui Bing leaped off the back of a mutant rat without delay, jumping high into the air. Han Jia swept past her and gently held on to Rui Bing, placing her on Han Jia's shoulder.

Ye Chong said, "We need to catch someone back, alive."

"Alright." Sitting on Han Jia's shoulder, Rui Bing felt a sweet blessing.

The golden woman with perfect measurements sat on the shoulder of a dazzling butterfly with colorful wings, looking through its spiral black-and-white eyes. It was destined to become an unforgettable sight.

No one knew the name of Han Jia. In fact, from then on, people always referred to the mech as the Rainbow Butterfly. To them, it was a name that symbolized the flawlessly beautiful mech that appeared and vanished so quickly from the world.

"Get ready," Ye Chong warned softly. Rui Bing focused herself. She switched into a half-crouched stance, readying herself. Rui Bing stood steadily half-crouched on a small spot on Han Jia's shoulder while Han Jia flew quickly through the air, a testimony to her incredible sense of balance.

"Now!"

Han Jia's colorful wings disappeared, while its 12 flexible tentacles struck like lightning towards the mech that was standing in front, among the mutants. The sharp hooks at the tip of the tentacles were barely visible.

Pak! The 12 tentacles nailed the mech firmly to the ground.

A grey shadow swished past. Han Jia's dagger was sharp, instantly severing the four limbs off the mech, leaving only its body. Rui Bing launched herself from her half-crouched position, the dagger in her hand carving a square out of the armor of the mech.

Guardian's dagger was called Number Two's Dagger. It was also sharp, almost as sharp as Han Jia's daggers that were mixed in with Do Kun Stone. Ye Chong never figured out much about Guardian's structure and material, and was equally ignorant of the materials and method used to craft that dagger.

Gu Shaoze was a true genius! Ye Chong sighed to himself as he had done so for many times before.



She lightly peeled the armor, and it flew off into the distance.

This turn of events was too sudden that the mech pilot inside was still confused when he found himself exposed. A gold humanoid was staring at him with odd, black-and-white eyes. It was like a dream.

Was he dreaming? He wondered at the bizarre sight that greeted him.

Rui Bing did not hesitate. She lightly chopped on the side of his neck, and mech pilot slumped down instantly.

Rui Bing hauled him up without a word and leapt onto Han Jia's shoulder. Ye Chong's hands moved, and Han Jia quickly flew towards the alchemy building, into a flight runway.

When Ye Chong and Rui Bing hauled the man into the storage room, everyone stared dumbly at them. They had been watching the holographic images on the screen, which did not show their mechs.

Ye Chong flung the captured mech pilot towards Fei Si, and said in his calm voice, "He's probably an experimental subject infected with the virus. Please study him. He'll wake up in 10 days." What Ye Chong really meant was, "Please study him as you please."

Just then, the holographic screen on the wall showed lesser and lesser laser attacks towards the sky.

Ye Chong and Rui Bing exchanged a glance.

"They're escaping."

"Yes."

"Let's go."

"Alright."

Ye Chong deployed Han Jia and slipped into the pilot cabin. Rui Bing deployed Guardian, hopped onto Han Jia's shoulder and sat down. Han Jia flew off with its colorful wings as the people in the

room gasped in awe.

Fei Si watched Han Jia, with Rui Bing on its shoulder. A silent tear rolled down her cheeks.

# Chapter 333: The Enemy Appears

Rui Bing sat on Han Jia's shoulder as Han Jia flew close to the ground. While it was highly effective in avoiding detection, Ye Chong still flew around buildings for cover. Just in front of them, dozens of mechs were desperately flying away to escape. They never imagined that someone would be tailing them.

After flying for nearly half an hour, these mechs finally slowed down.

This was once a prosperous commercial area with many tall buildings. Now, it was filled with dead silence, littered with dismembered corpses. The once elegant buildings were now completely destroyed, leaving behind unrecoverable wreckage. The mechs quickly divided into numerous smaller squads and entered the jungle of skyscrapers.

Ye Chong could only lock on to one of the squads, formed by only two mechs. They took many turns along the way before finally entering a warehouse.

Could this be their headquarters? Ye Chong hesitated. Entering the warehouse required some form of identification. Forcing their way in was possible, but not without alarming the others inside.

Han Jia circled around to another side of the warehouse. It looked around, and found no one was watching.

The mech took out its dagger and drew a square on the wall. Han Jia's other hand carefully supported this square. Inside Han Jia's pilot cabin, Ye Chong was all focused, his hands moving as fast as he could. Han Jia's delicate movements were difficult to maneuver, as evident from Ye Chong's intense focus.

Han Jia carefully slid the square out of the wall. Ye Chong was surprised to find that, instead of a single layer of strong compound material, the wall was made up of three layers - a center layer of ultra-strong alloy board sandwiched between two layers of strong

compound material.

The place was suspicious alright. If not for Han Jia's sharp daggers, it would be near impossible to cut through the wall with normal laser swords.

Han Jia bent over and crawled into the warehouse.

The inside was full of stacks of boxed goods. Ye Chong quickly found the two mechs he was following. They had their backs turned to him, and were heading down an underground tunnel. Ye Chong inhaled in relief. If they had been facing him, he would have been discovered there and then.

The underground tunnel was simple, without requiring any identification.

Rui Bing asked softly, "Entrance to an underground sewer?" She sounded surprised. Ye Chong and Rui Bing had set a specific channel for communication, allowing them to reach each other easily.

"So it's an underground sewer entrance," Ye Chong realized then. He would never have known about it. After all, Rui Bing had been living in this society for much longer, and was more familiar with these common things.

The entrance to the underground sewer was shut tight.

10 seconds later, when Ye Chong believed that the two mechs were far enough from them, he finally approached the entrance. The lid was opened, and Ye Chong carried Rui Bing down into the sewers.

The sewer was wider than they expected. It was about a hundred meters from top to bottom. A mech could easily fly inside. Both sides of the wall were fitted with air sterilizers every five meters, so the air was not too polluted.

The city's sewerage system was very advanced. The drainage water flowing inside was turbid, but otherwise clear of other waste

materials. A ledge separated the drainage water at the center into two streams. The ledge was interrupted by a huge support pillar every ten meters, and this pattern stretched on without end.

Ye Chong maneuvered Han Jia carefully. The two mechs in front of him were no longer in sight. However, they had only directions to choose from, so the choice was not too complicated.

"Which direction?" Ye Chong asked. Since Rui Bing was now his comrade, it was reasonable for him to ask for her opinion.

Rui Bing closed her eyes as she sat on Han Jia's shoulder. She opened up her arms to feel the vibrations in the air. After five seconds, Rui Bing opened her eyes and pointed forward, "They're somewhere in front."

Han Jia accelerated without hesitation. Rui Bing sat steadily on Han Jia's shoulder, unaffected by the sudden motion.

Han Jia's engine was silent but powerful. It flew like a ghost, slowly closing in on the two mechs in front.

Gradually, Ye Chong began to sense that something was amiss.

"Strange, there's none of those mutants here," Rui Bing wondered. Her expertise in spiritual training allowed her to be more sensitive than Ye Chong.

Ye Chong realized what was wrong then. The sewer was dark, but clean. When the entire planet was overcome by mutants, the sewer seemed untouched. It was strange indeed.

As they followed the two mechs from afar, the size of the sewage tunnels astounded Ye Chong. They had been flying for quite a while, and still had not reached the end. There were branches of tunnels along the way. It was practically a huge underground maze.

It was dark and quiet in here. The air was moist, and there were patches of moss here and there. Some of the stone pillars were already yellowing from age. The occasional sound of water

droplets falling from above seemed to create ripples in their hearts.

Ye Chong adjusted his holographic scanning system quickly. The two mechs had reached a multi-branched junction ahead, where many stone pillars blocked his view.

A red beam flashed in the darkness ahead.

Ye Chong's eyes widened. He saw it clearly. The leading mech's pilot cabin was shot through by the red beam. Ye Chong was sure that the mech pilot inside would not survive the attack.

Han Jia came to an emergency stop and hid behind a stone pillar!

Someone was ambushing here!

The second mech pilot obviously panicked, freezing as he did. This temporary panic was equivalent to suicide. As expected, another red beam flashed in the darkness and hit right on the mech.

"Amazing shooting skills!" Ye Chong thought to himself in surprise. He could see that the red beams did not come from the same place. In such a short time, the ambusher had switched positions. More terrifying was the fact that the red beam could shoot through the mech's pilot cabin. After all, for a mech of any model, the pilot cabin was the most heavily protected part, and would have the thickest armor reinforcements. The red beam could so easily shoot through the thick armor around the pilot cabin made Ye Chong wonder if Han Jia could block the attack.

Just who was this ambusher?

Out of the darkness, two mechs appeared.

One was in black and white, in ancient heavyweight armor, with shoulder guards that curled up at the ends. The mech was covered in a dizzying pattern of black and white, and its bionic eyes seemed half closed. It had a strange looking weapon on its back. It looked like a lance, but with two crescent shaped blades around its tip. It must be a kind of ancient weapon, but Ye Chong did not recognize

it.

This was surely a mech that Ye Chong had never seen before, but for some reason, it did look familiar.

The other mech was a gray-brown mech, with a pair of creepy, blood red bionic eyes. This mech was much more slender compared to the other sturdier looking mech. Its upper half body was shaped like an inverted triangle. Ye Chong could find at least 12 concealed shooting chambers on it. The mech held a dark red shooting weapon. One could tell from the long gun chamber that it was a quality weapon.

Han Jia and Guardian's anti-detection properties were something that Ye Chong was always confident of. No scanning system had been able to detect both mechs yet.

Until today.

The two mechs abruptly turned over, and a red beam shot towards Han Jia's location. Fortunately, it was blocked by the stone pillar it was hiding behind, or Ye Chong would have suffered greatly from the hit. Ye Chong reacted quickly, stepping back swiftly while shielding both Han Jia and Rui Bing behind its large wings.

Pow! A soft sound was heard. A red beam shot through the stone pillar and hit Han Jia's wings, leaving a small burn mark. Ye Chong heaved a sigh of relief. Han Jia's wings defended well against energy type weapons, as expected.

They were now right at a multi-branched junction in the sewer. The territory was irregular and complicated, and the stone pillars covered them well.

The two mechs separated and approached them from both sides.

"One each?" Ye Chong asked.

"Yes," Rui Bing answered succinctly, launching herself forward before she finished her single reply.

Ye Chong faced the black and white mech. The enemy seemed to know he was facing a dangerous opponent. The weapon on its back was now held in its hands. Han Jia also took out its daggers, holding them in its hands. The wings were folded back in. In this complicated territory, the wings would be a hindrance to motion.

Ye Chong found it surprising that they could detect them. However, from the looks of it, battle was inevitable. If they run away now, they would most likely be shot. After all, the enemy seemed to be an extraordinary sniper mech pilot.

If that was the case, then they will fight.

Ye Chong met his opponent bravely. The opponent was obviously a close range mech. In this kind of territory, Ye Chong would not be worried even if his opponent was a long range mech, much less a close range one!

Close range combat was Ye Chong's expertise and favorite way of battle.

"An expert it is," Ye Chong thought to himself, studying his opponent's calm and steady flight. The pilot of this black and white mech must be a very experienced veteran. Han Jia's speed was also kept below its maximum.

Both mechs were 500 meters apart. They charged towards each other at the same time.



## Chapter 334: Underground Base

The two mechs represented very different combat styles. The black and white mech fought openly, its long weapon swinging about powerfully. The mech fought carefully and continuously, leaving no openings. From a combat expert's perspective, Ye Chong thought highly of him. He was like a rock among the waves, resisting all forces against it.

Han Jia fought with a completely different style. With its wings folded back in, the slender Han Jia was just like an assassin weaving in and out of the darkness. It took advantage of the territory and its speed to circle around the black and white mech like a ghost. Whenever the opponent had a small opening, Han Jia would swipe in with its brown-gray dagger. The black and white mech would then be temporarily flustered. Besides, Han Jia's 12 flexible tentacles attacked without warning, a terrifying weapon to deal with.

The black and white mech's defense was solid. Ye Chong was surprised to find that the opponent did not use any defensive weaponry at all, such as shields or the like. It managed to block all of his attacks with just its strange looking lance. "Excellent skills!" Ye Chong thought to himself in increasing astonishment as he fought. Moreover, whenever he slowed down just a bit, the strange looking lance would quickly be on his tail. Ye Chong dared not slow down, and could only desperately kept maneuvering Han Jia to circle around the mech.

Ye Chong did not know that his opponent was even more surprised. He was already giving his best, but could only barely hold against Ye Chong. The enemy fought strangely, its two daggers reflecting no light in the darkness. He grew more terrified when he noticed that the daggers had always attacked his weakest spots. Once the daggers appeared, the attack would come in waves, leaving him no room to breathe. The tentacles were even harder to

deal with, vanishing as soon as they appeared.

No one who knew him well would believe that he was suppressed to this extent.

Both of them were in a stalemate. It was a battle of patience. Whoever presented an opening first would receive a devastating blow. None of them expected the battle to drag on like this. However, given their situation, they could not just escape.

Similar to them, Rui Bing and the other mech were also ending up in a stalemate.

The gray-brown mech's red sniper rifle shot with astounding accuracy, and the mech pilot was also a competent fighter. He recognized that his opponent was in a miniature mech. Miniature mechs were never a match for normal mechs. However, he was confounded by the fact that this rule did not apply in his battle now. His opponent was shockingly powerful, changing directions in mind bending ways. That was not all. He found himself unable to lock on his opponent due to her unbelievably deft footwork.

Cold sweat began to roll down his spine.

If it was any other combat expert, that person in Guardian would have died a few times over. However, this was Rui Bing. In ancient times, combat experts were most afraid of weapons like arrows and bows. These long range weapons allowed a slightly trained young child to kill a combat expert with decades of harsh training.

Every attack has its counter. Combat experts thought hard on ways to overcome these deadly long range weapons, designing techniques specifically used to avoid them. However, these techniques gradually lost their use in the advent of energy weapons, and were slowly lost in history. Even if someone found out about them, they would not learn those techniques due to their uselessness.

However, this was Rui Bing.

The Rui Family grew to become an independent school of combat, and kept complete records of its techniques. As a focused learner since young and a strong conservative, Rui Bing was familiar with almost every technique that could be found in her family records.

Additionally, she was a Jie expert. She could perform a technique that was useless to someone else and achieve different and better results. Moreover, with her acute spiritual senses, she could judge situations very accurately, much like the mentalists from the Sanctuary.

That was how she managed to avoid being hit for so long. However, it was not a walk in the park for her. Rui Bing felt her stamina decreasing rapidly. Her opponent's shooting accuracy was also putting her under great pressure. She could feel the threat of death every second. The red beam had barely grazed past her three times already.

Both sides did not expect to meet strong opponents here, but they were now all in this stalemate. Each of them groaned on the inside at their predicament, but had to keep up with their own battles.

It was the other side that finally relented. From the public comms channel came a low voice of a man, "My friend, this must be a misunderstanding. Why don't we stop fighting?"

"Alright!" Ye Chong replied. Both sides would suffer if they continued fighting. Given that they had fought with each other for so long, they had a good grasp of their opponent's strength. Giving up the fight was the obvious choice for both sides.

The black and white mech immediately eased down his defenses. Ye Chong noticed, and quickly stepped back. Han Jia's daggers were hidden by its sides like a poisonous snake waiting to strike. If the opponent came back for him, the dagger would deliver a fatal blow.

The black and white mech vanished into the darkness.

Han Jia disappeared as well, hiding behind a stone pillar. It barely stood still when Rui Bing, in Guardian, came back to Han Jia's shoulder.

After a full half minute, Ye Chong said, "They're gone."

Rui Bing was breathing quickly. She had been stepping left and right avoiding her opponent's attacks, and found herself fatigued. Besides, unlike Ye Chong, this was her first time facing such a cold battle. The thought of death was also tiring her quickly. She would have fainted by now if not for her strong determination.

The two of them were sharing a direct comms channel, and Rui Bing's short breathing was heard clearly.

After a long moment of silence, Ye Chong suddenly asked out of nowhere, "Are you alright?"

Rui Bing froze for a second before replying calmly, "I'm fine." Guardian's soft mask traced every detail on Rui Bing's face, and it was now etched with a barely visible smile in the darkness.

"I see, let's go then."

The two mechs that led them so far were dead now, right at a junction with many branches to choose from. There was nothing left for them to do but choose one at random and enter it. Han Jia carried Rui Bing silently as they advanced further into the sewer.

Soon, Ye Chong found that they had gotten lucky, because the number of holographic cameras along the way had suddenly increased. It seemed that they were heading in the right direction.

Ye Chong was not unsure if the holographic scanning could detect Han Jia and Guardian now. He did not know how those two mechs managed to see them earlier. Of course, it was most likely that they were equipped with a very powerful holographic scanning system.

However, now that they had come so far, it would be foolish to turn back.

They followed the sewer tunnel, which was beginning to form a slope upwards. The water level dropped until finally they could see the ground beneath. There were clear signs that someone had been keeping the place clean.

They reached an alloy door, which stood wide open before them. After some thought, Ye Chong and Rui Bing decided to enter. As they flew past the alloy door, Ye Chong found the thickness of the door surprising. It was 10 meters thick, enough to block even the lower grade cannons.

Beyond the door, the space opened up into a round hall. No one was there. The floor was a mess, scattered with chips of all colors.

Ye Chong moved carefully inside, and his expression turned grim. This was a laboratory. There were many virus cultivation equipment lying around, but they were all destroyed now. The containers he saw were all empty as well.

After passing by a few rooms similar to the first, Ye Chong and Rui Bing still did not meet anyone. The place was obviously a central laboratory. Such a large central laboratory built underground must have been expensive.

The innermost room was an archive room. Unlike the other rooms, it was left untouched, with no signs of things being moved around.

Ye Chong came out of Han Jia, and Rui Bing withdrew Guardian. They studied the archive room with interest. The room was simple, with an empty cupboard at human's height standing in a corner. The rest of the room was filled with all kinds of chips, arranged based on their serial numbers.

At the center was a holographic screen, showing all the feeds from the holographic cameras. Ye Chong noticed that one of the rows of holographic feeds was quickly disappearing one by one.

Suddenly, two figures appeared on the holographic screen. One

was Engradie Academy's Old Xu, while the other was a middle-aged man. They were heading towards the archive room where Ye Chong and Rui Bing were.

Ye Chong looked around him and stopped at the cupboard. It was tall enough, and large enough to fit them both snugly.

"Come in," Ye Chong went in first, and yelled to Rui Bing.

Rui Bing saw the meagre space left in the cupboard, a faint blush crawling up her neck. She hesitated for two seconds before squeezing in.

Ye Chong quickly closed the cupboard.

It was cramped inside as they were both squeezed tightly together. Rui Bing dared not move. Any movement from either of them made her uneasy, and her heart would beat even faster.

They were too close together. Rui Bing could even feel Ye Chong's warm breath on her neck.

A strange tension was growing between them.

"You're shivering," Ye Chong said.

"I'm not," Rui Bing said with forced determination.

"You're definitely shivering, at 92 to 136 tremors per minute," Ye Chong said this with unusual certainty. Given a watch, he would be able to narrow down his estimation even further to a more accurate figure.

"I said I'm not," Rui Bing insisted with a tiny voice, biting her lips as her cheeks reddened considerably. The tight space did not even allow her to lower her head as she continued to helplessly shiver.

Ye Chong could not understand why Rui Bing would blatantly lie, but he did not ask further.

They both quieted down. Being so close together, they could hear each other's beating heart. Ye Chong felt his mouth went inexplicably dry. His breath turned hotter, like fire, and his

breathing grew heavy.

As if sensing the changes in Ye Chong, Rui Bing's breathing shortened as well.

## Chapter 335: Fate

They kept silent. Only their heavy breathing could be heard clearly in the cupboard.

Rui Bing felt like her whole body was burning up. If she looked in the mirror now, she would see her skin all red and burning hot.

Ye Chong smelled a distant but familiar and sweet scent once again.

It was like setting his belly on fire. Ye Chong could not help but lower his head and did the exact same thing he did that day - he homed in on Rui Bing's exposed neck and gave a gentle lick!

"It's the same vague but familiar sensation ..." Ye Chong thought to himself, his memories of that past incident now rushing back to him.

Rui Bing's whole body tensed up like she was struck by lightning. Her hands held tightly onto Ye Chong's hands.

Half a minute later ...

"Your hands are very soft," Ye Chong commented objectively.

Rui Bing quickly let go of his hands, her heart racing like mad.

Just then, Ye Chong heard two people coming towards them. He immediately shifted his attention and focused on eavesdropping.

Old Xu and the middle-aged man entered the archive room.

Old Xu sighed, "So it really happened. I knew that the Gray Valley people will not just stand by and watch. They're too reckless."

The middle-aged man's expression turned grim as he said, "Yeah, these people, they're too ambitious. Now that something went wrong, they all vanished just like that."

"You better leave too," Old Xu said this with a helpless sigh and waved his hand, "Everything they took is fake. The core information is still here. You can find them, the serial numbers are



ZX7868076, SD7865468 and RMo87655. These three chips hold the core information. I always knew that there's a mole in the organization."

The middle-aged man shook his head and said, "I'm not running away too. Much of this is our fault, dying here would be fitting."

"You're still young," Old Xu sighed again, "You still have a long future ahead of you."

"What future?" The middle-aged man laughed ghastly, "I still don't know who spread the virus. What an evil b\*stard! I'll never be able to live in peace, so why not just end this now. Sigh, if not because of this, those people inside would not have noticed us so soon."

Old Xu took a glance at the holographic screen and said plainly, "They're here."

"Well, I have no complaints dying in their hands," the middle-aged man said calmly, "They must have killed all our experiment subjects."

His expression turned into one of pride. "Humph, if I have another half a year, these experiment subjects will definitely be on their level. It's a pity ... Sigh, perhaps this is fate," the middle-aged man said this with waning interest, "Back then, they chased me out of Gray Valley. I thought that one day, perhaps I could ... Sigh, in the end, I'll still die in their hands."

"The ones coming must be Sentry and Graycrawler. Sigh, just two of them is enough to bring us to our current situation. The ones in the know must have been wary of us, to send them two here. Humph, we would not have been forced into our current situation so easily, if not for that mole." Old Xu took another glance at the holographic screen, still furious with the mole.

When Old Xu mentioned the names of the two mechs, the middle-aged man jerked slightly.

Rui Bing did not hear them at all, her attention still focused on Ye Chong. Seeing Ye Chong focusing on something else made her calmer, for some reason. She could feel Ye Chong's heartbeat, and wished that this moment would last forever.

Ye Chong finally understood something from their conversation. These two people must be deeply connected with Gray Valley. Ye Chong suddenly recalled the two Gray Valley people he met on the starship before, and thought again of the two mechs he encountered earlier. Just how were these people connected to each other?

Two mechs entered the archive room. They were the two mechs that Ye Chong and Rui Bing fought against earlier.

Old Xu and the middle-age man faced the two mechs with calm faces.

The middle-aged man looked to the black and white mech and mocked, "So? Is the great Bei Guang and his Sentry, Gray Valley's top fighter, unwilling to meet an old friend?"

A short silence followed.

Suddenly, the black and white mech's pilot cabin opened up, and a man slipped out of it. The other mech pointed its weapon at the two men, warning them against any tricks.

If Ye Chong were seeing this, he would be surprised to find that the mech pilot of the black and white mech was actually the middle-aged man of the two from Gray Valley that he saw on the starship.

"Moyan, I never thought we'd meet under such circumstances," Bei Guang said after much hesitation. Ye Chong recognized his voice from the mech pilot of the black and white mech who spoke to him earlier.

Ning Moyan's expression was unreadable. He was silent for a full half a minute before mocking himself, "Yes, fate is truly

unpredictable. The once penniless dull man is now the top fighter of Gray Valley. Me, on the other hand, once a genius, was kicked out of Gray Valley. Haha, now, I'm even brought down to this miserable situation. Fate is cruel."

"Moyan, I know that you're not responsible for what happened back then," Bei Guang said this sincerely to Ning Moyan, "I only have one question for you."

"And that is?" Ning Moyan lifted his eyebrow sarcastically.

"Was it you who spreaded the virus?" Bei Guang asked in a low voice.

A great anger rose within Ning Moyan. He wanted to return a few sarcastic words, but he saw Bei Guang's expression. Old memories came back to him. The image of two little boys playing together touched the softer part of his heart, and that great anger vanished without a trace.

He could not help but spoke the truth, "Guang, it was not me! I swear it."

Bei Guang looked meaningfully at Ning Moyna, and Ning Moyan did not avert his gaze. After a while, Bei Guang nodded and said, "Moyan, don't worry, I will find the person responsible for spreading the virus."

Ning Moyan knew that his once friend always kept his word. He nodded, and did not say more.

Bei Guang turned to the other man and said with a hint of respect, "Old Xu, I don't understand at all why you would be involved in this!"

"You'll find out later," Old Xu said calmly, "I'll just warn you a bit, those people in the know, hehe ..." Abruptly, Old Xu stopped there, and it was a long moment before he sighed again, "I won't tell. For you, the lesser you know the better."

"Guang, don't investigate further into this matter. It's more

complicated than it seems," Ning Moyan advised, but he could tell from the light in Bei Guang's eyes that his words did nothing to convince him. He knew this man inside out, being his very close friend. Once his eyes lit up like that, there was no stopping him.

Old Xu sighed softly and looked at Bei Guang. He said calmly, "Do what you have to. I'm not going back to Gray Valley to meet those people. It's simpler to just die here."

Ning Moyan showed the same calmness as he spoke, "Yeah, if you're really trying to help me, then do it. There's only suffering back there, and you know it. Hehe, and they might just not get what they wished for."

Bei Guang knew that if he brought them back, they would probably be greeted with endless torture. His expression dimmed as his eyes betrayed his pain and sadness. He looked to Ning Moyan meaningfully, and Ning Moyan looked back at him with acceptance.

It was as though they were back to their youthful days of fun.

Bei Guang gritted his teeth and turned around. He waved his hand in a sharp jerk.

Two red beams shot through the dead center of Ning Moyan's and Old Xu's foreheads.

As he turned back around, Bei Guang was already in tears. He walked to Ning Moyan's corpse quietly and kneeled down. Bang bang bang! He kowtowed three times, leaving his forehead bloody.

His face was still covered in tears as Guang Bei stared silently at Ning Moyan's body on the ground. Ning Moyan's face looked calm, without any trace of pain.

After a full three minutes, Guang Bei finally stood up and slipped into his mech.

"Squad Captain, this place ..." Through the comms, his comrade asked carefully. Anyone could see that Guang Bei was now greatly

devastated.

He knew of the friendship between Bei Guang and Ning Moyan. They had grown up together. Guang Bei was honest and a bit rigid, while Ning Moyan was hailed as a genius. They shared a close friendship, akin to brothers. Guang Bei's rigidity had made him a bullying target, but Ning Moyan had always defended him.

Guang Bei's current achievement was closely related to Ning Moyan. Guang Bei had always trusted Ning Moyan since they were young. His training schedule was completely designed by Ning Moyan. When he first met the squad captain and before they began receiving official training, he remembered seeing the squad captain still training according to Ning Moyan's suggestions.

Later on, for some unknown reason, Ning Moyan was exiled from Gray Valley. Guang Bei might be rigid, but he was also extremely hardworking and reliable, so he continued to rise through the ranks. When he was finally given Sentry, he became one of the top mech pilots in Gray Valley.

"Destroy this place. All the useful things here have already been moved out," Guang Bei said solemnly. He was still deep in pain.

After rapidly setting up the ultra-strong explosives, the two mechs quickly left the archive room.

Just after they left, Ye Chong rushed out of the cupboard. He remembered the three serial numbers that Old Xu mentioned clearly.

He ignored Rui Bing and quickly searched for those three chips among the other chips in the room.

When Ye Chong went out of the cupboard, Rui Bing felt a momentary loss, but quickly gathered herself.

He had a blue, yellow and red chip. After double checking their serial numbers, Ye Chong felt overjoyed and quickly deployed his mech. "Let's go," he said as he slipped into his mech. Rui Bing also

deployed Guardian and resumed her position on Han Jia's shoulder.

Down in the underground sewer, Han Jia carried Rui Bing and accelerated to its maximum speed.

Ye Chong and Rui Bing both knew that time was of the essence! They had to reach safety before the bombs exploded.

# Chapter 336: Mech Duel I

Ye Chong and Rui Bing returned to Ze Xi Academy looking pathetic. In the end, they were still caught in the heatwave of the explosion, covering them with dust. The ultra-strong explosives were powerful, raising a huge gray cloud that could even be seen from afar. This surprised a lot of people, not knowing what was happening. However, when Ye Chong and Rui Bing both returned looking miserable not long after the explosions, sharp people like Bi Bo immediately suspected that they might be involved with that incident.

However, he was not foolish enough to ask Ye Chong about it. Now at Ze Xi Academy, Ye Chong's role was irreplaceable. Ze Xi Academy's higher-ups were mostly dead from the chaos earlier. Just when everyone was feeling lost, Ye Chong had appeared like a hero, turning the tide against the mutants. Additionally, the hundreds of war mech pilots that were protecting them at the academy were all here because of Ye Chong.

Here was a powerful combatant, capable of synthesizing the strange but deadly Bluefire chemical. His background was a mystery. Now, he had become an idol for the survivors of Ze Xi Academy.

Only Ye Chong, Rui Bing and Fei Si were in the laboratory. Fei Si stared at the photon processor, her face drained of blood as she muttered, "How could they ..."

Ye Chong was also not looking so well. The three chips that he got from the underground base had all the information on the later part of their decade-long experiments. They had been experimenting on humans. No less than 300 had died from their experiments. It was terrifying.

Ye Chong frowned as he noticed Fei Si's pale face. He spoke up, "Now is not the time for this. Can you find a cure for the virus?" It would take time to fully digest the information in the chips, but

there were more important matters to attend to.

Fei Si composed herself then, still looking a little pale, but she considered for a moment before saying, "Once I know its structure, the rest will be easier. I'll make the cure now." She remembered then that many students outside could die at any moment.

She began to work in earnest. Fei Si was a real workaholic, as evident from her current single status. While her teacher had once advised her to spend more time on her personal matters, she still continued to work. After her teacher's passing, she had dived deeper into work in her grief. However, it was her determination that led her to be as capable as she was at her young age.

Seeing Fei Si deep in concentration, Ye Chong took out the chips from the photon processor and put them in his bag. He exchanged a glance with Rui Bing, and they both left the lab.

Just as they were outside, Ye Chong and Rui Bing both heard a commotion.

When the people outside saw Ye Chong, they yelled, "He's here, he's back out here."

Ye Chong frowned. A group of people were talking with the mech pilots. The 900 mech pilots that Ye Chong brought with him had suffered greatly, losing nearly 300 lives, about a third of the entire force. The Shi Family had suffered the least, proving that they were the most combat capable of the three families.

Bi Bo approached Ye Chong and spoke softly, "I think they're trouble."

Seeing Ye Chong's arrival, the leader of the group approached Ye Chong and studied him for awhile before speaking, "You the one who made the blue fire?" The big guy looked strong, his muscles bulging out from his combat suit.

The people around quieted down at the mention of that question. The entire academy building fell silent. Many of them looked



angry, as the man had spoken rudely.

Aside from Ye Chong, Rui Bing's eyes gleamed coldly.

Ye Chong ignored him as his eyes swept across the leaders of the three troops. The leaders of the three troops avoided his gaze.

"Who let them in?" Ye Chong asked calmly in a voice free of intonation, but his words were powerful. Everyone held their breaths.

The leaders looked away, as if they did not hear him.

Ye Chong nodded, and said plainly, "So this is how you treat your orders. As expected of war mech pilots." Ye Chong's expression was empty, like he was only commenting on the weather.

The people around looked at the troop leaders with despise.

In the He Yue Galaxy, staff mech pilots were different from average mech pilots. Staff mech pilots enjoyed better benefits and higher status compared to other mech pilots. They were professional combatants. However, staff mech pilots were also subject to stricter discipline. One of the most important rules was to always obey their orders.

Disobeying orders was a serious matter for staff mech pilots. It was no wonder that the people around looked at them with distaste.

The leaders looked miserable. They were unwilling to do this in the first place, but due to their orders, they were forced to protect Ye Chong and Rui Bing. They also took to heart how Ye Chong had easily escaped six of their mechs earlier like it was but a game, and using Valiance at that. To them, it was an act of public humiliation. The man had other mechs but had chosen to use Valiance, what was that if not a deliberate choice to embarrass them?

They had not stopped this group of people from entering with the intention to make things awkward for Ye Chong.

However, the seemingly rigid man had now retaliated with such sharp words. Accusing staff mech pilots for disobeying orders was a serious matter. The hostile looks they got from the people around them had driven them into a difficult situation.

The Shi Family's troop leader stepped forward to justify themselves, "You did not order for us to stop anyone from entering." Bi Bo could not help but humphed coldly at that. Given the circumstances, it was only natural for the staff mech pilots to be vigilant and not let anyone enter as they pleased. Explicit orders were not necessary for this precaution.

"Oh," Ye Chong nodded, eyeing the leaders again until they felt uncomfortable. Ye Chong's next words forced them into a tight corner, "Then I now order you to get rid of them from here."

The leaders looked to each other, aghast.

The big guy was furious. "Heh, what arrogance. Humph, even if Shi Sen was here, he wouldn't dare speak to me like this. Humph, just who do you think you are?" Shi Sen was one of Shi Family's powerful members, and was very well known. The big guy said this with towering pride.

Rui Bing, who had been silently watching all this while, could not stand it any longer. Her eyes gleamed icily as the neat bangs on her forehead swept up. She darted forward, reaching the big guy before her to slap him. Rui Bing who had refined herself much both in terms of combat and manners, would normally not be so easily angered. Even if someone yelled in her face, she could ignore them completely. However, for some reason, she could not stand seeing someone speaking so rudely to Ye Chong.

Rui Bing moved like lightning. It was all so sudden that the big guy could barely raise his hands to block her. Rui Bing twisted her wrists and evaded his block.

Piak! It was a solid, hard slap on the big guy's face.

Rui Bing was angry with his rudeness, and had used some force. The big guy's face was imprinted with a clear palm. The big guy was stupefied, and could barely believe what had happened. Rui Bing was back at Ye Chong's side, as if she had not moved at all.

Everyone gasped!

The leaders were also shocked by Rui Bing's reaction. The cold woman in white was amazing. Her attack was like a lightning strike. If it were them, they would never be able to block her. If it was not a slap, but a chop to the big guy's throat ... The leaders could imagine the sound of broken bones, and their hearts chilled.

The big guy's surprise quickly turned to humiliation and anger. He spoke through gritted teeth, "Alright, f\*ck, to think that someone's b\*llsy enough to slap me. Hehe ..." He wanted to say more, but seeing the white-robed woman standing beside Ye Chong made him swallow the rest of his words.

"Little sh\*t, how about a mech duel?" The big guy challenged. Rui Bing heard the big guy's insult for Ye Chong, and raised her eyebrow, pushing the big guy to take a few steps back.

Ye Chong turned to Bi Bo and asked, "What's a mech duel?"

Bi Bo took a glance at the big guy and replied quickly, "A mech duel match between two people with their respective mechs. There are no specific rules to it, but no one is allowed to interfere. Both sides place their own bets."

"Why would I want to have a mech duel with him?" Ye Chong asked.

Bi Bo was speechless. The people around them watched Ye Chong like he was an alien. The big guy laughed, "Hehe, what a coward, are you man? What a f\*cking weakling ..." Seeing Rui Bing raising her brow again, the big guy quickly shut up.

Bi Bo was vexed. How should he try to explain this? After a long moment, he tried with, "If you win, you can obtain whatever he

bet in the duel, like money, for example, or mechs, or other things." In the He Yue Galaxy, mech duels were a commonality. Most people would not shy away from a mech duel, since mech pilots were widely perceived to be brave.

"Oh," Ye Chong finally showed some interest. He turned to the big guy and asked, "What do you have?"

## Chapter 337: Mech Duel II

A lady appeared from the back of the big guy, "Greetings sir, what could I provide you I wonder?" She said with a smile of a gorgeous twenty-five. Her short hair swung, her blue suit revealed a fair white shirt which the top had been partially unbuttoned, exposing her collar bones. The fitting skirt engulfed her bouncing pound of flesh, her calves were a sexy screamer. How alluring.

Any trainee in their puberty would be easily hooked away by her simple bow. It was only a matter of seconds before she became the center of everyone's attention. Her smile remained as gentle as her expressive eyes stared upon Ye Chong. The big guy withdrew himself the moment the lady made her debut.

The stares of the trainees were as if a thunderous shout from them saying, "Provide you yourself! Nothing else!" Even Bi Bo, who had gotten used to all sorts of women, was having his heart raced a little.

Ye Chong frowned, "What can you guys provide then?"

Oh? The lady's smile bloomed. Her eyes rolled interestingly, "Instead of that, why don't you tell us what do you need, so that we can see if there is any assistance we could provide?" It was a trade, a business from the very beginning. Whoever flashed their trump card would be destined to lose! The lady was clearly very experienced in this, and Bi Bo fancied that.

"State your catalogue," Ye Chong shook his head, knowing if he really listed out everything he needed, the lady might as well carried the entire cargo to him right away. Well he did not know what exactly he wanted at the moment, to be honest. And these men who joined the scene abruptly, hell knows what they aimed here... Wait, the big guy said something about the Bluefire. Did they come for the Bluefire reagent?

That chemical substance was nothing valuable in particular to Ye

Chong. So much work just for Bluefire? But how did they know about Bluefire?

Meanwhile, Susan was getting irritated by this ignorant man. Just today she suddenly received a transmission from the authority, demanding her to head to Ze Xi academy with her men, look for a peculiarly ugly man and obtain the formula that could produce the phenomena of Dimming Blue. As communicative systems of most planets had been damaged, Zhou Jian planet was nearly utterly offline with the last few places remained connected to the world in signals so weak that not even the Virtual World survived from this and visuals could not be even transmitted directly to Susan. She eventually had to come all the way to Zhou Jian herself to get things done. It was quite a miracle that Bi Bo's stream was of private connection and the broadcast was successful. Unlike Bi Bo, Susan was running out of luck. The moment she arrived, Xiong Mocong just had to ruin her life. "You filthy pig," cursed Susan softly. Xiong Mocong possessed quite an unconventional rank in the organization, in a way that he was not a subordinate of Susan despite being under her supervision, so Susan technically could hardly enforce anything on him.

At least the situation remained under control. It was a relief to her when she was informed that a mech duel was going to happen instead. Xiong Mocong was still something at mech duels in spite of that bad temper of his.

All she had to do at the moment was to lure this boy into the lair, since clearly this boy did not look interested in a street fight without any form of incentive. This ugly boy however, gave her a different kind of sensation, a very... very unique atmosphere he exuded that was unfitting to his visual age.

The white-garbed girl by his side was also a fascination, that Xiong Mocong almost got knocked out at first. Knowing how skillful Xiong Mocong might not be as competent in a hand-on-hand, but he should not be this bad... Such horror that even a fully

grown man could not hold a single attack of hers...

The remaining 600 men behind were none of her concern, as she could easily discern the dispute among them at first glance, they would be as brittle as glass, easy as pie.

"How about we heat things up? You win, you get a fancy new ride. Let's see... the new Phantom-3000? The fearsome Genocide? Or you prefer the classic model Celestial Terra-cotta?" Listed Susan some mouth-watering bets on the duel, which none of them were ordinary models at the street market. All of those models could go easily for 5 million points for sale, while being the dream ride of all pilots.

"Holy Molly, did I hear Phantom-3000?"

"I saved up for my entire life just to get a battery for Genocide!"

"Lucky boy."

"Woowowow."

The exclamation brewed along with whispers in the surrounding, including Bi Bo with his eyes wide open. "Such daring bet..." Whispered he, as getting intrigued of this mature-looking girl.

Well, Ye Chong might be jumping into his mech now if it was in the past. But ever since that night he knocked a grand fortune, few million points were a thing in him no longer, especially when he lacked everything else but a mech. He had enough funds to get him a handful of these so-called dream rides.

Guo the accountant of the group actually prepared Ye Chong the Great a debit card stored with a hundred million, in a fear that this great man would be at short of pennies when he left Planet Yi Ju. Nonetheless, knowing this great man was also quite a clumsy and careless one, the kind accountant broke the figure into 10 different cards stored with ten millions each. But then Ye Chong felt that was a little unnecessarily too much for his pocket to handle, so he brought 5 cards instead. Well, with 5 times ten millions each, 50

millions were more than enough to buy a dozen of these fancy rides. So, the answer was clearly...

"No thanks." The deal was off.

The audience roared again upon seeing this boy refusing such a juicy, probably once-in-a-lifetime deal, so was Susan who was literally stunned on spot.

Okay, which sane person would refuse a condition like this? Was he fearing that he could not offer a similar bet? Hmm, well then, "Are you afraid that you could not wager something even close to this? No worries, we do not expect that, we only expect you to-"

"Was it the formula for Bluefire?" interrupted Ye Chong.

Wait, how did he know our intention? Susan was shocked as her popped eyes ran through this boy with an unappealing appearance. Hmmm, he knew everything. Gasp! That means I had been in the inferior position since the very beginning... Speaking of it... I knew nothing of this boy...

"What's your name? If you would so kindly tell," bowed Susan sincerely, with her Great Valley stirring up a commotion among the spectators again. Ye Chong had ascended to formally a position of an actual opponent in her list now.

"Chen Mu." A new entry to Ye Chong's tradition of setting up pseudonym.

"Very well, Mr. Chen," smiled Susan sweetly, "Apparently Mr. Chen is incurious about our duel. How about the condition to be made by Mr. Chen instead? We are still on a deal here, aren't we?"

"One billion?" stated Ye Chong flatly.

The condition was a noise-killer as people froze their lips looking at Ye Chong. It was dead silent that somehow one could perceive that flappy sound of Bi Bo's jaw dropping.

Susan's expression stiffened, "Hah... Mr. Chen, I beg your



pardon, maybe I was a little too consumed by the deal did I hear the figure-

"A billion. No more or less. Well you could also cut the deal and purchase my formula with the price instead." His tone was indifferent, although feeling unconvinced of the potential value of this ordinary formula. But if he were to sell it, he will sell it at a good price.

"I'm very sorry...", shook Susan, "The offer from Mr. Chen was rather overwhelming that our budget could not cover." It was such a grand amount that she had to report to the authority to seek advice. "You screwed pig! Is this a daylight robbery or something? A billion? Why don't you join the billion of galaxy instead?" bellowed Xiong Mocong.

"I'm fine if you have lost interest in the deal," replied Ye Chong.

And Xiong Mocong almost could feel his fist launching at the shameless merchant before him, but Rui Bing's stare was an extinguisher to his rage. The lad was a pain nail to knock, he got to behave himself. So he stood there, trying to act unmoved.

"I see," Susan giggled. "Mr. Chen has such insightful thoughts in marketing. We could accept that outstanding offer but how would we be able to get a billion in such a short amount of time?" she said as the eyes glanced at the 600 men of Ye Chong. Dammit, I should have brought more men... Exclaimed Susan in her mind, as she once thought anybody in a young folks' home like Ze Xi academy would be literally a nobody, but this boy seemed to be a somebody. Susan got cautious since she did not hear everything from the authority in fact, thanks to the bad signals during transmission. But she could perceive that "get the formula by hook or by crook" underlying tone at least.

"How about some of your property?" Suggested Ye Chong, based on the knowledge he recently obtained from society. Apparently "waiving property for trade", "barter" and "treaty" were a thing in

history, especially during wartime.

Susan's pupils rolled as she forced a smile, "That's a brilliant idea, we could consider the deal if that's what Mr. Chen desires. Hmmm, we do have a Topazite mine somewhere in Planet Tai Hui, though the expanse was not great, it could be sold for more than a billion. I wonder if Mr. Chen is pleased with our kindest offer?"

Topazite? The keyword struck Ye Chong's heart. It was a fairly common ore, nothing really amazing of it in particular. That was not the main shocker.

Upon seeing the tiny flinch he made, Bi Bo went and briefed him, "Planet Tai Hui is a pretty remote planet, situated closely to the Calamitous Asteroid Belt. While its population is low, being mostly the pirates, they would restore their supplies there, thus the horrible safety there."

Bi Bo was expecting a proper decline from Ye Chong after hearing all these threatening description, who knows, "Good." A straight reply from him...

Why you little prick stop spoiling my dea-huh?

Susan was irritated by Bi Bo's unhelpful elaboration but Ye Chong actually accepted the offer straightaway, "Did Mr. Chen give a 'yes' on our deal?" She could not believe her ears.

"Yes," Ye Chong nodded.

HAH! Susan nearly skipped as she walked. The mine had been long abandoned by her organization and never once she would see a fool falling for it today. It would be alright even if they lose. Everybody else seemed to be thinking the same, given that their eyes were in a bewilderment of seeing a drunkard nodding to a bogus deal.

"Why don't we have the deal now?" Susan seriously hopped that they could just make the exchange right now. Less hassle, less risk.

"Nope. We are dueling," replied Ye Chong affirmatively.

"Well, we would need to sign the contract then." Fearing that Ye Chong would change his mind, she quickly sent her men to retrieve the deed to the mine.

"Fair enough."

And so both of them signed the contract after the pilots returned with the deed to the mine. Ye Chong had also written down the formula of Bluefire reagent.

"Xiong, if you could win, ten millions." A brief sentence from Susan ignited Xiong Mocong's will to fight. He so would love to pounce on that guy and shred him into a gazillion pieces right when the duel began.

Xiong Mocong deployed his mech.

"That's the Steel Samurai!"

"Holy Molly! It's the Steel Samurai!"

The audience roared again, as none of them expected that graceless-looking hulk would be the famous Steel Samurai. The Steel Samurai was known to be under none of the aristocrats the whole time, yet he was there with a group. Which aristocrat does the group belong to? They were actually able to net the Steel Samurai?

The renowned fight of Steel Samurai was the time he smashed 21 mechs, alone. Unlike its fictional naming, the fight was as real as it could get. During the time he was on his way heading home on a spacecraft. And that was when he encountered around a hundred mechs of a tiny group of pirates who held immense firepower despite the measly number, since among that hundred, 25 of them were advanced models.

The spacecraft was only armed with 12 pilots that time. So what the legendary Steel Samurai did was, he led an army of 12 and faced the pirates boldly. With his formidability, he destroyed 21 mechs, all advanced models, with one of them being the leader. The

happening was streamed and there were at least 500 witnesses to the battle.

And thanks to this fight, the once-a-little-star had become the superstar. Well, a hot-tempered superstar too, that not many aristocrats or major organizations could please him and he chose to be the lone wolf.

As far as you could observe, people address heroes by the name of the mech, not the pilot himself in reality, like Kyaji.

Looking at his own mech, Xiong Mocong's eyes had changed, as lustered with pride and overflowing will, coated in sedate solemnity.

Steel Samurai was the name of Xiong Mocong's mech. As its name had suggested, it was in fact a humanoid model with a steel mask covering like a samurai. The limbs were as bulky as Xiong Mocong's physique, with the shield on the left, the sword on the right - the classic setup for samurai. The surface of the body was not texturized, though one could see the tiny cuts as the badge of glory being the great samurai. Every inch of the mech was pretty well-maintained, with the joints exceptionally glowing as new.

The model was simple but no one would dare to give a disdainful look on, as the moment it stood, the history of war it had undergone could be smelled. A true war machine it was, with no pointless adornment, while setting off a cold dignity.

Ye Chong deployed Han Jia calmly.

Han Jia, like a blossom it bloomed, had once again made its debut being the butterfly of the bolts and nuts.

## Chapter 338: Mech Duel III

It was a strange fight, an unfair fight if one were to emphasize since both parties shared a drastic difference in size. The Steel Samurai was as if the hulk in rage, ready for destruction, whereas Han Jia was as if the lady in vain, ready for dance-instruction. Interestingly, both pilots were similarly different too, in which Xiong Mocong had the bulkiness of Steel Samurai and Ye Chong suddenly looked so feeble when he stood against Xiong Mocong with that thin body of his.

Bi Bo was ready. His journalist's soul was calling. He would be in remorse for the rest of his life if he were to miss this duel without the camera!

Quickly he took out his camera and was going to give a press on the ON button. Smash. A dagger came from no where and the camera splintered.

"What th-" Nobody could stand their expensive, beloved photographic apparatus being smashed for no reason, even for Mr. Good-tempered like Bi Bo, he lifted his head, was going to throw a tantrum, yet he was stopped, as seeing Susan's sweet smile as she played with the other dagger of hers, "Little boy, it's never a good habit to sneak a shot on others alright?"

"Ha. Hahaha...." His rage had vaporized into an awkward laugh. She was right, Bi Bo even despised the paparazzi-like behavior himself. He zipped his mouth and sucked it up.

"Start!"

Both sides stampeded and jumped into the cabin. Every second in a mech duel counts! The time one took to enter the cabin would be the top determiner in the outcome.

90% of the pilots who died in a fight against the martial arts neglected such brief process.

Xiong Mocong might have a cumbersome looking body, he was

truly dexterous for he was nearly as fast as Ye Chong, in a ground-shattering movement however... It felt like a plough machine, except armed with a turbo. Ye Chong was quite the contrary as he moved like a phantom silently.

Ye Chong was slightly ahead of Xiong Mocong, even though Xiong Mocong had butted into the cabin before Ye Chong managed to sit tight.

The first stage of a mech duel ended with a draw. It was no surprise for the Ze Xi trainees to see Ye Chong leading, since they had been well-convinced by his performance during the war, but it was a little distressing to see how the triumph he made was negligible at first stage.

Xiong Mocong thought otherwise however, as his glance convinced him the fact that this punk turned out to be slightly faster in action, which gave him a skip in his heartbeat. He had been a freelancing pilot before joining the organization so he had gotten used to the days of getting into a street fight taken in the form of a duel, which was the main source of his income. To ensure the money flowing, he worked hard on nailing every duel yet it was the first time he encountered someone who got into position faster than him.

So was this punk truly unlike what he looked?

But he no longer had the chance to retreat now. He settled down and skillfully activated the engine.

I guess the punk should also be warming up now. Thought Xiong Mocong as habitually he glanced at the screen, which gave him a flinch.

The screen... is empty?

Wait what?

The first deduction that appeared in his mind was, the foe had hidden himself. But that was not possible, the foe could hide but

never possibly this fast. He might be a few seconds ahead of Xiong Mocong but those few seconds were not sufficient to perform a camouflage, not even for a elite pilot.

Is my detection system jammed? Maybe... although I clearly remember the amount of maintenance I worked on this baby. Don't tell me the machine just has to break down at this very nick of time. My body is not ready for this.

Xiong Mocong was experienced enough to know to turn out the photon-detection mode. The arena was not boundless like the space, so it should work, although Xiong Mocong did not see this as a good beginning for a duel.

Right at that moment, a gorgeous-looking mech filled the entire screen, which gave Xiong Mocong a shocker as his hands reflexively bounced on the control panel.

Such speed. The foe has already gotten right into my face!?

He reacted promptly with a standard stance by his Steel Samurai to block the incoming blow.

Thus! The Steel Samurai was pushed a few steps back. Han Jia might have a smaller physique than the Steel Samurai, its featherweight still packed a punch under velocity.

The Steel Samurai slightly tilted its body and repositioned itself into another stance. Thup! The next blow was blocked successfully. The pair of daggers of Han Jia however left two slashes on the shield of the samurai.

Such defense... Ye Chong was amazed as he performed a quick flip at Han Jia. Its butterfly wings quivered frantically and zapped to the back of the samurai.

"Jesus..." Shrieked Bi Bo, even Susan nearly tripped herself seeing the speed. Did the feebly pretty mech just break the law of aerodynamic?!

Impossible, how? Bi Bo who was well educated by his father

believed his own insight in the law of physics.

Xiong Mocong lost the sight of the mech. The back! His instinct shouted and intuitively he made a front tilt, a graceless self-tripping.

A slash of shadow swung right pass the neck of the samurai, a split second before the samurai was nearly beheaded.

Such opponent. Xiong Mocong went fully alarmed, as realizing the skills of the foe being way beyond his imagination. It was as if the outcome had been determined from the very beginning. The two simple blows from the foe could be very well defined as blows by a phantom. He would have surrendered if he was not at his very prime today.

The Steel Samurai lifted itself by the arms on the ground, with the additional engines all turned on, as it began rolling away like a pinball.

I would be shredded if I did not pull myself away from this punk.

His plan was overthrown as Ye Chong did not intend to spare him, being a person uninterested of the Tom & Jerry he was. His hands flipped through the control panel. All engines of Han Jia were on as it zoomed towards the Steel Samurai.

Thup! Thump! Thup! Thump! Wham! Bam... a barrage of attack rained upon the guard of the samurai, about 16 times.

It was a miracle that he could take down every hit, even the audience exclaimed with few rounds of applause heard.

It was also a miracle that one could make a barrage of attack in such speed. It could have been the maximum of humanity! Be it the timing or the angle, the attack was impeccable, whereas the samurai - despite being put under such a terrible situation - still was able to perform a perfect guard.

The sturdiness of the foe had stimulated Ye Chong, as his hands stormed upon the control panel, into countless afterimages the



input was punched. Han Jia's next shower of attack followed, a frenzy one too, tracing the escaping samurai.

Han Jia would be a killing machine when put into a close-ranged fight.

The giant wings of Han Jia had been withdrawn, while the 12 tentacles were fluttering.

Ye Chong's eyes were glued upon the screen. He too was at his maximum. The APM was so high that one could barely see the lining of his hands on the control panel. The afterimages seemed to have disappeared. It was this fast.

Pair of daggers, 12 spiked tentacles, kneecap attack, elbow blow, diving kick, soccer strike, the moves were chained after one another, as they raided upon the Steel Samurai.

Xiong Mocong was somehow excited by the battle, as instinct seemed to have fully taken over his mind since the continuous attack of Han Jia was already beyond the maximum of his reaction speed, only intuition could save him. In layman's term, he basically had lost the control, he had no idea what was going on.

Every spectator there, including Bi Bo and Susan were hardly able to witness the scene, as the Steel Samurai was being thrashed by a delicate-looking mech, like a punching bag.

Ye Chong was feeling pumped as he seemed to be breaking the APM cap. Unfortunately he was so engaged in the battle that he did not notice it at that moment.

Terrifying attack, yet also a terrifying defense there were.

Both mechs were monstrous in the eyes of the witnesses.

Xiong Mocong's nostrils felt warm, bleeding had occurred as he had overclocked himself throughout the battle. Physical damage could be seen happening on his body.

Ye Chong's eyes shone the moment he discerned the weakening

of the foe. Smash! The APM cap had been broken!

That was the very first time in history Ye Chong broke the speed cap after so long being bogged down by it. The barrage of attack by Han Jia had been enhanced, both strength and speed. The expression of Bi Bo and Susan was priceless as it was so ever-changing. The pilots around knew what it meant to break the speed cap.

The leaders of the respective teams were getting regretful of their foolish behavior.

Hush, shush, slash. The daggers of Han Jia danced in the air, leaving 12 afterimages.

The Steel Samurai was still sturdy at first, till crack was heard. The elbows, the knees, the crotch and the neck were disengaged! The samurai was only able to guard 5 blows, while chewing the remaining 7. The bulky samurai had been dismembered, as the parts splattered.

It was a mind-blowing scene as the place got dead silent.

The duel ended.

And Xiong Mocong left the cabin, on a stretcher, being unconsciousness, with blood tainting his mouth and nose - a horrible sight if one may ask.

Xiong Mocong had demonstrated enough skill as a super expert, both Bi Bo and Susan knew that. His defeat was not because of his lack of skill or lack of performance but the fact that he had encountered an anomaly.

The sylphlike Han Jia was no longer as gracefully frail as it looked before, while that frail-looking pilot of such great machinery was given the look as if a great man he was.

# Chapter 339: Departure I

Ye Chong skimmed through the data on the processor. Yup, he put in the blue chip, which contained some surprises other than some professional statistics, including a way to leave Planet Zhou Jian. Bravo, as expected from Old Xu the wise and cautious as he had already prepared an escape path. Well, he probably never expected the virus leaking to the world while causing such havoc, an apocalypse in the history of humankind.

Rui Bing was meditating. Her eyes were closed.

Fei Si joined the scene promptly and passed Ye Chong a bottle of blue liquid, "This is the antivirus, though the correct dosage still required a few clinical tests." Her voice was so flat that no joy was heard, as if it was a really normal thing for her to do.

"Alright. Let's publicize the formula," stated Ye Chong.

Fei Si stared at Ye Chong in bewilderment, as never she would expect such line coming from a person like him, since visually he would be the typical cold person who would care about the survival of the others. In addition, she was well aware of the value of the formula. It could easily grant the person both fame and wealth. He should not be unaware of such fact.

Yet he was unmoved by it? Fei Si was getting more and more confused of this mysterious boy.

Well, it did not seem like Ye Chong had a choice - he did not fancy the fame, although he was pretty into the points. He had lots of places to spend points on yet he had no time to utilize the formula for the potential income. It would only be a matter of time before the three Aristocrats arrived by Zhou Jian. He would be joining the imprisonment if he never made his runaway now!

You have got to be kidding me. A mere Steel Samurai was already a supreme hard nut to crack. How about those legendary fighters like Ye Yin or Brahmara? Am I going to die? They aren't coming

alone, they are coming in an army, of millions!

I would be a dead idiot if I would not make my escape now after knowing the way to go.

"Has the professor taken the antidote?" That was his greatest concern.

"Yes," nodded Fei Si, "he has taken the antivirus. He's feeling better now, there shouldn't be any problem."

Ye Chong returned with a nod, "We are going to leave." And Rui Bing's eyes were sprung open.

"Leave? We?" Fei Si could no longer follow the conversation.

"I am bringing all of you along, both you and the professor. The destination has yet to be determined for now," stated Ye Chong nonchalantly.

Fei Si flinched for a few seconds, then her face reddened, "Who are you!" She raised her voice, "Who are you to take all of us away as you wish? Have you asked our thoughts on this? No! You did not! I am not leaving! I am not going anywhere!" Her reply was firm.

Ye Chong tilted his head, "Keep the drama." Seeing the intensity of her respirating chests, Ye Chong stated, "I am not seeking your opinion. The plan has been established a long time ago."

"Why you!" Fei Si was so caught up by her rage that she was at loss of words, with tears flooding her eyes, "Sniff... sob... who are you... who are you to determine my future... what am I to you... what am I ??"

Rui Bing gave a glance at Fei Si and turned back to Ye Chong.

The feline's glance was immediately understood by Ye Chong somehow as he promptly clarified, "I required the professor's assistance while she is the sole relative to the professor. To avoid trouble she would be taken along."

Rui Bing's eyes glowed slightly, as she showed her understanding with a nod, while her steps approached Ye Chong.

The statement from Ye Chong was ground-shattering to Fei Si, as she retreated her tears as well as the warmth of her face. Her eyes glared at Ye Chong. For some reason, a piercing pain took over her heart, that she felt difficult to even breathe.

With her hands on her chests, her eyes were soulless. She had no idea what she was thinking, her mind felt blank.

Rui Bing gave a sigh, plus a scowl at Ye Chong. She moved to Fei Si, her clear voice came tingling, "Stop overthinking."

The words of Rui Bing pulled Fei Si back to reality. Fei Si could no longer hold her emotions as she collapsed into Rui Bing's embrace to cry.

Ye Chong could not comprehend the situation. What had happened? Why was Fei Si crying? Why was Rui Bing glaring at me? Weird...

"Oh my Zhou Jian, what has happened?" Susan was stunned by the dramatic happening with Fei Si in the embrace of Rui Bing, as her eyes rolled between all three of them. Well, her life experience had somehow given herself a sound deduction to the situation.

The defeat of Xiong Mocong was a plot twist to her script though. Ye Chong's performance was solid too, so she acted pretty easygoing when she kept her promise. The mine was not much of a big deal but she still had not obtained the formula! She would love to seize it right now, but there was Ye Chong with his godlike skills and his army of 600. Judging by those stares of admiration from those pilots, they would swear to obey every order of this boy probably. The world is realistic as the weak would always submit to the strong.

Well, it seemed like she would have to make a detour on this, which was why she was trying her best to stay back at Ze Xi

academy, "I could help defeating the mutated lifeforms!" She kindly offered, a perfect excuse it was while being able to approach Ye Chong better after sending Xiong Mocong back to hospitalization. Ye Chong on the other hand was puzzled by her advancement.

And there she was, getting caught into a drama. But nobody seemed to be interested enough to spare her some attention. Well it was not like she cared, as she walked towards Fei Si with a kind smile.

Her life experience told her that going with a roundabout would be the most effective treatment to the situation, as she always had her own way to lower the caution of the foes to achieve what she needed. Although the pesky boy whose name was Chen Mu was acting like a stone of a dump, she did not intend to give up, as she had faced the more stone of a dump before.

Ye Chong decided to not give her a second to act, as he took a look at the time, "We are leaving," he said to Rui Bing.

Rui Bing gave a nod. To where they would go, she would not care, as long as it was with Ye Chong.

"Leaving? To where you guys are leaving?" Susan was alert.

The question was given the silent treatment as Ye Chong preferred to save his words. He made a leap right to the side of Susan, which scared the soul out of her. She was going to move reflexively yet Ye Chong forbade that, his hand grabbed the side of her neck and a crack was heard crystal clear. He was immune to beauty after all, that he would not spare someone just because of her physical appearance, although that snap was only a trick to keep her on ground for 10 days which were the only amount of time he would ever need.

He signaled Rui Bing to stay as he left the room to look for that old Jalopy man.

It did not take him much time before he discovered the good old man was leaning against the corner, dozing off, salivating. And Ye Chong just lifted the sleepyhead all the way back to Rui Bing.

Zzzzzzz...

"Oh my Zhou Jian!" The Jalopy elderly was shocked awake, his arms were waving, struggling within Ye Chong's grip.

Ye Chong calmly got the man to the room and placed him down, "What you fella doin', spoiling my nice little nap?" He seemed displeased.

"We are going to leave," replied Ye Chong concisely.

"Leave?" The old man was astonished, "Are you kidding me? Don't mess with the old man. Why are you thinking of leaving now, of all times? Geez, clearly you have not seen the world enough, boy. Zhou Jian has been quarantine, the entire planet is locked away from the world. They won't even let us to lift a toe outside if they could not find a way to cure the virus... man boys these days with their hectic attitude...", he muttered.

Ye Chong was too lazy to brief the angered elderly. Action speaks louder than words anyway.

He gave Rui Bing a nod, "Let's go." And then he lifted the Jalopy old man to the outside, "Hey! Hey! Hey! What do you think yer doing boy? You can never get out! They would crash all the escaping craft! You nuts or something?" Towards the kind advice, Ye Chong showed negligence while he took one last check in his bag, on the three chips which would be the key to their survivals.

Rui Bing took Fei Si by her waists and caught up.

It was midnight and almost everyone was a deep asleep. So the escape was carried out quietly, nobody had noticed how the two long shadows had vanished at the street of Zhou Jian.

They headed to the port, the corridor to be exact. Nothing had changed. The spaceship was still there, which was the greatest

relief to Ye Chong. He opened up the gate and raised his ears.

...

... ... He walked in.

Well, if anyone still remembers, there remained 13 captives inside the ship which technically should be unconscious and in fact they were.

The moment when Old Jalopy saw the ship, he was at loss of word. Fei Si had also stopped weeping in the meantime, as her face was stiff. Rui Bing was calm, seemingly already immune to whatever surprise Ye Chong could bring.

Ye Chong began working right after the gate was sealed tight. The first thing on his list was to smash every communicative device on the passengers. Then he would wake them up.

"Good morning. I guess all of you have already waken up," stated Ye Chong indifferently. "All of you should understand the situation now."

"W-who are you? Why did you attack us?" The bodyguard of the child asked grimly.

Towards the pilot who once sniped him, Ye Chong gave a glance. The bodyguard's scarred face was dull in expression, so were his eyes, apparently unconcerned of his own situation.

"I lacked men to run the ship," Ye Chong answered with honesty.

"Just..." Everyone was shocked, "Just because of this?"

"Yes." The reply was firm.

The little boy seemed unafraid, quite the contrary actually, that he looked at Ye Chong with total interest, "You are great," he commented as he glanced at his bodyguards who lowered their heads in shame, except for the one with a scarred face.

"Where are we going?" The little boy lifted his head and asked in the naive curiosity.



## Chapter 340: Departure II

Ye Chong, again, showed ignorance towards the enquiry of the others, as he turned away and smashed the remaining communicative devices in the ship. After that, he returned to the room and untied the red strands on them.

"All of you should know what you are supposed to do. Now, get back to your respective positions, and you...", he said as he pointed at that scarred bodyguard, "You will be leading them." Everything once under the possession of these guardsmen had been scrapped and they had transformed into the typical unarmed men in the ship. And in terms of an unarmed hand-on-hand, they would never overcome Ye Chong, especially when they had to also take care of young master's safety.

Their only "option" was, to cooperate.

"I do hope there won't be anything funny from you guys, or else..." The consequence sounded severe enough that it gave chills to everyone even when it went unmentioned.

"What the hell are all of you standing there for? Go go go! Do you want to move only when I'm captured with a knife next to my neck?" The little boy's words rang impatiently. He did sound a little too old for his age.

The bodyguards took a look at each other, shrugged, they headed to the commander's room.

The little boy got up and rubbed his wrist, "Hey, don't you think you're a little too harsh sometimes? How could you be so mean to a cute little boy like me?" he muttered.

People were giving off stares at this expressive boy, confused.

And that was when he spotted both Rui Bing and Fei Si. He whistled, as a form of compliment for their appearance, while his eyes mischievously rolled over Ye Chong, "Hmm, not bad. Never thought a dull-looking man like you could get such beauties, are

those lassies your wives?"

"Nope," Ye Chong said as he shook his head in disagreement. The answer went so naturally for some reason... Ye Chong felt pretty familiar with this boy. Something of this boy... was giving off nostalgia. But Ye Chong was very sure he had never met such flashy, dramatic boy before. Weird, why the sensation though?

"Well then, which one of them is?" The little boy went on inquiring.

"It's-"

"Uh uh uh, I'll make the guess." The boy interrupted, as his eyes weaved between Rui Bing and Fei Si. "Hmmm..." And he pointed at Rui Bing, "She's your wife!" Affirmatively he gave his answer.

"How do you know that?" asked Ye Chong in bewilderment. He was pretty accurate, ahead-of-time-kind-of accurate. Between Rui Bing and Fei Si, Rui Bing did have a gazillion times greater chance of being his wife if a marriage were to happen. Probably she would also be the only candidate Ye Chong would ever consider.

And Rui Bing's icy cheeks was tinted with heating scarlet. That was the first time Ye Chong admitted their relationship between both of them, even though Ye Chong was too ignorant to be aware of the meaning of his gesture.

"Tsk. One glance and I could tell you're some bum from the countryside. Dull and boring, missing whichever essential of a real man. Sigh, what a waste to the white-garbed lassie..." Shook the boy. It formed a pretty hilarious contrast when a young boy like him giving off comments like some elderly.

The scarred bodyguard was sitting by his side. And Ye Chong shifted his stare. The little boy noticed the changes in Ye Chong's expression, "You could save your stare." Stated the boy, "This dork knows only to murder, nothing else." And he brushed his sleeves, "But I must say you're quite something, that you could defeat him

easily."

Ye Chong was quiet.

"Oh and do you happen to have the latest issue of the Playboys?" asked the boy naughtily.

"Playboys?"

"Yeah, playboys, as in socialite, womanizer, Coxcomb, whatever you call it."

The Coxcomb? And Ye Chong was reminded of his good old spaceship... as well as his mechanical partner, he missed them. But he understood what the boy wanted, the boy probably was referring to some exotic visuals that Shang used to be a maniac collecting them.

"Nope," said Ye Chong.

"How about Snow White?"

Is that the fairytale?

"I know what you're thinking of, but no. I meant the film 'Schneewittchen... und die schwanzgeile Königin', the classic from a planet called Earth on 1995... I forgot what corresponding year is that in our calendar but you get it."

"No," replied Ye Chong.

The name did sound like the one Shang once shouted when he was in the room alone. That was his favorite too, he kept recommending it.

Man, this boy is seriously like a carbon copy of Shang.

The thought flashed in Ye Chong's mind and he stumbled.

Fei Si looked Ye Chong in his deep ponder. Towards this mysterious young man, her feeling was complicated.

Is it love? No! Way! I don't not believe she would fall for someone so easily. What is it then? Why would I cry? Why would I feel so

terribly sad? Why the heartache back then?

For someone who had never experienced relationship like Fei Si, these were so difficult, not even the most professional psychologist could give her the definite answer. Admiration? Worship? Intensity? Pride of a woman? What was it? Who knows...

The little boy was feeling strange upon seeing Ye Chong's sudden silence, as his fair hand waved before Ye Chong, "Galaxy to Big Boy, Galaxy to Big Boy, do you copy?"

And Ye Chong returned to his dimension.

"So where are we going again? Seriously you don't bump into the armies of the Aristocrats. Not even the greatest saint could save you if that happens." The little boy's tone was laid-back, "Meh..."

The action was warming to Ye Chong, since it reminded him a lot of Shang. "I have a plan in mind." Shook Ye Chong as he squinted his eyes. He got to focus.

"Good. Call me up when it's food time, okay?" The little boy waved again and melted into slumber.

"Okay," Ye Chong replied concisely.

Okay, did I just see two extraterrestrial entities communicating with each other? Thought Fei Si, as her large eyes fixed at Ye Chong and the boy, not even the Old Jalopy could compute the situation.

Seeing the boy asleep, Rui Bing frowned as she walked to him silently and placed the blanket over him. His eyes were suddenly wide open, giggled he, "It must be a chore to get your man, right?"

"Hmph!" Rui Bing blushed again and gave a little knock on his head.

"Owww..." The boy rubbed his head, "It's so painful that my little heart broke. I'm a little boy you see, can't take even the slightest violence." And he grabbed Rui Bing's hand and brushed her palm,

fingers, "Such tender hands..." He seemed mesmerized...

Rui Bing's frozen eyes were looking a little ridiculed. She quickly withdrew her hand and gave a flick on his forehead. "Sister... Sister..." Rui Bing was walking away, "Speak to me little bit more pretty please..." Rui Bing did not care.

"Man, a cold girl to a dull boy," he mumbled. "Such perfect match." And he went back to sleep, snoring this time.

Fei Si grabbed Old Jalopy to one corner, she glanced at Ye Chong's back once and whispered, "Jalopy man, where do you think he's taking us to exactly?"

"Like heaven I know." Shook Old Jalopy helplessly, "But it shouldn't be a dangerous place. He does not seem to be a bad guy to be honest."

"Then why did he capture us?" Fei Si was really disturbed by this. Ye Chong's utter ignorance of coldness was more heart-piercing than anything else to any girl in this world, especially like a brainiac and independent woman like Fei Si who got more easily agitated over little gesture like this.

"Like hell I know," stated Old Jalopy indifferently, with a gentle rub on Fei Si's head. "Sigh, it's a pain to see a girl like you getting involved in this."

The spacecraft was traveling at the asteroid orbit round Zhou Jian. As the location suggested, countless of asteroids hovered at the area, which were the hazard that any spacecraft would love to avoid. But there was this someone called Ye Chong who favored the contrary of praxis, that the moment he gave the order, the guardsmen were giving the galactic look of confusion at him.

The orbit was silent with only the specks of asteroids floating in the space.

"Take caution and dodge them," ordered Ye Chong.

The guardsmen panicked, they never expected this young man

asking them to fly into an asteroid orbit for real. It's suicidal!

The spacecraft had been decelerated drastically as they held the steer carefully. They were skillful, still occasionally they would crash into some pebbles around and caused a quick quake in the craft. The boy woke up when his head hit the wall.

"Dammit! Did somebody curse my forehead today?" shouted the boy.

Ye Chong's eyes fixed upon the screen of asteroids. "Go on." His expression unchanged. The guards were going to explode. If it was not the fact that Ye Chong was unbeatable, they would have swarmed upon him and given him a good smash.

"Eh?" The little boy was bewildered by the happening.

"Stop right there!" Shouted Ye Chong out of the blue.

The steering men's hands twitched, almost led the ship into another crash as they stopped in front of a giant asteroid with a length of 3 kilometers - a rare size of the asteroids to be honest.

And Ye Chong deployed his mech, was going to enter the cabin, "Everybody else stays." He suddenly turned his head to Rui Bing, "If anybody does anything funny, you could do harm." He ordered his most trustworthy member of the ship. Rui Bing had already ascended as a partner of his and towards a partner, Ye Chong would show total trust.

Rui Bing's eyes lustered, as if a kind of joy or passion bladed through the hopeless darkness, "Mhm," she replied. Her white garbs were pure, so were her gorgeous eyes and her chivalry, as if the legendary goddess of war.

Fei Si covered her mouth in disbelief.

"Wow, that's so cool!" The little boy was excited, with his right hand on his chin, acting like he was pondering, "Hmmm, right. If both of them... with their stamina... position in bed... must be interesting, innovative, the greatest of humanity."

It was relieving that the boy knew to have hedging in his words. Imagine if Rui Bing ever caught on his words, he probably would have been lifted in the air to be given the capital punishment of domesticity.

Rui Bing had added some solemnly to the atmosphere, that no man would dare to challenge her by doing something funny. A Jie expert was the formation of dignity themselves, especially for one of the psychic attacking master like Rui Bing.

Ye Chong piloted his Han Jia and went around the asteroid.

Back in the ship, people were stunned. The screen was empty the moment Han Jia left the ship.

And Ye Chong found a dent on this piece of rock as he stopped.

# Chapter 341: A Clever Disguise

Han Jia's mechanical arm gave the shade of the rock a gentle touch.

Amidst the silence of the boundless space, a crater was suddenly created at the bottom of the rock - that was what stunned the folks in the ship. They could not see Han Jia but they could see what was happening. The crater was of a size that could fit a rescue craft.

Without hesitation, Ye Chong headed into the giant piece of rock. His instinct was right.

It was a spaceship.

It was a spaceship disguised as a piece of asteroid in the space. Old Xu was really imaginative and creative. With the rocky surface of the ship, no one would have suspected the boulder when they traveled by, since one could see asteroids everywhere in space, boulders like this would be given equal ignorance as the grasses and the pebbles you see by the road. The cost of the disguise however was horrendous. It was not because of how the rocks could be expensive but it would be a major operation to coat the entire body of the ship with meteorites. Moreover, the ship would certainly be limited by its disguise for it must float, hover like the other asteroids in the space. It could neither accelerate nor perform a space-jump. Consequences would be there if the ship was exposed.

The spaceship seemed to be created quite some time ago. Old Xu was such an insightful planner, although ironically he still suffered from his inescapable fate. Sigh, fate was such a capricious being sometimes.

Ye Chong piloted Han Jia and sank to the inside of the spaceship. There was no security measurement of any kind that required an identity verification. Ye Chong travelled smoothly, all the way to



the core of the ship, the commander's room to be exact.

Ye Chong took out the blue chip and inserted to the main processor.

Beep

"Verification complete. Password confirmed. All program activated. Ship: Cornerstone welcomes the lord." A mechanical voice rang sweetly like an angel whispering to the ears of Ye Chong.

He then prompted the layout statistics of the ship. The interior was designed fairly well, the resources were pretty complete, all units were operative, there was even an advanced alchemy laboratory located in the ship.

"Tsk, tsk. Such spaceship," said the little boy when everyone joined the Cornerstone. "Whoever thought of this idea must be a genius." He carried on giving his comments as he inspected the area. Then he spat his tongue, "Though the other places were unimpressive." People were being transferred to the interior.

They took a look at the surrounding, curiously wondering how there would be an unknown world hidden inside a piece of asteroid in the space. Fei Si was excited upon seeing the alchemy lab. It was not spacious but those were some of the most advanced apparatuses there. Old Xu probably intended to have this lab for Fei Si, which justified its quality. Technically, the spaceship was pretty decent in terms of performance, since it was a kind of escape pod for Old Xu, of course he had to be serious building it.

"What's your plan? Where are we going?" asked the little boy. He did not seem to be concerned of his own safety as he elaborated, "A strong electromagnetic zone had been enforced all around Zhou Jian, you can't be thinking of space-jumping."

Ye Chong then called up the intergalactic map and began thinking.

"We don't head out," reminded the boy, "The design of this ship might be clever enough to swindle some random patrol guys but the armies of the Aristocrats could never miss it. It's impossible to run, especially with Huang Jiming, Ye Yin and Xue Nuolan leading the armies. Those are the smart ones, extremely cautious ones too. They would be shooting down every piece of weird pebble upon seeing it on the way."

The expression of those bodyguards was turning odd, except for the scarred guardsman, who seemed to be unmoved by the statement.

As mentioned, there was electromagnetic field to interrupt the transfer, so a space-warp would be implausible. Ye Chong must travel the traditional way, which would take about forever...

"What's your thoughts then?" asked Ye Chong.

"Hmm...", the little boy pondered for a moment.

Three minutes lapsed, "We could go here...", grimly he replied, pointing one spot of the intergalactic layout, "Mhm, we might indeed encounter a few regular patrolling teams but they would not be a problem. The armies of the Aristocrats should not be arriving yet, not so soon at this point of time." It was really odd to see a 6-year-old acting all grim and dead serious, even for an oddity like Ye Chong himself.

"What's after that?" interrupted Ye Chong while the boy was explaining.

"We head here!" Pointed the tiny finger.

"Nebula? We are heading to the nebula?" Ye Chong was shocked, while the men had their jaws dropped.

"There are people..." said the boy, in a kind of complicated emotions, "After the nebula."

"People?" Fei Si screamed a little. "That is preposterous! How could there be people in an interstellar cloud?" Even Old Jalopy's

face was twitching.

"There is and there will be," stated the boy slowly, who sounded like an elderly who had experienced the darkest time of life, his voice rang like a lethargic drum. "In this world, not every person favors technology. Because of that... there was once a great divide, a long, long, long time ago, where there was one particular group of people who fancied the morning sun and not the fluorescent lighting, the chilling breeze and not the turbine spinning. They moved out, looking for a place, a new settlement for the deviance of humankind like them. Well, they found it, a galaxy, not really a galaxy though. Frankly speaking it's merely a zone with 32 inhabitable planets, located somewhere in the dark, unknown by the world. They cut away contacts with the outside since then. Years had passed, nobody really knows where they are anymore..."

He held his words and glanced at everyone, "This is... what they called... the lost space zone of nature."

The secret had been revealed and truly people had their mind blown.

"And Xi Feng tribe came from here." A new piece of information bombarded the remaining sanity of the people. One of the three aristocrats was actually from a lost world? How could that be not shocking enough?

"According to records, the zone is inhabited by mainly martial arts practitioners and mentalist. With that in mind, I would say that's the true origin of all beauty of breakthrough made in human anatomy." The little boy's expression was showing a kind of worship, and suddenly the expression was distorted into a joy of naivety as he jumped up and down, "And now we could finally head to the legendary zone unknown to the world! I had been looking forward to go there ever since I was born!"

"Is there really such a place?" asked Fei Si to Old Jalopy.

"Uhhhhhhh." The old man seemed to have been reminded of a

bitter past regarding the place, "He's right you know."

Little boy was shocked of the statement, for Old Jalopy actually was aware of the place.

"History did mention of a natural interstellar zone like that..." His profound voice was depressed, "30 years ago, when I was still 35, at the prime of a man, I was informed of a place like this when learning the mechanics of the ancients and sadly there had barely been any actual machines created by the ancient people. So I worked hard, striving to find the place, as I wanted - with my own eyes - to witness the working of a true ancient machines. So I, with a bunch of pals as crazy and passionate as I was, barged into the unknown zone. That was a team of 9, if I remember correctly."

Fei Si never expected Old Jalopy to have such legend behind.

"We found it, to be honest," stated Old Jalopy, "though it was the most painful visit we ever experienced in our life. When we got home, there were only 2 of us left, and my other friend passed away last year."

"Holy!"

"Seriously?" There were exclamations, including one from the little boy who tried to act all mature and experienced while he waddled to Old Jalopy, "Old man, did you really get into the place?"

Old Jalopy was once looking grave, but that clumsy movement of the boy brought up a smile on him, showing an unconcerned attitude to the way he was addressed, "Yes we did, boy." He rubbed the boy's head, "Yes, we did."

"How did it look inside?" The boy was curious.

"Well, boy. That place is a rather..." It took a while for the old man to piece his thoughts, "I can't really describe it with words. Sigh, it's not something one could feel with mere description. You have to experience it yourself," he said with a bitter smile.

"Ah! Ah! Ahhh! I want to go! I wanna go!" The boy jumped in screams, finally acting like his age, though it felt like he was on a shopping day with his mom and was trying to get a toy he wanted in the shopwindow.

"It's very dangerous inside. We were lucky enough to survive. We even bumped into a spaceship of the Xue Lai clan. I wonder what happened to them after that. If it was not our great lucky, we would have been knocked down," said Old Jalopy, with fear crawling up his words.

Ye Chong was hearing the stories, while his eyes were all focused on the intergalactic layout. Ugh, there was in fact no other workaround for the escape. They surely would encounter the armies anyhow. It seemed like they could only head to the Nebula like what the boy had suggested.

Ye Chong realized he did not have much options there.

At least there were people who had been there before, they would be the tour guide then. Ye Chong was a little relieved, "Old Jalopy."

"Yes?"

"Do you still remember the way there?"

## Chapter 342: Blue Nebula

The starship had many mechanical arms installed to ensure a safe flight through the planetary ring. The arms made the ship look like a mining ship. By carefully clearing its flight path of floating rocks, Cornerstone slowly navigated through the planetary ring. The young boy's bodyguards worked skillfully, as expected.

Ye Chong contacted his base. Nothing much changed with Sang Pu and the rest. Ye Chong did not tell them of his situation, only saying that he had matters to attend to, and would only return to the base much later. He also emphasized that he would be unable to reach them for a long time, and would leave all decisions to Sang Pu. Everyone back at the base was training hard, and did not even have time to guess what was happening to Ye Chong. However, even if they did find out, they would not be able to help. That was the main reason Ye Chong chose to keep them in the dark.

The long flight was dull and uninteresting. Fei Si had already taken over the alchemy laboratory, spending most of her time in that place. She was studying the information in the blue chip.

"Your design is alright, and workable. However ..." Old Jalopy knitted his brows together as he stared at Ye Chong's design schematics on the holographic screen. "Are you sure that this flying vessel is good for assault? Its means of attack are too inflexible." The holographic screen was showing a Collision mech.

"If it's flying fast enough, and can negotiate turns easily, it can be a good weapon," Ye Chong explained.

"It puts too much stress on the pilot!" Old Jalopy shook his head.

"Then we'll improve the pilot's physique." There was no need to worry about the physique of the Sang Tribe's members.

"Simple physical collision would require a strong material for the vessel," Old Jalopy continued with disapproval.

"Oh, don't worry about that, I've just the right material."

Skeletons born out of Archipelago's strong gravity has excellent physical properties.

"Alright, I'll give it a go," Old Jalopy hesitated for a moment before nodding.

With assistance from a lecture specialized in ancient machinery, the Collision mech would definitely be improved. Ye Chong took the opportunity to stay close as Old Jalopy worked. The old man was surprised by his actions. Ancient machinery was a forgotten knowledge, it was his first time seeing someone expressing so much interest in the field. As someone who had dedicated his life to studying ancient machinery, nothing could make him happier than this. He was more than willing to share his thoughts and skills.

Ye Chong seized the opportunity to absorb all the new knowledge, often bringing in questions of his own. The young boy would sometimes come to join them, but he would quickly curl his lips in distaste and say, "Ancient machinery is so much more impractical than even photon circuitry." Ye Chong did not bother to explain himself.

Rui Bing did her own training everyday. From the first day since she began combat training under her father, she had never skipped her sessions. Persistence was the main reason that allowed her to attain Jie. On the contrary, Rui Su who had more innate talent was only an average combat expert. Ye Chong passed on everything he had on the Sanctuary's meditation practice and mentalists to her, hoping that it would help her. Ye Chong was always generous to his comrades.

Everyone stared on the holographic screen, holding their breath. On the holographic screen was a small fleet of starships, about 500 kilometers away from them. 500 kilometers in outer space was like a brush on the shoulder walking on the streets. There were 30 starships in the fleet, with mechs flying around them as security.

Everyone was tensed up. If they were discovered, or if any of the ships decided to shoot in Cornerstone's direction, they were doomed for sure.

Cornerstone flew slowly along its path. They did not accelerate, for fear of gathering attention.

Time seemed to slow down. All of them felt very anxious. This was a test of one's mental fortitude.

Time passed, second by second.

As the starship disappeared from view, everyone heaved a sigh of relief. They had passed their first hurdle. Even Ye Chong was feeling a little nervous just now, much less the rest of them. Those with lesser determination were now all exhausted from the tension.

A looming threat caused even more tension than an immediate danger.

"We really entering the nebula?" Old Jalopy asked softly, his brows furrowed with worry.

Ye Chong nodded. "Yes, we're going in!" His voice was calm but determined. He could not think of any other way to leave the quarantined planet, Zhou Jian. If they did not leave now and met with the Three Aristocratic Families, the situation would be dire.

Ye Chong was not confident that his disguised face was enough to trick the Three Aristocratic Families. Every encounter with the Three Aristocratic Families spelled danger for him. That was why Ye Chong needed to leave Zhou Jian as soon as possible.

Rui Bing did not mind where they went. She only hoped to stay by Ye Chong's side. Rui Bing caressed Guardian's ring on her finger, and her eyes softened. Rui Bing said nothing, so the rest of them kept their silence. The young boy was excited about entering the nebular, but his bodyguards all looked worried.

As they entered the nebula, Cornerstone shook violently, slowing



down even more into a snails pace. Ye Chong quickly ordered for the rocks used for camouflage to be expelled. Cornerstone immediately picked up speed.

"Activate the optical systems," Old Jalopy reminded him, "Holographic systems are no use here." He added, "All comms systems are useless here, but the interstellar positioning system is still usable." If the interstellar positioning system was active, then retreat would be an available option when necessary.

Ye Chong and the rest did not know that, just five hours after they went in, the starship fleets of Three Aristocratic Families would pass by close to where they entered the nebula.

The nebula stretched on endlessly, reaching farther than an ocean. Within the nebula, stars would shine through the thin blue mist of the nebula like jewels on blue satin, dazzling with all their radiance.

The nebula was completely different from the Red Sea that Ye Chong had encountered before. The Red Sea was like a red mist that would eventually turn thicker and stickier. The nebula, however, was like an illusory veil that surrounded the starship in all directions.

The nebulae was like a dreamy mist, with tiny dots of sparkling lights scattered about.

Soon, Cornerstone grew familiar with the territory and flew faster. The nebula did not seem to affect the ship.

"It's possible to do a warp jump in the nebula, but we have to first find the warp jump point from last time," said Old Jalopy.

"Uncle Jalopy, how did you manage to find this warp jump point?" Fei Si was curious about this.

The question struck a sad chord within Old Jalopy. His expression sobered as he said, "We met a Xue Lai Clan starship last time. They were brutes, firing on us like that. We were not match

for them, so we had to run, but they're ship was much better than ours. They were about to reach us when we decided to make a warp jump.

"I thought we were dead, but the Heavens had given us a surprise of sorts, sending us to the natural space zone."

The young boy agreed. "Grandpa's right, aristocrats like the Xue Lai Clan are all good for nothing!" He waved his little fists around, as if he was also angry for Old Jalopy.

Old Jalopy was gratified, and stroked the boy's head lovingly. The young boy enjoyed the show of affection, his eyes turning into slits like a satisfied cat. The young boy's bodyguards all felt awkward, and some even smiled wryly. The man with the blade scars standing beside the boy, however, maintained expressionless.

Old Jalopy continued his tale like he was telling it to his grandson. The young boy rested his head on his hands as he listened closely.

"The nebula was beautiful. We always admired its beauty from the outside, but it's when we're inside that I can see that it's much more beautiful here. Only by entering the nebula that you can really experience its magnificence and size. Back then, our journey started out well, and so we began to relax a little. It was until the 35th day that we came across danger!"

Now, not only the young boy, but everyone else who was unoccupied came to listen.

"We came across a whirlpool. That whirlpool was too strong. We saw a planet that's more than a hundred kilometers across sucked into it. It was shredded to pieces before it reached the center! We were all shocked, back then. Everyone was trying our best to navigate the starship out of the whirlpool. The whole thing went on for three days. Three days, before the whirlpool finally weakened, and we managed to escape its grasp."

Just when everyone was absorbed in his story, someone shouted, "Hey, what's that outside?"

# Chapter 343: The Singular Wave

In the dreamy blue nebula, a dark blue streak appeared in front of them. No one knew what it was. Old Jalopy's face suddenly paled. "Heavens! The Singular Wave!"

The blue streak grew thicker very quickly.

Everyone was shocked!

As the blue streak grew thicker, the blue nebula around the starship seemed to vibrate. Even the ship was shaking a little. Everyone onboard was keen enough to notice this. The wave appeared like a disaster on a galactic scale. Whatever hopes they had were crushed by the sight of it.

The nebula vibrated even more violently. It was suffocating to watch the endless calamitous stretch that was about to befall them. What a tempestuous blue wave! It reached up for hundreds and thousands of kilometers, and was as wide as the eyes could see.

Everyone on the ship was devastated.

Only four of them managed to keep their calm - Ye Chong, Rui Bing, the young boy and Scarface, the bodyguard. In fact, Ye Chong was nervous as well, his body tensed all over, but he knew that if he did not stay calm now, there would be no chance of surviving this threat.

This gigantic natural disaster must be avoided at all costs!

The young boy's eyes glowed up, reminding Ye Chong of Mu and Shang's bionic eyes. "Why am I thinking about that now?" Ye Chong smiled wryly to himself, and felt a little tension released from him.

"How long do we have?" The young boy asked in a peculiar and mature voice.

No one answered. They were too shocked. Ye Chong stared at the image from the optical systems and did some quick calculations in

his head.

Perhaps the danger had stimulated Ye Chong, for he felt his mind particularly clear right then as he did the calculations quickly. "15 minutes!" It was the young boy who came up with the answer first, however. After 5 seconds, Ye Chong arrived at the same conclusion. He looked to the young boy in surprise.

What impressive calculation speed!

The young boy abruptly stood up and rushed to the main photon processor. "Out of the way!" His youthful voice was full of authority.

The bodyguard beside the main photon processor was shook out of his shock, and quickly stood aside.

The young boy was too short, and he had to climb onto a chair and stand on it to reach the photon processor. His small hands pressed the controls on the photon processor awkwardly. Seeing his unfamiliar handling, Ye Chong frowned and went to the photon processor. He pushed the young boy's chair to the side and said hurriedly, "Tell me what to do."

The young boy stared for a moment before laughing and said, "Big guy, you're the best." He then turned serious and gave his first order, "Activate the weapons."

Ye Chong's hands moved cross the photon processor console smoothly, a sharp contrast to the young boy's awkward controlling. The young boy was unaffected by the thought, however. He looked perfectly calm, and even Rui Bing could sense an odd feeling of maturity in him.

"Show the weapons directory."

"Activate the energy delivery photon circuits."

"Activate the manual restoration system."

"Connect the photon circuits ..."

A long list of numbers and

names of parts came of the young boy's mouth, faster than anyone could process.

But Ye Chong heard them clearly! "What a bold plan," he thought to himself as he quickly did as told. He understood the young boy's intention well enough. The boy wanted to redirect the energy on the ship to quickly improve the firepower of the ship.

Ye Chong was surprised that the young boy was so familiar with the starship's photon circuit system. This was not something anyone would know. The starship industry was well established, and would not tolerate modifications easily, much less what they were doing now!

The thought was set aside quickly as Ye Chong focused on his work. A series of technical terms and jargons came from the young boy, and Ye Chong had to focus all his attention in order to keep up with the young boy.

It was a strange sight to behold - a young boy standing on a chair, staring at the photon processor with a grim expression, giving out orders non-stop; a young man was beside him, sweating all over as he manipulated the controls on the console at breakneck speed.

After three minutes, they showed no signs of stopping what they were doing. The young boy's forehead was already covered in sweat, but he was still spitting out technical terminologies as quick as he could. His blue eyes shone brightly. Ye Chong was drenched in sweat as he worked on the controls.

After five minutes, the young boy's forehead was covered with beads of sweat, and his face was growing slightly pale. Sweat rolled down Ye Chong's cheeks like a river, but he was still focused in his task and did not look tired at all. His hands did not slow down.

After eight minutes, the young boy's forehead had gone dry, but his face was now reddening unnaturally, and his blue eyes were glowing brightly. Ye Chong was still sweating a lot, but he was also still very tensed. His hands were still as fast as before, and he was

now slightly faster than the boy's orders.

After 12 minutes, they were finally done! The young boy was looking deadly pale, and Ye Chong noticed that the boy was a little out of breath. However, he continued to stand on the chair. While he was there funnily standing on the chair, no one laughed at him, not even Ye Chong. He had proved his own strength with his actions.

The young boy looked at his bodyguards and said, "Everyone, take a shooting hub each. You must destroy all the large rocks around us." After that, he closed his eyes and slumped onto his chair. Ye Chong quickly swooped up him and brought him to Rui Bing. "Please take care of him."

"Alright," Rui Bing nodded. There was nothing else she could do for the moment.

Scarface moved first, sitting inside one of the shooting hubs silently. The other bodyguards finally got themselves together. They were deeply ashamed. In the He Yue Galaxy, it was a disgrace to have the young master sacrificing for them in the face of danger.

Everyone took their places at the shooting hubs.

The starship had 15 shooting hubs. They were usually automated, but can be switched to manual for trained shooters.

Ye Chong could not help at all. There was nothing he could do in their situation now. In fact, what they were doing now had very limited effect. Perhaps only divine intervention could help them escape unscathed.

Ye Chong stared at the holographic screen, his muscles all tensed up.

The starship was shaking violently. Old Jalopy and Fei Si had already secured themselves. Ye Chong and Rui Bing knew combat, so it was still manageable for them.

Only three minutes left, before the huge wave would strike on

Cornerstone. Everyone looked miserable. When you're watching an endless stretch of a tsunami coming towards you, that fear that came from the depths of your heart would sear through every inch of your nerves.

It was completely silent, but they could almost hear the deafening roars of thunder outside.

Even Scarface with his usual calmness had his hands whitening from gripping too firmly on the shooting controls.

The starship was climbing upwards, but its engines were nothing against the huge wave. It was like a tiny sailboat riding a wave in the storm.

It was close now!

The wave was like an endless stretch of dark blue walls, coming down onto them with all of Heaven's wrath.

Suddenly, the first laser beam was fired from the starship. Ye Chong knew that it must be from Scarface. The rest of the bodyguards quickly recovered from their initial shock as well.

Laser beams were shot across space like rain. While the laser beams looked so insignificant in the face of such a humongous wave, barely perceptible amidst the natural phenomenon, it represented the iron will and determination of mankind against nature. This was how mankind had come to their present state of civilization.

When an ant faced an elephant, how could it just give up without a struggle against the giant animal's strength? How could it just allow the elephant to stare down at it while its huge foot came crashing down?

Everyone did their best. Ye Chong found that the bodyguards excelled at shooting. Scarface was the best of them. It was as though he did not need to lock on his targets at all. He never stopped shooting, and never missed.



The fact was, Ye Chong and the young boy had the same concern. The most terrifying part of the huge wave was not its sheer strength, but the rocks and other solid material that were pushed in front of its path. These rocks were highly dangerous at their speed. Besides, if the rocks were big enough, they could smash their starship into smithereens.

Hence, the young boy had came up with the idea of redirecting the energy available to increase the starship's firepower, then using the bodyguards' excellent shooting skills to deal with the large rocks.

Bang! The starship was hit. The world turned upside down. Fei Si vomited all over, and Old Jalopy was not looking too good as well. Only Ye Chong and Rui Bing stood where they were, unaffected. The young boy in Rui Bing's hands was also not looking so well.

It was surprising that the seemingly weak bodyguards could now be so capable. They fired competently. Any slightly larger rock that came into range would be fired upon. Despite the ship's unstable flight, they managed to shoot with tremendous accuracy.

Plop! Plop! Plop! Debris rained down on the starship's armor with an otherworldly quality. However, no one was in the mood to appreciate it.

The alarm blared, and Ye Chong felt his heart skipped a beat.

# Chapter 344: Between Life and Death

"Armor is breached, please repair immediately." The melodic voice made a shocking announcement. Ye Chong quickly returned to his position before the photon processor console. The ship was shaking violently, so he needed to direct some of his attention on keeping it steady.

The debris was too dense. The individual rocks were small, but the continuous damage had taken its toll. The armor was breached in a few places, leaving tiny holes in it. The holes were small, but would widen without timely reparation. When that happens, the whole ship would go down.

Ye Chong tensed up as he stared fixedly on the holographic screen, his slender fingers flying across the console like a pianist performing a mysterious piece, or a flower unfurling its petals. His ten fingers issued command after command to the starship's systems.

Ye Chong was like a fireman. He needed to find the breaches as soon as possible and repair them quickly. Fortunately, the starship was equipped with specialized reparation systems, or Ye Chong would have to do it all by himself. Not even 10 Ye Chongs would be enough to fix all the breaches in time.

Ye Chong's mind was a blank as he did the insane reparation work. He was already at his speed limit with his hands. His hands were too stressed, as they were almost going to cramp. However, there was not much time to think about all these. The longer he held on, the higher the chance of pulling it off.

Ye Chong breathed heavily as Rui Bing watched him with concern.

There were more and more breaches, and their chances were getting lower and lower. Unlike the calmness in Ye Chong's mind, his eyes were burning wildly as he struggled. Surrender was not in

his nature.

20 seconds more! Ye Chong's head was crystal clear. He knew exactly how long it was before the starship yielded to the breaches.

15 seconds! Ye Chong's hands danced wildly on the console.

10 seconds! He did not give up, gritting his teeth as he worked.

Eight seconds! His eyes reflected the final drop of hope before the ultimate despair.

Seven seconds! The undying flame continued to dance in his eyes.

Six seconds! Ye Chong's madness was suddenly replaced by an indescribable peace.

Was he really going to die here? Was this end of his life?

Five seconds! Ye Chong suddenly realized that the new breaches were happening slower.

His dreadfully calm heart beat made him hopeful once again. Ye Chong could hear every beat of his heart. Time seemed to slow down. His hands seemed to slow down and his eyes could clearly see every movement of his fingers.

"I need to be faster!"

He shouted in his heart. Five seconds. He now had five seconds! In these five seconds, he must not err in controlling the starship. Any mistake would bury this final hope forever.

The human will to survive was a force to reckon with.

Ye Chong felt like all his fatigue was swept away. His hands moved faster than ever before, and his thoughts came with unprecedented clarity. With his enhanced mental capacity, everything seemed to slow down and clear up.

Finally, just when the starship was three seconds away from exploding, Ye Chong reached a reparation speed that balanced out

the damage due to the new breaches.

The number of new breaches became less and less. Ye Chong controlled the ship steadily, not once making a mistake or delaying any precious second.

Five seconds ... 10 seconds ... 15 seconds ...

Slowly but surely, Ye Chong lengthened the time until the starship exploded.

When the new breaches stopped happening, Ye Chong also managed to repair all the holes in the ship.

Success!

Even the calm Ye Chong wanted to raise his hands and scream. However, he found that he could not do that. He could not even move a single finger. His body felt like lead, and his head was heavy. His vision was turning blurry. If Ye Chong was still clear headed now, he would notice that his hands were trembling wildly. His hands were cramping.

However, he saw nothing at all. His consciousness was escaping him. The light in his vision slowly faded out into darkness. He blacked out.

"Ye!" Rui Bing's face that was the nevermelting ice on the coldest planet in the galaxy finally softened. She rushed to Ye Chong and caught him as he slumped to the floor.

Ye Chong heard a faint cry through his slipping consciousness, and recognized Rui Bing's voice.

He awoke later, and the first person he saw was Rui Bing. She was caressing his hands quietly.

"You're awake," Rui Bing sounded overjoyed.

Ye Chong said nothing, his large eyes staring at Rui Bing's eyes.

Ye Chong was quiet for such a long time that Rui Bing grew nervous and asked, "What is it? Are you hurt anywhere?"

Still Ye Chong looked at Rui Bing steadily without speaking.

Rui Bing was even more anxious now. She put her right hand on Ye Chong's forehead. "What is it? Don't scare me like this. Speak!" Rui Bing had lost all the assuredness as a Jie expert by now.

"You're worried about me?" Ye Chong asked.

"Yes, of course I'm worried." Rui Bing looked at Ye Chong curiously.

"You care for me?" Ye Chong continued asking.

"Yes, of course I care." Rui Bing's eyes were filled with concern. Was his brain affected? But how could that be?

"Why do you care for me?" Ye Chong asked as he stared deep into Rui Bing's eyes.

After a long pause ... "I'm your wife," Rui Bing said this casually. She understood immediately that Ye Chong's brain was not damaged.

"Wife? The woman who will live with me forever?" Ye Chong remembered something like that from a book.

Rui Bing lowered her head as she continued caressing Ye Chong's hands, and said with soft but determined voice, "Yes."

Ye Chong saw the resolution in Rui Bing's eyes, and found himself moved by this simple declaration. He suddenly remembered Mu and Shang. All this while, he had thought that only Mu and Shang would live with him, but now another person had just promised to stay with him forever.

"Why?"

"Because I'm your wife," Rui Bing looked at Ye Chong and said this softly, but her heart was beating furiously.

"Wife. Are you sure?" Ye Chong looked steadily at Rui Bing.

"Yes." Rui Bing returned a steady gaze.

"Living together forever ..." Ye Chong muttered to himself. Abruptly, he lifted his head and said, "Don't husband and wife kiss? Teach me!"

Cornerstone was lucky enough to survive the terrifying Singular Wave. In fact, Cornerstone was now being pushed by the wave. They had no idea where they were now. What happened then was odd indeed. After bracing the initial force of the wave, Cornerstone became part of the Singular Wave. Debris surrounded the starship. While they were fatal before, now they were travelling at the same velocity as the Cornerstone itself, so the tiny rocks outside were now harmless.

The young boy awakened earlier than Ye Chong. He studied Ye Chong for awhile and exclaimed with his young, innocent voice, "Big guy, you're so cool!"

Ye Chong looked at himself and smiled wryly inside. He was badly injured this time. His hands were completely swollen from wrist to the fingertips. Any small movement would invite a sharp pain. Besides, his arms and back were aching.

"Big guy, what did you say to your wife just now? Hehe, why'd she blush so much? And even ran off?" The young boy's innocent face turned evil.

Ye Chong thought about it, and answered, "We were discussing something academic." Kissing must be a kind of skill, right? Ye Chong was not so sure about it. Too bad Rui Bing was not here to help him, so he could only make his best guess.

"Hehe ..." The young boy swung his legs and laughed teasingly.

Ye Chong suddenly thought of something. "What's your name?"

"Yu Shan," the young boy answered easily.

It was an unfamiliar name. Ye Chong did not get anything out of it.

After a moment's hesitation, Ye Chong asked, "Do you know

Shang?"

"Shang?" The young boy asked, curious. "Who's that?"

Ye Chong could see every detail of the young boy's expression, but he was disappointed to find that the boy was not lying. Did he really now know Shang? Then why did he feel that both of them were so similar to each other?

Nonetheless, Ye Chong was not too curious about it. He would not put himself in danger just because of a moment's curiosity. If he did not feel that the young boy was similar to Shang, Ye Chong would never have asked that question.

"Never mind then," Ye Chong lost interest immediately.

"Big guy, your hands were awesome!" The young boy's eyes were filled with admiration and approval. "I've seen the records for when you were handling the ship. It's amazing! So fast, and with zero error, so cool!"

"It's nothing," Ye Chong answered dismissively. He thought of his time on the trash planet, when Mu supervised his training with the steel beads.

"Big guy, can you teach me?" The young boy looked to Ye Chong with eyes full of hope.

# Chapter 345: Coraplatinum

"No," Ye Chong declined without hesitation. While this was not some unique way of training, Ye Chong would not simply teach to someone else what Mu/Shang had taught to him. Besides, the young boy was so physically weak that the hand speed training would not be effective without a few years' worth of practice. It would also not improve their current situation. Ye Chong would not commit himself to such pointless endeavors.

The young boy pouted with dissatisfaction. "Humph! Who cares anyway?"

Outside the ship was an infinite stretch of the nebula that surrounded the starship like a thin veil. The faint blue nebula was not uniformly blue across. There were patches of lighter or darker shades here and there, irregularities that could only be noticed by careful observation.

Suddenly, an empty space that was tens of kilometers wide appeared on the starship's holographic screen. This empty path in space was so obvious that it was impossible to miss it.

"Ah, that's it!" Old Jalopy stood up abruptly, pointing on the image on the holographic screen with excitement.

"What is it?" Ye Chong studied the empty path.

After a moment's pause, Old Jalopy calmed down and explained, "30 years ago, we went along a path that looked like this to the warp jump point."

The news was encouraging to them all.

"But I'm not entirely sure that it's this one!" After some more hesitation, Old Jalopy declared while studying the path on the holographic screen.

Even though this was not the best outcome for them, it was still good news. The young boy's bodyguards' spirits were lifted. They



had just gone through a massive battle and were not fully recovered yet, with the look of fatigue on their faces. Scarface, however, seemed to be his usual self with his wooden expression unaltered.

Fei Si was alone in the alchemy room. The Singular Wave incident a few days ago had destroyed many pieces of equipment in the laboratory. She was busy doing the clean up, since no one could help her with it.

The starship slowly approached the empty stretch of space, but the question of which direction to take was a difficult one. As the only person in charge, Ye Chong decided to choose one at random.

Flying in the empty path was no different than flying in the nebula. The journey was not faster nor slower.

How did this empty space came about? Why would there be no stars here? No one knew. The universe was filled with many unexplained phenomena, too many to count. In any case, Ye Chong would not waste his time figuring them out.

The starship flew along the empty path at high speed. Without any reference coordinates, they could not do a warp jump, and had to settle for normal flight.

On the tenth day, the dull view outside finally changed.

The faint blue nebula was no longer there, but replaced with a olive coloured nebula. This olive nebula was thicker than the faint blue nebula. It was like a green-brown cumulonimbus, giving off a fluffy sense of texture. The scary thing about this olive coloured nebula was its inherent instability.

There were constantly streaks of light that flew across the skies in the olive nebula. The further in they went, the more those streaks appeared. Finally, it was not just the occasional streaks, but the whole space around them was filled with these golden fiery streaks flying around.

The olive nebula was dangerous. This suspicion was quickly proven right.

A rock, big as a hill, slowly floated into the olive nebula.

It was like throwing a lighted match into boiling oil. The unstable nebula reacted violently.

The golden fiery streaks moved towards the rock like sharks, surrounding it closely. In the blink of an eye, the entire rock was completely covered with the fire, leaving only a barely visible silhouette.

From afar, the rock looked like a glowing mass of golden fire. One could make out the fiery streaks swimming in the golden mass.

Everyone stared at the sudden change. They had never seen anything like it, not even Old Jalopy in his last trip here.

Before anyone could react, the dazzling gold mass changed again. It shrunk rapidly inwards. The dazzling gold mass shrunk so quickly that its diameter was halved every three seconds.

After five minutes, the glowing rock that was as tall as a hill was two meters across. It was also shaped like a perfect spherical mass of gold.

The spherical fiery mass slowly dimmed down, and the rock was finally exposed again from underneath. A dark red lava in spherical form floated silently in the olive nebula, with the occasional fiery streak flying around it.

Everyone was shocked.

In just five minutes, the rock had been burned down to a spherical lava ball two meters across. What a terrifying power! The inexplicable power of the universe was demonstrated right before their eyes.

Ye Chong felt a chill down his spine. If their starship had

accidentally entered the olive nebula, what would have happened? The starship would probably melt into metallic liquid, while the rest of them would probably burn up into ashes.

Cornerstone carefully traversed the empty path, wary of accidentally entering the olive nebula.

It was fortunate that the young boy's bodyguards were all capable. Up until now, Cornerstone had flew without error.

Another 10 days passed. Everyone but Fei Si had lived through those 10 days in fear. Fei Si was too absorbed in her work cleaning up the alchemy lab that she did not know what happened outside, and hence, was not worried at all.

The olive nebula began to change again. The olive coloured nebula that looked like a cumulonimbus began to grow faint, then turned blue. Surprisingly, the nebula was filled with twinkling lights.

The terrifying fire streaks were no longer in sight. The aqua blue nebula was twinkling with blue lights, like a blue world out of a fairy tale.

Unlike the violent olive nebula, this one was quiet like the young miss of a respectable family. There was no fire, no explosions, only an all-encompassing twinkling blue nebula.

Aside that, the nebula was also filled with many floating rocks. These rocks came in many types, and Ye Chong could not identify most of them.

The rocks were irregular in shape and size, but they were all quietly suspended in the twinkling blue nebula.

Ye Chong was already standing by the holographic screen, staring fixedly at it. His face was calm, but inside he was very much shaken. This was like a natural ore gallery, filled with all kinds of rare minerals.

His eyes swept through the floating rocks, when Ye Chong

suddenly widened his eyes and gasped, "Coraplatinum!" Given Ye Chong's cool nature, not many things could surprise him like this!

"Coraplatinum? Where? Where?" The young boy rushed to the screen, his blue eyes lit up with curiosity. "There is coraplatinum here?" He tiptoed and stretched his neck upwards, but he was too short and too far from the holographic screen. He tilted his head in thought. Then, he turned to one of his bodyguards, waved him over and said in his childish voice, "Lift me up."

The bodyguard quickly carried the boy up and placed him on his shoulder.

The young boy patted on the bodyguard's head, urging him further, "Move forward ... Forward ... Okay okay ... Stop!"

The young boy looked up and muttered to himself, "It's really coraplatinum." He looked very interested.

On the holographic screen was an irregular shaped grey-blue ore, covered with many tiny white crosses. The white crosses looked intricate, and they were all perfectly symmetric crosses. Seen from afar, coraplatinum looked like a grey-blue rock covered with many white spots, not standing out at all.

Ye Chong stared blankly at the coraplatinum, struggling inside.

Coraplatinum was something Ye Chong had been looking for all this while. It was instrumental in repairing Mu and Shang. With coraplatinum, the chances were higher for Mu and Shang to be repaired. However, not even Mu and Shang knew where coraplatinum could be found.

"So it's actually from here!" Ye Chong stared at the holographic screen, muttering to himself.

He suddenly thought of a question, and turned to face the young boy. "You know coraplatinum?" This was a rare ore, and not many would know about it. Just where did the young boy come to know about this ore?

The young boy replied dismissively, "Of course I know it. Coraplatinum's good stuff, a pity it's so rare. This is the first time I've seen it for real." To him, coraplatinum was only some kind of rare item.

Ye Chong turned to Old Jalopy and asked, "Professor, is this nebula dangerous?"

"Probably not," Old Jalopy answered, "Last time, Xue Lai Clan had attacked us from in there."

"Xue Lai Clan?" Ye Chong raised his brow and considered that fact.

The young boy was growing excited and jubilant. "Wah ...."

After a long moment, Ye Chong lifted his head and said, "Enter this nebula."

The young boy looked at Ye Chong curiously. "You want coraplatinum? But why? It's melting point is very high, making it difficult to extract!"

Ye Chong ignored him and looked towards the bodyguards in charge of flying the ship.

The bodyguards hesitated for a moment, but quickly altered their course towards the nebula.

The starship's entrance into the area immediately caused a disturbance. The silently floating rocks were dense, so when Cornerstone entered the nebula, a chain reaction was initiated. The rocks that were pushed off the starship collided into other rocks. Some of the motionless rocks began to move.

This was a big inconvenience for Ye Chong and the others. With the chaotic situation, it was difficult to find their target. Cornerstone flew at its minimum speed, but the chaos continued to spread out wide.

Ye Chong kept his eyes fixed on the coraplatinum, afraid to lose

sight of it.

Fortunately, the coraplatinum was not hit by any of the other mineral rocks. It continued to float silently where it was.

Cornerstone was equipped with many mechanical arms, and this made it efficient for collecting materials outside. Ye Chong carefully maneuvered one of the mechanical arms himself. When the mechanical arm had the coraplatinum firmly in its grasp, Ye Chong finally heaved a sigh of relief.

The coraplatinum was larger than Ye Chong anticipated, weighing more than three tonnes.

"What a big coraplatinum!" The young boy circled around the coraplatinum, caressing its natural white crosses on the ore.

Ye Chong felt excited. With this coraplatinum, Mu and Shang would be repaired soon. Mu and Shang only needed the one arm and a small part of the pilot cabin repaired. This piece of coraplatinum would be more than enough for that, perhaps leaving some to spare.

Ye Chong looked at the chaotic situation around him regretfully. With the rocks flying all over, it was impossible to take more of them. It was simply a pity, missing out on those rare ores. Ye Chong saw a few rare ores already floating further and further away from him.

There was no helping it. Ye Chong ordered for Cornerstone to leave the nebula.

Cornerstone continued on its journey in the empty path.

The flight continued on for another 20 days along the empty path. Just when everyone, including Old Jalopy, believed that they had gone in the wrong direction, or in the wrong empty path altogether, the warp jump point that Old Jalopy had been telling them repeatedly about finally appeared before them.

The starship went from the empty path into a vast void region.

This was a region tens of thousands of kilometers across, without any nebula to be seen. If the empty path was a strange sight, then this vast empty region was even more curious.

Old Jalopy stood up abruptly and gasped in joy, "Ah! It's here, it's here!" All of them could hear the excitement in his words.

The dispirited crowd was immediately encouraged. They stood up and asked, "Where? Where is it?"

"Over there!" Old Jalopy pointed towards the center of the region.

At the dead center of the region was a flat, colourful disc. On the holographic screen, the disc was further enlarged for viewing. What they saw now was a disc about two kilometers across, made up of nebulae of all kinds of colors. There were the faint blue, green-brown and twinkling blue ones that Ye Chong and the rest had seen, and some dazzling colors such as deep red, bright yellow ... It was like an exhibit of colors. The colorful nebulae were dispersed in the disc without any apparent order. The strangest part was that the colorful disc had a strange and slow ripple spreading across it.

The ripples started from the center of the disc, spreading outwards slowly.

The center of the disc was empty, but it was like a beating heart, bringing motion to the nebulae around it. It was a curious sight to behold.

"The warp jump point is at the center of the disc!" Old Jalopy's voice sounded dreamy, like the interesting disc they were looking at.

## Chapter 346: Child Abductor

"This is Dankwood planet," Old Jalopy introduced the brown-gray planet on the holographic screen, being the only one who had ever been there. After days of continuous flight, everyone was in a state of high tension. Now that there were no more inexplicable things around them, they finally heaved a sigh of relief.

"It's best if we land at nighttime. The aborigines there are very sensitive to starships and the like. Once they identified us as outsiders with a starship and mechs, we'll be hunted down," Old Jalopy warned, "Don't underestimate these aborigines. They can be very scary in some ways."

Old Jalopy looked at Ye Chong and Rui Bing and he spoke. Only the two of them had mechs here. Ye Chong nodded. It pays to listen to the expert.

Night came, and Cornerstone made its silent descent into the sea.

They boarded a landing boat and headed for the shore. This was where Old Jalopy and his crew had landed last time.

Once the landing boat returned into the sea, back to their starship, Old Jalopy turned to everyone and said, "Make sure there's nothing conspicuous on any of you, like dimension keystones or communication devices." These words were actually all directed towards Ye Chong, since he had destroyed everything that the young boy and his bodyguards had on them.

Rui Bing was wearing her snow white training garb. To Old Jalopy, she looked like a native the most. The Guardian ring on her finger was made to look like a dull ring, a design that Gu Shaoze had favored for some reason.

Ye Chong hesitated for a moment before placing Han Jia's dimension keystone and comms device into his bag.

"Shoes too." Old Jalopy pointed at their shoes, all of them made of strong and durable material. He explained, "The shoes on this



planet looked similar to hers." He pointed at Rui Bing's pair of white, traditional shoes that she was wearing.

Ye Chong took off his shoes without argument, and threw them into the sea. The rest of them exchanged uncertain looks before throwing their shoes into the sea as well.

It was quite an experience, having all of them barefoot. Old Jalopy carried Fei Si on his back as they made their advance single file. Old Jalopy elaborated as he walked, "I remember that there's a village not far from here, not sure if it's still around though. They are villages around here, big and small, but no cities. The bigger villages are not that much different from cities, though. Usually outsiders are not allowed to enter a village easily. The Hundred Tribes Village, however, is friendly to outsiders, just like our cities.

"Please also keep in mind not to say anything, let me deal with the talking. Be careful not to simply attack people. These people protect their own. If someone is treated roughly, you'll face the anger of the masses. However, please do what you have to when necessary. There are no laws here. Killing and being killed are common. Sigh, I once thought this was a utopia, but it's actually much more chaotic than our world. There is however, one thing that you must not do, and that is rape. Anyone who disobeys this rule will be on the kill list of every villager on the planet."

Ye Chong listened carefully, taking in every detail. In this unfamiliar territory, every bit of information was valuable. Scarface showed the same level of attention as Ye Chong, while the rest of the people only looked interested. "Looks like Scarface is the only one who's seen real battle," Ye Chong thought to himself.

They walked for roughly five hours before reaching a small village. This village was meagre, made up of just some dozens of families. The houses were all dilapidated. Everyone but Old Jalopy watched in surprise. They had never seen anywhere so backwards and impoverished before. Even the free accommodation provided at relief centers were much better than these houses.

"Is this a primitive society?" A bodyguard muttered.

Another bodyguard with disbelieving eyes said, "Seems to be."

Old Jalopy explained, "They have very low material productivity here. They place great importance on pushing the limits of the human body, and are extremely averse to technology. But don't look down on them. Growing up in this society, these people are determined fellas. Besides, they are all good in combat, so don't try to get into a fight with them.

"Hold it there!" A male voice yelled angrily.

Two people in clown masks came out of the village, running, each of them carrying a child in their arms. In just moments, they were already far away from the village. Behind them, a few men were in pursuit, yelling angrily. These men all looked physically robust.

They're strong! Ye Chong and Rui Bing exchanged a look, seeing the surprise in the other person's eyes. The two people in clown masks and the men in pursuit of them were all very strong.

The two masked men were slower because of their burden, and were soon caught up from behind.

The two masked men looked to each other. One of them threw the child in his hand to the other person and turned back, running towards the pursuers.

The masked man was excellent in combat, keeping all five pursuers occupied without losing ground.

"Child abductors!" Old Jalopy gasped in surprise turned to Ye Chong. "Quick, stop them!"

"You're sure?" Ye Chong tilted his head at Old Jalopy. The two masked men were strong. It was not a good idea to fight against strong opponents like them when they had only arrived here.

Old Jalopy replied urgently, "Yes, of course I'm sure! This is

important, you ..."

Before he could finish, Ye Chong was already running towards the masked men, together with Rui Bing. Ye Chong was in a black combat suit, approaching the escaping child abductor with small, irregular steps like a ghoul. Rui Bing was in her white training garb, advancing gracefully like a swan in flight.

The two of them used completely different styles, but they both reached the child abductor at the same time.

"Who might you be, do you know the consequences of interfering? ..." Before he could finish, Ye Chong made his move. He darted forward like an arrow towards the child abductor.

The abductor was shocked and was about to fight back when he found that he could not move at all!

Rui Bi was at the side, her eyes vividly bright! The Rui Family's mental attacks were unconventional, and Ye Chong's information on the mentalists' skills had helped her greatly. She had improved again without knowing it.

The blue lines crisscrossed in Ye Chong's vision clearly. Ye Chong gripped his hand into a fist and threw a seemingly light punch on the child abductor's throat.

Crack! A clear sound of breaking bones. The child abductor watched as Ye Chong stepped back with two children in his arms. The blue lines in Ye Chong's vision were stimulated when he last fought with Rui Bing, with desirable results. Now, they would only appear when Ye Chong was in a highly focused state.

This made Ye Chong overjoyed. If the blue lines continued as they were before, Ye Chong was afraid that he would ultimately turn into a mad killer.

The child abductor was not weak. In a one-on-one, he would be able to defend himself at least for awhile. However, he never imagined himself facing two Jie experts at the same time.

Ye Chong never understood the concept of one-on-one battles. He always went for the fastest way to end the battle. On the other hand, Rui Bing did not like fighting with someone else in combat, but what the child abductor did was horrible. To her, these two masked men should die for their actions, and so she acted as she did.

How could the masked man win against two Jie experts working together? He died almost instantly.

The appearance of Ye Chong and Rui Bing was encouraging for the five pursuers, while the other child abductor began to panic.

When he saw how Ye Chong and Rui Bing easily killed the child abductor, he was distracted momentarily and nearly received a punch from one of the pursuers. What an unlucky day. They had chosen to strike at dawn, when most people were still asleep and less vigilant. However, they still awoken some villagers in the end. Now, these two capable fighters suddenly showed up.

"Why are so many strong people who like to interfere in other people's business?" He thought to himself in amazement. However, there was no time to ponder further. If he did not leave soon, escape will be impossible.

With that, the child abductor disentangled himself from the five pursuers. He was about to leave when he saw the man and woman coming towards him.

He ran away in fright.

Ye Chong would never allow him to escape. Since he had decided to do this, he must be thorough. This was Ye Chong's principle. He passed the two children to Rui Bing. Ye Chong immediately picked up speed without them.

The child abductor thought he had fled in time, but then he heard a swooping sound from behind. He looked back, only to see the man in black following him closely like a ghoul. He was closing

in quickly. The child abductor was scared as hell, and ran as fast as he could.

"The forest is right in front," the child abductor thought to himself. Once he entered the forest, he would be safe. Just then, he felt a sharp pain on his back, and nearly blacked out. He could hear the sound of his bones breaking. He gritted his teeth, biting into his tongue until it bled to remain conscious.

With this determination and strength, he ran even faster and entered the faster.

Ye Chong followed the child abductor into the forest, but quickly lost sight of his target. He was surprised by this, and searched around to no avail. There was nothing he could do about it but return to his group. At least that punch he delivered would be painful enough.

## Chapter 347: The Village

When Ye Chong got back to the village, Old Jalopy was exchanging warm greetings with the villagers. Clearly, Ye Chong and Rui Bing's heroic act had gained trust of the villagers. The mommas were holding Rui Bing's hands, muttering some words imperceivable afar that made Rui Bing's face reddened as her lead lowered with a kind of embarrassed expression.

Rui Bing quickly welcomed Ye Chong upon arrival.

"Are things alright?"

Ye Chong shook his head, "The guy ran away, he took a blow from me though."

Rui Bing could not be more shocked than this. She was well-aware of her man's skill, seriously what kind of human could ever escape his grip? That person must be quite a deal. Knowing her man's battle style, he would not let go of his prey till the prey died.

"Well..." Upon seeing Rui Bing's expression, Ye Chong elaborated, "The guy disappeared right after he got into the woods. I felt strange too."

"It must be your first time of encountering the Abductor, I suppose. They are the kinds who abduct not everybody but children and are extremely skillful in hiding themselves. The more puzzling the surrounding, the more confusing they get." The villagers had been mesmerized by Ye Chong's performance before, so he was quite dignified in their words.

Ye Chong nodded and asked on, "What does the Abductor do?"

The villagers were shocked by his question, it seemed like a common sense for everyone here to know who the group of child abductors were. "Mister, are you truly unaware of the Abductor?"

"Hahahaha... Forgive my friends." Old Jalopy came into the scene hurriedly, "They came from the far, faraway. They aren't really

aware of the things here. Sigh, can't help it, they are so fascinated by the scenery here that I was asked to get them over here. Hahahahaha, and so I did you see. Please don't take it by heart if they had done anything offensive."

"Ohh!" The villagers showed understanding, with one old adult laughing brightly, "Haha, don't have to be so formal. The Abductor would have gotten their job done if there weren't you guys. That fine young man has some skills you know what, better than myself back in his age! The pretty lassie there too."

Old Jalopy smiled and turned back to Ye Chong and the group, "Abductor is a group of child-abductors. Nobody knows who they are and what they work for. They just hide in the dark and capture any child with potential who had never returned since then. People have no idea where the children had gone and what the Abductor wants them for. There would be a batch of missing children annually but somehow these child-abducting oddities seem to be extremely skillful. I swear they would make serious fortune if they ever utilize their skills by conducting classes, parents would send them the children themselves."

"Right!" Sighed the man, "With their skills, people would be flocking to their classes. And words have been heard, saying how those abducted children must have a certain standard of potential, judging by how skillful and insightful those child abductors are, though it's quite astonishing to see them here too... Man, our village actually has talented kids to be abducted. What a waste if nobody guided them to harness their talents..." And he took a look at Ye Chong, passionately.

"Hahaha!" Old Jalopy laughed and said, "Congratulations for the village still having the two talented angels intact! Once they grew up happily, the condition here surely would change! Hahaha, sadly we won't be witnessing such achievement, we have things to do or we would have taken them as apprentices." Indirectly he turned down the offer.

"Oh... Ha..." The man seemed disappointed, though his happy-go-lucky tone unchanged, "Well they have their own fate, their own tale to make. So, not to worry histories like us. I must say all of you seemed to have a long journey. All worn out and that, why don't all of you get in and have a rest? I could offer some drinks and both of us, the old men could have a nice conversation."

"Sure, sure!" Smiled Old Jalopy, "It's been quite sometime since I ever took a journey myself. I no longer know how the outside world looks, I really would be glad to get some insights from you!"

The villagers were kind as they welcomed Ye Chong and his mates in group.

The houses were broken, the pipes were broken, the barrels were broken, the people were... Ye Chong was as speechless as his mates, since they had finally come to an understanding of what Old Jalopy meant when he said the place was pretty bad in productivity. They almost thought they had turned back in time and returned to the hunting-and-gathering era. No one could see a single touch of the technologies. The fish webs were a knit of ropes, which only could be seen in the museum in today. There were fish poles, wooden chairs and porcelain basins, crudely produced. What kept the oil lamps ignited on wall was the fat of fishes they caught, as one could smell the fishiness of the room upon entry.

The walls were a fascination to Ye Chong's eyes, as every brick of them was made out of Celestine, one could even see the cuts over each piece. Apparently these bricks were removed pieces by pieces from a giant boulder of it, with bare hands. How many bare hands would that need? Ye Chong finally understood why the place respected the potency of humanity more than anything.

Anyone who could dice Celestine by bare hands must not be an ordinary. No one could cut Celestine into bricks even by brute force.



The women passed them a bowl of water each, with a sweet smile. Ye Chong took a sip. Although the water was a little muddy, it was exceptionally refreshing that Ye Chong gargled it like the others. The women seemed very pleased by their reaction.

Old Jalopy was having conversations with the villagers nearby.

"So why are the child-abductors this active today?" asked Old Jalopy.

"That was a question for us too. It was the first time we encountered this. If it weren't you and your group, those children might never see their parents again. Sigh, those abductors raided our village just because we have a weaker defense after the other major villages reinforced their security. But well... sigh, we are also as harmless as you can see. If there are some people who would consider sparing their kindness protecting us, we won't be under a plight like this. I guess we would have to send these two kids to the larger village afterwards, since both of them would never have a bright future staying with us." One of the elderly expressed. The villagers were seemingly grim as well.

"Don't feel bad about it," comforted Old Jalopy. "You can't force things to happen. At least the villagers are alert enough to see us. Things would be totally different if that did not happen."

"I had heard similar things happening in the neighboring villagers. The Wang family had informed us about the abductors days before. That was why, well, we tried hard to prepare. We would be sending the kids to Wang family maybe tomorrow. At least the family has good fighters to protect them while teaching them techniques to protect themselves. Unlike somebody, the family would be in favor of taking these kids, since they were the one eyed by the abductors at least..." Added the other villager, with somehow an undertone of Ye Chong taking those kids along.

Old Jalopy was feeling a little awkward of the situation, "Well don't look at their skills, they are still kids, they won't be

considering apprentice that soon."

"Wei! How could you speak to our guest like that?"

The villager whose name was Wei responded in embarrassment, since he himself was well-aware of how inappropriate his words were.

"Hahaha... Don't mind that, we are just having small talks!" Old Jalopy tried to keep the rage down as he made a drastic turn in the topic, "Speaking of Wang, may I ask who are the Wangs? I remembered no one of the Wang family 30 years back when I traveled here?"

"So you've been here 30 years ago? Well, we moved here only 20 years ago. The former villagers here had migrated to somewhere else when we came. And the Wang family joined the area on our second year here. The family is a very huge one I must say, 800,000 of them I heard? I have no idea why they moved here. We have also hardly spoken to each other, though I must say the place had become quieter ever since their arrival. Nobody would dare to challenge the area and our days got brighter," he said.

"This big? 800 grands of them? Such family..." Old Jalopy was astonished by the figure.

"Isn't it unbelievable? And the family had talents, lots of them. There was once a group of thieves around 300 of them scurried somewhere nearby and it only took around 50 of the Wangs to slaughter them on spot. They are surely merciless when they wave their offense, no one had survived on the day. We even travelled to the Buffalo Hill and we saw an extremely large sack laying there. And not one single thief was seen around the village ever since." One of the villagers told the tale expressively.

"Okay..." Old Jalopy frowned. It seemed like a chore to deal with this family.

"Well don't worry!" The elderly saw the worry in Old Jalopy's

brows, "The Wang family usually shows no concern towards the outsiders, as long as the outsiders behave. Nothing would happen! And the Wangs are rather friendly in nature. They would likely offer their help whenever we asked for it. Also, the village of the Wang family is the largest market you could find within the area. Whatever you need, you could get it there. If you want something sold, you could approach them too, they have fair prices you know, way better than those heartless merchants. So we would get everything to the Wang family market from time to time."

"That's great." Nodded Old Jalopy vigorously, "Now they sound quite friendly. I'm sorry but there are in fact some nasty clans out there so..."

And that was when a man's voice rang by the door, "We were informed that the village has been under an attack of the Abductor, so the Wang family sent 5 of us for assistance."

Wow, when Wang family was mentioned, they had come.

The elderly went to the door and saw 5 men standing in a row.

Ye Chong was shocked. All 5 of them were fairly armed with a green suit as their uniform. They seemed reliable and strong.

Ye Chong could tell by a glance that those men possessed some skills.

## Chapter 348: Wang Family Village I

The five visiting men soon shifted their glances on Ye Chong and the others, in which they lasted on Rui Bing the longest. Well, Ye Chong's appearance was not that look-worthy thanks to his repulsive face and feeble-looking body, unlike Rui Bing who stood there like the goddess of snow with that white garb of hers.

"Thank you for your kindest offer. The two children have been saved," replied the elder courteously.

"Saved?" The leading young man was shocked, since the child abductors were known for their skills, it would take amazing expertise for one to save a person from their grip. "Thank you for sharing the burden!" He bowed towards the group.

His focus was certainly on Rui Bing, as only Rui Bing had that look of an elite. Ye Chong? Not really, he seemed to be an adornment himself. The bodyguards of the young boy were considerably frail as well. Old Jalopy had quite a body but that was the only thing he had. Fei Si? Impossible, she probably would need a paper cutter to even tear a package open.

Rui Bing was seemingly unmoved by anything. She was cool as the ice. It would sound like a total bogus if one were to tell everybody she was not an elite, especially when there was this unpleasant looking young man standing by her side. The addition of this young man simply enhanced her appearance.

Well, despite her cool beauty, the men withdrew their stare quickly, which was quite a move of a gentleman. They looked at the elder, "The two children must be a true talent that the abductors eyed them. The master of the family intends to take them as apprentice, I wonder if that's alright?"

"That'll be fantastic!" said the elder, "It would be an honor for our kids to be chosen by the Wang family. Oh how can we say no to that? Please thank on my behalf."

Certainly the 5 men from the Wang family were enjoying the hurrahs of the people, as the leading one nodded, "Then how about we pay their parents a visit? We might need you to visit our village since we would need to gain your consent as well. The children, I suggest to have them at our village for the moment. Well, it was not because we do not trust the capability of the master guardian here. It's safer when there are fewer guardsmen while there would be more playmates for the children."

The leading one was known as Wang Meng and as one could observe he was rather persuasive since his speech literally covered almost every aspect. Two pairs of parents came out of the crowd, looking glad and proud, as they believed their son would have a bright future once he joined the Wangs.

Wang Meng smiled on. He looked at Ye Chong and the others, "Fellow guests from far, faraway, how about staying at our village for the next two days? It's the season of Magnosia. The Magnosia flower is pretty well-known in this area."

The group looked at Ye Chong. He had to make the decision. No one else would dare to take the flag.

Wang Meng was feeling strange towards the reaction of the group. The stare clearly converged at that ugly boy. Did that mean the ugly boy was the leader? How? Wang Meng could not see anything worthy of leadership on that boy, especially when the great heroine was actually under his order...

Wang Meng could not comprehend.

"You make the choice," stated Ye Chong, glanced at Old Jalopy. It would be better for the tour guide to make the decision.

"Hmmm..." Old Jalopy eventually did not decline the invitation, "We could go if it was not a trouble to the family." It would be bad if they rejected the big family right in the face...

Wait what? The first person in command is this filthy looking

boy with little to none strength, while the second person in command turned out to be that plain old man, and not that exquisite-looking lady? I don't get it.

Wang Meng was confused, since their perception of a leader would be someone of great strength and status, not these... ordinary folks... "You are being too formal. The master would be more than pleased to treat you all."

And so they moved.

Wang family village felt like an ancient fortress to Ye Chong, as the tall walls stood bright with layers and layers of Celestines stacked about 30 meters high. There was also a gate? It was an eye-opener to the folks. And yes, thanks to their dramatic reaction, Wang Meng and his men had technically presumed the group to be a bunch of folks from the undeveloped.

The place was feeling ancient, primitive, primal compared to He Yue. They walked on the pavement of Celestine, their eyes fell on all sorts of simple carriages, their ears heard the cries of the merchants by their wooden stalls. Ye Chong was overwhelmed by the happening village. The stalls were also offering all kinds of strange things which mostly appeared to be foreign to Ye Chong. There were skins of animals, horns of some beasts. The clothing of the villagers was unordinary... they actually saw someone with only a pair of spotty pants, probably made out of skin of a kind of animal.

"This place is known as the largest market in the area." Smiled Wang Meng as he introduced the place, "If you need anything, don't be shy, just tell me and I'll get it for you." Of course he got to be kind. Be it He Yue or Fal or the Archipelago, people adore power and would try anything to seize that power. Rui Bing was that power the men sought from the visitors, no doubt Wang Meng would have to gain her favor.

But as time went, through his constant observation, he noticed

something weird. Among the folks, only mind of two persons seemed unreadable - one was unquestionably that white-garbed lady, the other... was actually their leader, the nasty-looking young man. The white-garbed lady's unmovable expression was understandable for her clear heart and mind, but the young man... Wang Meng could hardly imagine him doing mental training of anything. Well, he was in fact the leader of the folks. He surely had something in his pocket to keep his underlings.

Out of sudden, a man dressed like Wang Meng headed quickly to Wang Meng. Whispers were heard and he stood in his position after.

Wang Meng turned to the folks, "Fellow guests, it's our meal time soon. It would be great if we could speed things up a little. We could come back here tonight if you have anything to buy. The night market is always there for you after dusk."

## Chapter 349: Wang Family Village II

The village was way larger than the folks had imagined. It took them 30 minutes that felt like forever to reach the guest room under Wang Meng's lead.

The entrance had a simple style, a demonstration of minimalism, with staircases made out of Celestine where scratches of age could be discerned. There were two stone statues of unknown beasts, looking solemn yet unthreatening. They were carrying a flaming basin each on their back. The basin was the lighting that utilized fat-burning like the other residences in the place and fierily they burned, with hushes made as the wind blew.

A middle-aged woman was standing there with queues of men and ladies dressed in green at both sides.

She stepped ahead and gave a bow at the incoming guests, "The family welcomes fellow guests." She smiled, "It is an honor for our family to be able to entertain fellow guests with our greatest hospitality, as the master has ordered. Kindly forgive us for any inconvenience caused,"

"You are being too formal." Hurriedly Old Jalopy came to her, "You don't have to be this ceremonial..." He knew the atmosphere would only become more awkward if he did not make that move.

The woman turned to one side and rose her left hand, "Please, follow our lead, the master is waiting." The woman seemed to be in her late thirties, appearance-wise she was slightly above the average. Her figures were great, so were her manners.

And Ye Chong quickly noticed the fact that the Celestine of the staircases was also a production of armory slicing like those he saw in the small village before, except the staircases were more refined. Ye Chong believed the Celestine was cut promptly without any holdback from the cutter. One blow and the cutting was done, and not everyone could do this.



The stairs were not too tall, with a height of about 10 meters. They were then welcomed by a square platform on top, which its surface area was around 2500 square meters. 5 wooden racks were placed at both sides, where all sorts of weapons were put on them. The weapons were unordinary, even strange to Ye Chong.

The bodyguards of the young boy felt otherwise however, as they could not stand the primitiveness of the armory and began missing the weaponry ahead of time, like an energy gun for example. That was justifiable as they were not hardcore brawlers in the first place. Without those guns there were just as good as the fishmongers at the market. The little boy was very much intrigued nonetheless as he skipped his way with the scarred man at the side.

At the end of the platform there was another flight of staircases where it led to the guest room. And they finally saw the owner of this fortress-like place. To their very surprise, the one who owned this stronghold where over 800,000 trained guardsmen resided, was none other than this 20-year-old girl in the room.

"I welcome you all to the village. Please, do take a seat and taste our brilliant tea. My apology for the absence at the entrance, as my body was weak." A faint angelic sweetness could be heard in her soft voice. It sounded like a breeze on a fine morning, that it caught everyone's attention right away.

Her face was pale yet looking gorgeous. Her eyes were dreamy yet captivating. Her robe was green, as curing as her soul. Her hair danced over her shoulders as lethargically she turned her head. Her hands were fair as they rested upon the chair.

"No, it's our honor to have visited such a marvelous place," said Old Jalopy.

And they got themselves seated. The square wooden table was low with straw mattress at the side. There were a few dishes unrecognizable by Ye Chong. At one corner a basin of water and towel was placed, clearly that was for the guests to wash their

hands. As "untechnological" as one was informed, there was no hand-washer, no processor, only table and chairs along with bunches of underlings, which appeared to be rather interesting to Ye Chong.

The dining place consisted of rows, with one row of table each. There seemed to be an unwritten rule, a custom where guests would be seated in accordance to their social standing. So one could determine the placement of a specific person in the group simply by the seat. The higher the seat, the more the guest was valued. Ye Chong lacked the concept of this apparently, as he directly picked the tallest seat with Rui Bing next to him. Old Jalopy knew his position so he picked the lower place with Fei Si.

The little boy thought for a moment, took one straw mattress and sat between Ye Chong and Rui Bing. The naivety of his act brought up a smile on the sweet face of the host.

"Hey, big guy." Whispered the boy, "This lassie sure is hot." Rui Bing was sipping her tea by the side. She closed her eyes and the boy was rewarded with a smack on his head.

"Owwwiee..." The little boy rubbed his head, "I made a big mistake. I forgot your wife is here. Don't worry, Big Sister Bing." He turned to Rui Bing, "Compared to you, that woman is incompetent. Only you could handle a beast like Mister Big guy. That woman will never take him, never!"

Ye Chong remained expressionless, seemed to be unconcerned of the comments the boy had just made.

The mistress of the village lifted her chin with her hand, as her curious eyes reached the strange guests. The leading one on top was an ugly man? She waved her hands, calling the middle-aged woman.

"Does he have any talent that we could not see?" she whispered to the woman.

The middle-aged woman took a glance at Ye Chong, "He should not be an expertise in the combats." She looked at Rui Bing, "The white-garbed girl however, seemed to be one."

"I see." Pondered the mistress as she gestured the woman back to her seat.

"Shall we begin?" And the mistress commenced the course.

Ye Chong began digging in. He had never tasted these food before, although he had seen a few of them on Lunatic Guan's encyclopedia entries. He could confirm that these food was made out of natural ingredients. His pleased tongue said so. The pale greenish gelatin-like piece for example, which had these tiny feathers adorned, tasted like heaven with the little scent alluring Ye Chong. He enjoyed it so much that he took a few pieces in a row.

He was indulged in the food. He had always favored the delicacies even back when he was on Trash Planet-12. He would try his best to improve his dining experience from day to day and the period of helping Grandpa Qian working on the noodles had given him a better insight on food. So with his slightly professional sense of edibles, these dishes were a gourmet's experience.

One might say Ye Chong was a bum, but the rest of the group was enjoying the food as well, that they had to chomp every piece on the table. The little boy was munching busily, had a piece in his hand, with bits of the food all over his face. He seemed to be desperately in growing an additional hand to fit his appetite.

Most of the other Wangs at the other side were giving off a disdainful look. "Man those looks, they looked like a pig when they eat..."

"Ever heard of table manners? Are they from the countryside?"

Old Jalopy was feeling extremely embarrassed by their dining style. He would love to vanish into thin air right away. The

mannerism of the ancient was well-preserved in the natural space zone, unlike He Yue galaxy.

"It's a rare occasion of having an expert fighter as our guest. What a great opportunity as if bestowed by the god. Why don't we have a brief martial arts session as part of the entertainment today?" said the mistress, with a smile.

The "how-about" sent chills to Old Jalopy's spine, for he realized that he forgot to remind them of how it was a thing for people in the natural space zone to pick a fight on each other on occasions like this. When one that was considered as an martial arts expert entered a major village, there would be youngsters came to challenge, as a way to obtain actual combat experience and expand their views. It was common to die in a random fight like this, that no one of the space zone would show sympathy.

Strength was everything there. The residents' dream was to challenge the limits and overcome them!

Natural space zone was the heaven for both martial arts practitioners and mentalists.

With solemnity, the two apprentices of the Wang family stood at one side of the platform made out of solid rock. They gave a very formal bow towards their guests.

Wham!

The shadows intertwined, the afterimages interexchange, the swords interacted, their breaths interconnected, as the clinking of the blades rang clear as the morning dewdrop upon the water. Everyone seemed to be fascinated by the sword-dancing, except for Ye Chong. Well, most of his mates originated from a galaxy where martial arts were merely a practice to gain a better physical health in preparation for the pilot career in future. So a majority of the martial arts practitioners who retained the passion of a hand combat had hardly mastered the use of weaponry, the best thing they wielded would be their fists and legs. And that was why Ye

Chong's lance-swinging performance had stirred up such a craze among the audience back then.

The bodyguards of the little boy were pretty much astonished, "How is this even a performance? This is literally a you-die-or-I-die situation!" Even Rui Bing seemed agreeable on this exclamation, as her face tightened, not fearing of how dead serious the Wangs were in their training but the fact that she imagined the potency of a fully trained practitioner who had undergone a dead-or-alive combat practice on a daily basis.

Meanwhile, Ye Chong utterly felt nothing, as he passed a glance and carried on crunching his food. Dead-or-alive combat on a daily basis? That was the bread and butter for Ye Chong ever since he was born. Back in those days when he had to pilot little worn Winnie to hunt down those horrible mutated lifeforms, everyday he imagined himself joining the trashes at one spot on the planet. The two apprentices were not bad but nothing worth-noting in particular, especially when there was so much good food on the table for him.

Ye Chong was right of his intuitive comment. The two apprentices were in fact not bad in terms of their attributes, and because of how similar they were attribute-wise, the fight was more entertaining than ever that it caught everyone's attention, well, again, except for that ugly young man and naughty little boy who were too engaged with their meals.

Is he truly talented or he just doesn't care? The mistress could not come up with a conclusion on the personality of Ye Chong.

"Hey Big Guy. This snack isn't too shabby," muffled the boy with sweets filled his mouth.

"Mhm." And Ye Chong munched on.

Be it a dead-or-alive combat, be they potentially few of the best fighters in the family, they were still humans and it was consuming to carry on a fight so vigorously. They were sweating as

the intensity faded in their eyes. The swords crossed and were withdrawn.

They looked at their guests, made another bow, "Kindly comment."

Old Jalopy's eyes enlarged. Oh no, I forgot to tell them it is also a tradition for the special guest - the practitioners in this case - to give a few words on the performance as a kind of return in the favor of the host's hospitality.

And nobody seemed to care!

Ye Chong retained his ignorance and continued dining with the boy.

# Chapter 350: Wang Family Village III

Come on! Somebody, say something!

Old Jalopy was getting panicked, as his glaring eyes swarmed upon the others above him. And right when his heart was bursting out of nervousness, Rui Bing lifted her lips, "Mhm, right. To be honest I am not quite a master in swordsmanship, so I can't really provide guidance. But if I were to give comments on the action... it would be great if both of you could demonstrate better dexterity in every step. I believe that you could enhance your performance to a whole new level." Rui Bing was the definition of tradition herself. Certainly she was fully aware of the unwritten procedure of a typical martial arts session during meal. The tradition appeared probably during the prime time of martial arts back in the older days of 5 major galaxies.

Both apprentices gave a bright smile as they bowed, "Thank you for the comments, master!" Well, whoever that could provide a word or two would be regarded as the Master, it was part of the courtesy. And Rui Bing returned a brief smile, she recognized how precious her words could become to the people when she was presumed as the Master, that even a random comment could sound highly constructive.

The two apprentices gave one last bow and retreated.

"Wang Zishi begs for the enlightening as well!" One young man at the opposite of the table rose from his seat and quickly bowed at Rui Bing.

So it is the tradition of wrestling in actual fact! This place actually preserved such an old tradition? Muttered Rui Bing, she was already expecting a hand combat ever since the host commenced a session as an "entertainment".

Wrestling - a fight, that seemed like a harsh struggle of flesh and blood, being an attempt to send the opponent to the ground - was

typically a showdown challenge to the guests. No worries, there was a limit enforced in the hall. Every guest could fight with only one challenger. The whole meaning of this tradition was once meant for the youngsters so they could have the opportunity to learn something from the experts of the outside world. But things have changed as time passed by. The former meaning had been long-forgotten. It became a channel for flaunting. When the guest feels incompetent to fellow challengers at the other side of the table, he or she could stand up and bow at the host, forfeiting the match as surrendered. And that had become the incentives of host of every large clan, to seize every single opportunity to send off challengers, since it was a direct demonstration, depiction to the greatness of their clan.

Rui Bing stood up and bowed at the opponent, signifying acceptance. Her expression was as usual, unmoved and fearless. She had experienced fights like this before, although that was when she was the host...

The mistress beamed at Rui Bing, having high anticipation on her performance. It would be a perfect chance to take her into the family. Wang Zishi was the finest man in her family. She would be defeated, she would surely seek guidance, and that would be when she would be taken under the Wangs' apprenticeship.

Both of them, similarly, stood at each side of the platform. The man was dressed in green ancient robe, with a long sword in his hand, forming a contrast to Rui Bing's fair white garb, wavering like a snow angel.

What a perfect match! Exclaimed the mistress. Rui Bing's beauty and Wang Zishi's handsomeness were as if supposedly together since they had existed. The mistress took a glance at that filthy man too busy eating like a pig at the table, strongly believing that if Rui Bing had met Wang Zishi instead of that ugly man in the first place, she would - at a probability of 100% - choose Wang Zishi, despite the currently deep relationship between the ugly man and



Rui Bing. The mistress knew it, as a woman herself.

Wang Zishi was the definition of perfection. His combats were brilliant, while his features were bewitching, his personality was typically consisted of a heart of gold. Tons of women had flocked upon him but he spent these years wholeheartedly into the arts of combats. Not to mention his talent was as great as his person, he had improved dramatically over the years and rose upon the other seniors.

Rui Bing and Wang Zishi exchanged bows.

Rui Bing, as she had admitted before, did not have soul-connecting compatibility with weaponry. Even though fighting an armed person unarmed would be likely a losing fight, Rui Bing remained unarmed as she stood still by the rack of weapons. She might be unarmed, but she was still an experienced fighter unarmed.

"My lady, wouldn't you need a weapon?" Wang Zishi had yet launched his attack as he asked in bewilderment. The use of weaponry was the bandwagon in the natural space zone, since it would always be a plus to the fighter in a combat, even for a hand-on martial practitioner who would put on a pair of knuckles.

"Nope. I'm fine. Thank you," Rui Bing rejected politely.

"Well then, ladies first." Wang Zishi was such a gentleman, although Rui Bing did not buy that.

"Okay." Right after that syllable, an attack had zapped across the platform.

Rui Bing was at extreme speed, as if she had just disintegrated into the space. People jumped from their seats, except Ye Chong. The host expected the capabilities of Rui Bing, but not at this level! Their eyes were flushed with disbelief.

Ye Chong was the master of both strength and speed, Rui Bing was a person who spent intimate days with him, and she had

undergone training that she could be at almost the same speed as Ye Chong. So one could imagine how horrifying her speed was.

Wang Zishi flinched as intuitively he held the sword across his chest and kept brandishing towards the front.

Klink!

Wang Zishi felt a powerful force slammed upon his hand, he was so overwhelmed that he took 7 steps back.

Holy Galaxy...

Everyone except Ye Chong seemed terrified. Lady Wang, the host could hold her emotion no longer as she stood up clumsily.

Rui Bing had just condensed forces of her fist into one single orb which was gently pressed upon the handle of Wang Zishi's sword pulled gracelessly. The overwhelming strength had just sent Wang Zishi to a losing position. It was so powerful that the alloy sword actually got slightly deformed...

If the fist landed on Wang Zishi himself... he might have been...

The people dared not imagine the scenario, even the bodyguards of the little boy were shivering.

Speed was everything, speed would determine whoever made the move first and it would be a torment if one were to be put under a losing position because of a martial arts practitioner's speed.

Wang Zishi did not even manage to reposition his sword as Rui Bing made a twist, one more punch! Wang Zishi gave a dodge by tilting his body to one side.

Rui Bing was like her man, the kind who would spare the opponent no time, though unlike Ye Chong who strived for a dead-or-alive, she kept it professional as an exchange of skills.

It was pretty hard to imagine a fair lady to have such hardcore battle style while wielding such offensive move.

Rui Bing's face was calm as the water. And that was the scary as it

simply meant she was not even at her maximum yet! Wang Zishi was astounded, Rui Bing looked quite about his age, yet her skills... How?

Wang Zishi was the pride of the Wang family, the elite of the younger generation, the hope of Wangs' future and now there he was, standing there, could not even wave his sword against a mere lady. How shameful would that be if the people outside heard it?!

Wang Zishi was not as bad as he imagined himself. His skills, though seemingly incompetent compared to Rui Bing, were much greater than those two child abductors that day. The sole mistake he made however, was to let Rui Bing to go first, WITHOUT positioning his sword right first! If he had pulled his sword and held it in a battle-ready stance, the situation would have been much, much better, yet in reality he did not.

Ye Chong gave one last glance. Confirmed that the outcome had been determined, he carried on eating.

In spite of his ignorance, Wang Zishi's performance remained uncalled for to Ye Chong. Wang Zishi, knowing he might not have a chance to get his sword sword as if, calmed himself and focused on doing the incoming attacks while looking for that opportunity for a counterattack. His situation improved. He was the master of swordsmanship but step-shifting was still the fundamental to be mastered equally.

The Wang family shared a rather unique kind of step, that Rui Bing even made a mistake predicting the movement once, when she thought she had surpassed the Jie expert and gained impeccable sense of timing and movement, especially when enhanced by the techniques of Rui family, yet in fact she missed it.

It might be a mistake from her, but the Wangs were not looking great. The spectating Wangs knew it by heart that the step-shifting technique of Wang family had been utterly clutched by Rui Bing! Of course they never expected Rui Bing to have surpassed the Jie

expert in reality. The combats between Jie experts were a total different concept to those street fights they had.

Wang Zishi did not gain from that mistake Rui Bing made, as her inhuman speed had already covered the only hole, via the technique quick-shifting to readjust her position, not sparing a chance for Wang Zishi to return a move.

The steps of Wang Zishi had gotten messier. The intensity was never experienced before, so was the helplessness twitching his sanity. The opponent felt like the Great Wall, unshakeable, immutable.

Ye Chong could not help but to take another glance. He shook his head, recognizing the talent of Wang Zishi with that pair of arms bulkier than most men thanks to his sword training while being able to stand with Rui Bing for this long, "Still..." He whispered and scooped one new bowl of dish.

He was reminded of the Sangs who also wielded such sturdy flesh under the harsh condition of Archipelago while their skills were honed throughout days and nights against the beasts for survival. Their moves were much crude and straightforward, more efficient and more potent. So Ye Chong had a preference over the Sang's style.

Rui Bing's knuckle stopped few centimeters away from Wang Zishi's throat.

"Done." she claimed.

Wang Zishi's face was grim.

# Chapter 351: The Treasure Pavilion

Ever since that fight, Rui Bing's popularity reached throughout the entire village. The villagers gossiped intensely, about news of a godlike girl came and defeated the brightest star of the village, without even letting him to wield his sword! "She is also very fair! Like the angel they said!"

"Really?" It all happened within a day.

Ye Chong, likewise to his fellow teammates, was fully unaware of the attention they had attracted in the village. They were staying at Wang family mansion for the moment. Old Jalopy would love to be the tour guide but the last time he came here was 30 years ago, literally a window period of 3 decades, in which things could have changed drastically into something unrecognizable by him. And that was true, Old Jalopy was finding the place as foreign as the others, so they grew cautious.

That night.

"Yi Yu, how do you view our fellow strange guests?" The mistress looked at her trustworthy assistant, with fine fingers over her chin in grim. That frail mesmerized look of hers during the meal was nowhere to be seen.

Yi Yu was the middle-aged woman who served the guests at noon today. She pondered and she spoke, "They are indeed strange. But how... I can't really describe their strangeness."

The mistress nodded in approval. Part of her gorgeous face was engulfed by the darkness of the room, as gravely her brows furrowed in the dimness, "Keep an eye on them for the moment. It'll be a chore to settle that girl. Probably even Uncle Yun would have to spend a few turns with her in a fight. But we aren't letting an elite go like this."

"Understood, mistress," nodded Yi Yu.

The second early morning, Ye Chong was informed by the

mistress, claiming that she was occupied by administrative works at the moment and they had been given permission to tour the village as they wished.

That would be great. The entire group was very much intrigued by the happening village, including both Ye Chong and Rui bing - the pair usually indifferent to the world - who were highly interested on the ancient establishment. Ye Chong however, also sensed a danger in this village. That was reasonable as he was in an utterly foreign environment filled with people bearing a total different mindset than any other galaxy he had visited before.

Nonetheless it felt bitter in his heart when he thought of how he was getting farther and farther away from Mu Shang the more he tried to reach them. He thought by now he was exactly a few galaxies away from them, but in reality Mu Shang had already arrived by He Yue galaxy.

The village was huge, only when you were traveling by foot. The village would become a small garden to stroll once you boarded a mech. Ye Chong was calculating how many mechs it would take to raid the entire village. The strength demonstrated by the troops of Wang was already triggering red light in his mind. Wang Zishi was technically a pretty decent fighter, he lost merely because the lack of experience. And there were a population of 8 hundred thousands in the village. Imagine the number of fighters as competent as Wang Zishi in that.

Ye Chong would never buy the statement that Wang Zishi was the best fighter in the village.

There must be tons of better fighters.

And if any conflict were to happen, Ye Chong and Rui Bing might be safe but the others would be toasted. That would be an undesired situation since they would have insufficient members to operate the entire spaceship. Cornerstone would be a real stone in the corner instead of a significant foundation to his journey. It

would be a major challenge to ensure safety of everybody but it did not seem like he had other main mission to attempt on his list to proceed with his game.

The space zone was as natural as it was introduced. The village was primeval as one could imagine, not even the slightest bit of technological interference could be seen here. Every building was made out of clays and woods. It felt like a magical theme park with ridings of peculiar-looking animals.

There was this riding animal called Umen. Its limbs were strong, befitting to its gigantic size. Its paws were thick but it was docile in nature while being a steady ride lasting in journeys. There was also an animal in the pen called Hurryclaw, its action was dexterous and speedy, perfect for short, quick travel, while its front paws were armed with metallic shoes which provided it some offensive aspects.

The street was wide, flooded with crowd. Almost everyone in the strange costume of theirs was riding Umen and Hurryclaw around. There were rows of shops at both sides of the road, with strange items and fascinating scenery.

"So this is the market," said Wang Meng, "As mentioned this is the largest trading space within proximity of 300 kilometers. Merchants all around the area would run their business here, so choices are fine I guess, even though still incompetent to Village of Hundred Tribes. Do not worry, you could pick whatever you want. The mistress had just handed me a large amount of money. Keep your wallet and keep shopping." The last sentence ran dramatically.

It certainly feels great to shop all you want, especially when someone is going to pay the bill for you.

Fei Si's eyes twitched, even Rui Bing's expression melted a little as she did intend to have few new garbs in her wardrobe. Unlike men like Ye Chong, she could not stand wearing the same garb for

months.

And that was when the men learned the painful experience of going shopping with women, as the underlings of Wang Meng carrying mountains and mountains of things. Wang Meng showed his sympathy through the constant glances, pronouncing that he would never ever go shopping with women again. He could not accept the fact that Rui Bing was not monstrous only in her skills but also when she got her shopping list. Ye Chong remained expressionless however, seemed to be unaware of the weight in his hands. His stamina and patience were something impressive.

And that was when he suddenly held his steps and headed into one shop.

It was rather surprising as everybody else except Ye Chong had made their purchase of the day throughout the travel, even that scarred man bought a new dagger for himself. It was as if nothing in the market could capture Ye Chong's interests, till he stopped by that one shop.

What is there?

Wang Meng lifted his head and saw the name, "The Treasure Pavilion".

Oh he sure has some good taste.

He gave a bitter smile and followed the folks.

The Treasure Pavilion was somehow... one-of-a-kind, very much different than the other shops the folks had visited before. The pavilion was not the one with the fanciest furnishings but it just felt different. The items offered in the shop were measly, only few tens of them, pathetically measly compared to other shops, except they were given exceptional care as being kept inside a single wooden cabinet each.

There were no other customers than Ye Chong and the folks. The owner of the shop was a middle-aged man who stood



expressionlessly at the counter. The norm of friendly business courtesy seemed to be non-existent on that unsmiling face of his.

Ye Chong gave a glance around and he found what he wanted.

"How much is this?" Pointed Ye Chong at one brownish nut which had the appearance of an ostrich egg, with wavy stripes over it while exuding a particular kind of aroma.

Nobody knew what kind of nut it was.

"Not for sale." The owner looked at Ye Chong and flatly he stated, "We only do exchanges. Get something of a similar value and we'll talk."

Only exchanges? That's new...

That was new indeed. Wang Meng had once heard of this fairly odd shop with odd rules and an odd-tempered owner yet having an array of oddly good stuffs. The owner's odd temper and regulations had offended quite a number of customers when the shop first opened. Moreover the number of goodies inside the shop was envy-inducing that a handful of people coveted but all of them somehow vanished by the time things were supposed to happen.

The owner might be odd-tempered, but he seemed to be highly respected by the mistress so not many villagers would want to cause havoc in his shop.

"Exchange?" Ye Chong frowned with his head tilted.

"Yeah, yeah, only exchanges, we don't want your money," the owner emphasized.

"Well, guess I can't help you with that," shrugged Wang Meng.

"What do you want in exchange for that?" asked Ye Chong.

The owner got up and gave a close look at Ye Chong whose expression seemed convincingly determined, "Regardless of what the thing is, the deal is on as long as it's something I've never seen before."

Something he had never seen before?

Ye Chong pondered, as he took out some red strands from his bag. The red strands about breadth of a thumb were glossing in brilliant scarlet. Those were the loot from Ye Chong's adventure in the Red Sea back then, the remnants after the living strands disappeared, the very essence of their entity. The strands were highly durable, uncuttable using normal knife, only Ye Chong's modified dagger so far could leave a mark on it.

"How about this?" asked Ye Chong.

The owner jumped from his seat and took the red strands, gave a few looks, astonishment then filled his quivering cheeks. "Very strange."

And he gave a pull, a violent pull, a more violent pull. Thump~the red strand was stretched, yet it never broke no matter how violently the owner pulled.

"This is good stuff! Very resilient being! And it's so elastic! Brilliant, brilliant, brilliant!" The owner was very fascinated as he kept stretching the strand playfully. Wang Meng was astounded though... as he realized the owner was truly not an ordinary folk, judging by how the strand was pulled, the owner was clearly very powerful of his strength. No wonder the mistress once warned them to not mess with his shop.

"Deal?" asked Ye Chong.

"Deal! I'm a fool if I don't accept this deal!" He rose his brows, the owner quickly replied and happily gave Ye Chong the brown nut with both hands.

"Okay." Ye Chong took the brown nut and left the shop right away.

"Hold it right there,," shouted the owner.

"Yes?" Ye Chong seemed bewildered.

"What do you call this?" he asked Ye Chong curiously.

"I dunno. You could give it a name yourself," Ye Chong said and walked out of the Treasure Pavilion right after.

## Chapter 352: Brown Mistletoe Nut

After leaving the Pavilion of Treasures, Ye Chong went on a full shopping spree, which was very unlike himself. Everyone's hands were full of things he bought. In just a relatively short time, Ye Chong had bought more than Rui Bing and Fei Si combined. However, Wang Meng could see that he was buying tools for alchemy.

Was he an alchemist? Wang Meng looked at Ye Chong's slender physique, and believed that it must be so.

"Do you have any alchemy apparatus here?" Ye Chong turned to Wang Meng and asked. "As I thought," Wang Meng thought to himself. The guy was really an alchemist. That seemed to explain why he was the leader of this group.

He considered the examined information for a moment, but replied the man quickly, "Yes, I'll bring you to them when we get back."

Alchemists might not be as popular as combat experts or mentalists here, but it was still a respected occupation. Almost all medicine were produced by them. A group with an alchemist would have better odds surviving.

In the free space zone, alchemists were much scarcer than combat experts and mentalists. Knowledge succession in alchemy was also more stringently conducted compared to combat experts and mentalists. An established alchemist would never take more than five students in their life. Only the longstanding aristocratic families of alchemy would have special education programs, which led to a larger number of alchemists. This was why all powerful tribes would try to recruit capable alchemists.

"What are you trying to synthesize?" Fei Si was curious. This was the first time she had spoken after so many days. Unlike Ye Chong, she was a professional alchemist with years of experience. She had

wanted to stay in the starship to continue her research on the H virus. After all, the chips that Ye Chong brought from the underground base had enough content to keep her occupied for a long while. However, under Old Jalopy's insistence, she had followed the group to the shore. She took a glance at the item that Ye Chong had bought. While she was not familiar with the Guan Family's alchemy, the basic principles of alchemy remained the same.

Fei Si realized then, "Are you going to do thermal contraction?" The principle of thermal contraction was relatively obscure in modern alchemy. If she was not as knowledgeable as she was in all matters of alchemy, she would not have been able to come to this conclusion. The field of alchemy in He Yue galaxy was in many ways more similar to that of the Five Galaxies.

Ye Chong nodded, "Yes."

Their conversation made Wang Meng's heart leap in surprise. Who were these people? How could they have two alchemists with them? He could not tell how good these two alchemists were, but it was still rare to find two alchemists in the same group, much less from different schools.

Wang Meng led the group, turning left and right, before finally reaching a straw hut. The hut looked simple, but it had a refreshing scent. Ye Chong was surprised when he recognized it as the smell of whitegrass, as recorded in Lunatic Guan's chip. The smell of whitegrass had a refreshing effect. Alchemists preferred to have some in their laboratories. However, he scoured through his memories and found that whether it was the laboratories in the Five Galaxies or the He Yue galaxy, he had never seen this whitegrass that Lunatic Guan had described as commonly found.

Now, he had finally found them here.

Wang Meng knocked on the wooden door of the hut for a few times.

The wooden door creaked open, revealing a very ordinary face of a man.

Wang Mang bowed to the man. "Master Yan, I'm so sorry to disturb you. These friends are guests who just arrived yesterday. This friend here hopes to borrow some alchemy apparatus, so I had brought them here. I hope you won't mind, Master Yan."

This Master Yan studied Ye Chong, and Ye Chong did the same to him. The man looked simply ordinary. A face like that would be hard to notice in the crowd. However, Ye Chong was not fooled by the facade. He could see that his face was also treated, just like his own. This face he saw was only a disguise. However, it was a much more cunning one compared to his own crude treatment.

The other party seemed to realize that Ye Chong's face was also treated. He smiled and said, "Oh, I didn't expect to meet someone with similar interests. Please come in." It was impossible to tell his age, and his body looked weak, wrapped in plain clothing. However, an indescribable aura emanated from him. His words also had double meaning, referring both to their profession as alchemists and Ye Chong's intention of staying hidden.

"Thank you!" Ye Chong nodded in reply and stepped inside, leading the group. Ye Chong knew from his days studying under Lunatic Guan of the many taboos and unwritten rules for alchemists. However, before they entered the free space zone, the relationship between alchemists was nothing like what Lunatic Guan had said, as they were all quite easy to get along with.

Here, however, Ye Chong noticed that those weird things about alchemists that Lunatic Guan had spoken about were actually quite fitting.

Was Lunatic Guan actually from this place? Ye Chong was struck with this thought.

However, he quickly dismissed it. Now was not the time to think about these things.

The straw hut was larger than it seemed from outside, housing all kinds of equipment and apparatus. The brightly colored chemicals in the test tubes had a unique smell, hinting at their strange powers. The field of alchemy seemed shrouded in mystery.

Fei Si stared with a gaping mouth. This was the first time she had seen such primitive alchemy apparatus. There were no photon processors, no fine control devices, no vacuum seal incubators; there was only the simplest of glassware. The ingredients here were also unlike any she was familiar with. There were no purified chemicals, only plants and minerals.

"This is impossible!" She thought to herself, speechless. She knew the history of alchemy like the back of her hand. Alchemy was long separated from alchemy, and had become a field in its own right. But this? This was alchemy in its earliest stages, still fused with botany!

"Feel free to peruse the apparatus here. As for the ingredients," Master Yan glanced at the things that they had bought earlier and continued, laughing, "I believe you've brought them yourselves."

The apparatus here were too outdated. Fei Si thought that Ye Chong would definitely reject him, since she cannot imagine doing any real alchemy here.

It was a surprised to her when Ye Chong said, "Thank you!"

He must be crazy! Fei Si stared at Ye Chong in astonishment.

Ye Chong took out the brown nut from his bag. Master Yan was excited to see it. "The brown mistletoe nut, a wonderful thing. Haha, this must be from the Pavilion of Treasures. I've had my eyes on it for a long time, but I never had anything the owner's interested in to exchange for it. He'd rather keep it for himself forever, but I see that you have it now." He sighed a little, envious of Ye Chong.

Wang Meng interrupted, "Master Yan, what's this brown

mistletoe nut used for?" This question was shared by everyone else in the hut. They all knew that the nut was something good, but not what it was good for.

"The brown mistletoe nut is an extremely rare kind of ingredient to produce medicine. One as large as this is even harder to find. It is used to produce top class medication for wounds," Master Yan explained succinctly.

Top grade medication for wounds was highly valuable in the free space zone, where fights often occurred. Here, one could not find the technologically advanced medical treatments available in the Five Galaxies or He Yue galaxy. Having first grade medication would often mean saving one's life. This was something that every combat expert wished to have with them.

Master Yan noticed that Ye Chong had not began working yet, and was reminded of his own insensitivity. There was an unspoken rule between alchemists, dictating that no alchemist should observe another alchemist working without explicit permission. After all, every school of alchemists had different specializations, and many secret formulae were considered highly valuable.

Master Yan smiled self-consciously and said, "Let's all wait outside then, so that we do not disturb him." With Ye Chong's signal of approval, Rui Bing brought everyone else outside. Fei Si was actually very interested in seeing how Ye Chong could do alchemy with the primitive apparatus available, but she never did speak up about it as she quietly followed the rest of the group out of the straw hut.

The brown mistletoe nut was indeed a good ingredient to make medicine for healing wounds, but this was not its only use. Another potential of the nut was to make a strong knockout agent. Once, Ye Chong was on the receiving end of this weapon, as Lunatic Guan had used it to make Ye Chong unconscious in a matter of seconds. The short time for its effects to kick in made it an extremely powerful weapon, and an alchemist's tool of defense.



However, Ye Chong was thinking of something else. If the amount of knockout agent was enough, it could make anyone within a large effective radius unconscious.

The brown mistletoe nut had a unique scent. Ye Chong had a sharp sense of smell. That was why he could smell it from the streets, and entered the Pavilion of Treasures to obtain the brown mistletoe nut. However, he never expected it to be so hue.

Ye Chong stared at the brown mistletoe nut, thinking through everything he knew about the ingredients and steps to synthesize this knockout agent.

# Chapter 353: Storm I

Ye Chong mixed in all kinds of chemicals into the alchemy test tube. The chemicals in the test tube changed colors from brown to purple, from purple to red, red to yellow, then to green, and finally to a very faint blue. When Ye Chong added the final ingredient into the test tube, the liquid inside became clear as water.

He heated the chemical slowly, evaporating the liquid until a small amount of powder was left in the test tube. Ye Chong carefully collected the powder, chewing a cloverfall leave that he bought specially for the work he did. However, work was not finished yet. Ye Chong went to another alchemy test tube. This one was filled with a black, sticky fluid that was bubbling.

When the black, sticky fluid was no longer bubbling, Ye Chong carefully poured out the black liquid inside. Once it was out, the black liquid looked like a rubbery solid.

Ye Chong was highly focused by now. His slender fingers moved deftly, applying just enough force for everything he did.

Soon, he produced nine similarly sized black spheres. These were the strong knockout agents that Lunatic Guan had used. They had a pretty name - Night Enchantment.

Ye Chong did not use all of the brown mistletoe nut to make Night Enchantment. He used a small amount of it to make medicine for injuries. While Rock had medical facilities, he knew from his experience on the trash planet of the importance of having first aid medication nearby. After all, it was often that immediate assistance was needed in the face of danger.

When Ye Chong walked out of the straw hut, it was already getting dark. Everyone was waiting for him outside.

Everyone was relieved to see him out. Ye Chong had worked from morning till evening, and they had waited for almost a day outside. Wang Meng had arranged for someone to bring them lunch, while

Fei Si and Master Yan discussed alchemy. Fei Si did not understand the taboos between alchemists in this area, while Master Yan was interested in Fei Si's very different principles of alchemy. They had an enjoyable conversation together.

"Looks like the young man's succeeded! Congratulations!" Master Yan's voice was always so soothing.

"Thank you very much!" Ye Chong bowed in gratitude. The man had lent his apparatus for him, a very generous gesture. Ye Chong produced a medicinal pill and offered it to Master Yan, "Please take it." Wang Meng watched with jealousy. After all, this was high quality medicine, a highly coveted item for many.

Master Yan did not expect Ye Chong to actually gift him with a medicinal pill. He quickly declined, "Now, this is too precious for me to accept!"

Ye Chong could not help but frowned. He did not retract his hands, still holding them out in front of Master Yan. Master Yan noticed Ye Chong's expression and smiled gently. He did not insist further and accepted the gift. "Then I'll help myself to it. Haha, thank you for your wonderful gift, young man."

When they were back, it was time for dinner. The banquet was prepared by Chief Wang herself. Master Yan attended the banquet as well. It was apparent that Master Yan enjoyed a high reputation in the Wang Family. Ye Chong had went without food for almost a whole day and was dreadfully hungry, so he did not speak much, but wolfed down his food without care. Both Chief Wang and Master Yan smiled when they saw how Ye Chong was eating.

From then on, Ye Chong and his group were treated even better. Chief Wang had found out that Ye Chong's group had two alchemists. She had even asked Master Yan about it. Master Yan confirmed their abilities, which further assured Chief Wang.

Thus, Ye Chong and his group settled down at Chief Wang's place. They had not decided what to do next, so staying there in

the meantime was not a bad idea. Besides, they were very close to Rock from here. If anything happened, they could quickly return to their ship.

Ye Chong found himself enjoying a relatively easy life here. He visited Master Yan every day. Master Yan had the qualities of a teacher, and was, like Ye Chong, serious and focused about his work. Master Yan was incredibly knowledgeable in alchemy, much more than Ye Chong anticipated. Both of them frequently discussed topics in alchemy. Whenever this happened, Fei Si would listen quietly from the side, since the branch of alchemy they were discussing was completely different from what she was taught and practiced. However, she was still keen to learn, a necessary quality for professional alchemists.

Master Yan admired Fei Si's attitude, and would often teach her new things. Fei Si benefited from their exchange, and she gradually came to understand more about the discussion between those two men. After all, she was also well learned in alchemy, and could pick up different principles easily.

Master Yan was surprised at Ye Chong's knowledge. The young man had good memory, and a vast amount of knowledge on his fingertips. The only thing he regretted from a professional alchemist's perspective was Ye Chong's lack of application skills. He felt that Ye Chong did not seem to use alchemy to solve problems often. This was perplexing to him. Why would an alchemist not use alchemy to solve problems?

Unlike Ye Chong, Rui Bing continued training hard every day. While simple physical training was no longer enough to make her improve, she did not relax on her training. Her harsh training was enough to make beginners in combat ashamed of themselves. They would never have imagined that a Jie expert like her would still go through the most basic training routines. Outside of her usual training, Rui Bing would practice meditation, since Ye Chong had given her everything he had on mentalists.

Of all the newcomers, the young boy blended in best with the locals. He spent his time with the local girls everyday. All the women thought him cute, and the young boy's affected adorable looks were indeed quite impressive. Even Chief Wang found herself fond of the young boy.

Wang Zishi walked to Rui Bing's room. He lost his usual energetic ways, looking haggard and unlike himself. His defeat last time had struck him hard.

He stood there like a puppet for more than half an hour, his expression unreadable. Gradually, his face hardened into his usual determination.

"Wang Zishi humbly asked for my Lady to accept me as your disciple!" His resounding voice now sounded hoarse and low, but still clear as day.

Inside the room, Rui Bing sat with her eyes closed, as though she did not hear a thing.

Seeing no reaction from her part, Wang Zishi did not give up, but raised his voice slightly, "Wang Zishi humbly asked for my Lady to accept me as your disciple!"

No one could have imagined the outrage that this request would bring to the Wang Family. Wang Zishi too could not have known the consequences of his words.

The room was still silent.

Wang Zishi went down heavily to his knees, and put his head to the door. His expression was hard and resolute as he spoke again with his hoarse voice, "My Lady, please accept me as your disciple!"

Everyone panicked. The nearest Wang Family villager quickly reported this to the Chief.

Wang Zishi had always been the pride of the entire Wang Family Village. He was the idol of many young people. To think that a man like him would ask to be a disciple of an outsider! Tutelage in

combat may not be as strict as for alchemists, but for a family with its own combat history, learning under a different school was extreme taboo.

The news spread like wildfire to other members of the Wang Family Village.

All the villagers stopped what they were doing and ran towards Wang Zishi. They came in numbers, as if the place was a huge magnet, drawing the crowd in.

The people around there were silent, however. They all felt a heavy pressure on their hearts. All of them knew that something big was about to happen. They all knew that Wang Zishi was having doubts about the Wang Family's combat style. Every member of the Wang Family could feel the sharp pain of betrayal. However, they did not say a word, for this was their pride, their model, the best combat expert of the younger generation in Wang Family Village - Wang Zishi. A strong sense of humiliation permeated through them. The air was filled with tension, thick enough to cut through.

Wang Zishi was not afraid, kneeling as he was. He had thought through his decision, having had a deep struggle with himself. He knew that he would be cast aside by the Wang Family. Still he decided to do this. For him, the pursuit of mastery in combat was an ideal that he would do anything for.

Ye Chong did not know that a scandal was about to begin. At the moment, he was still discussing alchemy with Master Yan.

"You b\*stard!" A middle-aged couple rushed towards Wang Zishi. The man saw Wang Zishi kneeling there, and his heart ached! This was once his most beloved student, the one he had high hopes for, but now he was kneeling before someone else's door to ask for tuition. His heart was wrecked, and his expression turned furious.

The surrounding crowd gave way to the couple. The middle-aged man was Wang Zishi's teacher, Wang Lu. Wang Lu was not famous

in public, but he had a good reputation in the village. He was strong, but rarely showed it. His wife was also an expert of the village.

Wang Lu had a square face, with a seriousness that came naturally. His expression was even scarier now. His wife stood beside him, looking at Wang Zishi kneeling on the floor, her tears flowing down her cheeks. She knew how much effort his husband had spent on this student. They had no children, and Wang Zishi was just like their child.

"Tell me, why are you doing this?" Wang Lu did not sound angry, his voice was unusually calm. However, Mrs Wang knew that he was actually extremely furious inside.

## Chapter 354: Storm II

Bang bang bang! Wang Zishi knocked his forehead hard on the floor for nine times. Every knock was like a hammer on Wang Lu's heart, and Wang Lu's face twitched with every knock.

"Your disciple is disloyal. Your disciple has thought long and hard after the defeat that day. After 10 days of consideration, your disciple realized that, while not an expert myself, the Wang Family's combat style has many innate flaws. Your disciple has come to this decision after much consideration," Wang Zishi spoke every word clearly, but the pain in his eyes were apparent, betraying how much he had suffered to come to his decision, and the determination that he had within him.

Wang Lu's heart ached at the sight of his beloved disciple's haggard look, but was immediately angered when he heard him said that the Wang Family's combat style was flawed.

Everyone around them was silent. All the villagers looked to Wang Zishi with anger, but none of them said a word.

"Well, well, well," Wang Lu spoke staring straight at Wang Zishi. His voice was so low and strained to the limit, so near the breaking point. "Who'd have thought that the Wang Family combat style would be looked down upon by one of our own."

With that, his eyes left Wang Zishi and went for Rui Bing, still sitting straight in her room.

He breathed in deeply and raised his voice, "Wang Family's Wang Lu would like a match with my Lady, please do me the honor!"

Rui Bing opened her eyes, but she sighed inside.

From the moment Wang Zishi kneeled, she knew that this fight was inevitable. No combat school could accept his behavior, much less letting it happen in their own backyard. Ye Chong might not understand these subtleties, but as someone who was well versed with all the rules in the world of combat since she was young, Rui



Bing knew the consequences of Wang Zishi's actions.

She had no way of backing out. They would not let her. Even if she admitted openly that the Wang Family's style was better, it was too late now.

Every school had their own reputation and pride that should never be stepped on.

Knowing that words would do no good now, Rui Bing stood up and came out. She said plainly, "Please go easy on me, Mr Wang."

At that moment, Ye Chong was still discussing alchemy with Master Yan. While they frequently discussed things, they never tried to pry into each other's lives. Since they had both disguised themselves, it was clear that neither wished to share their own histories.

At first, Master Yan did not mind the problem of Ye Chong's background. Unless it was some very obscure school, he could usually quickly tell which school an alchemist belonged to. However, to his surprise, he could not say the same for Ye Chong. As they discussed more and more subjects, he found himself unable to come to a conclusion.

"The cottonia grass, for example, is a good neutral reagent, but its dosage is a bit troublesome, requiring a supplanting technique. You can use the tristellar rock in powder form instead, using an alternating hot and cold treatment process, but the result is more inferior. There are 31 kinds of neutral reagents that are so sensitive to temperature, and I've never seen many of them," Ye Chong said this with regret.

Master Yan was surprised, shocked even. Use of the cottonia grass was a secret amongst the Qian system, and he himself had known about it due to some connections with members of the Qian system. This man here was aware of even the supplanting technique! Could he be a member of Qian system?

What Ye Chong said after that surprised him even more.

Using tristellar rock powder in place of cottonia grass was an idea that came from one of the ancestors of Master Yan's own school of alchemy.

Who was this man? Master Yan's face was unreadable. His facial disguise was the only reason he did showed a wild range of expressions right then. That he was able to sit calmly as someone else spoke of a secret technique of his own school, which also spoke volumes of his mental fortitude. Moreover, he was chilled by the thought of there being 31 kinds of reagents - he himself could only think of 17 kinds, where the other 14 kinds were unknown to him.

Ye Chong was quickly becoming an enigma to Master Yan.

Wang Lu was a respectable person in the Wang Family Village, not because of his expertise in combat, but his honorable and down to earth nature. Many of the people present had never seen Wang Lu fight before. It was only now that the Wang Family villagers realize that this inconspicuous and honest elder was actually a master of combat.

The Wang Family's combat style specialized in sword techniques, and Wang Lu was able to demonstrate the full power of this technique. Wang Lu struck again and again with his sword in a seemingly leisurely pace, but the long sword was like a cocoon, trapping Rui Bing's movements.

Rui Bing wore a calm expression, stepping lightly and quickly as she returned an occasional blow, always enough to interfere with Wang Lu's attack. She seemed to be in a tight spot, but the reality was the exact opposite. There were not many people in this world who could fight on the same level as Ye Chong in close combat. Rui Bing and Ye Chong sparred frequently, never going easy on each other. Hence, Rui Bing did not panic while facing her current opponent.

She observed coldly, and slowly began to understand the Wang

Family's sword technique.

Ye Chong and Master Yan were still deep in discussion. Master Yan's knowledge in alchemy was a lot deeper than Ye Chong's, and he was much more experienced as well. Ye Chong often learned something new when Master Yan recounted some of his past experiences. As for Fei Si, she could only listen to them, barely keeping up.

Wang Family's sword techniques were slowly revealed to Rui Bing. Wang Lu's expression turned grim, and the people around began to look worried. Everyone could tell that the longer the fight dragged on, the more disadvantageous it would be for Wang Lu.

A woman in white danced easily between the raining sword attacks.

Wang Lu understood where this was going. He was about to speed up his attack when Rui Bing made her move. Rui Bing darted forward, grazing past Wang Lu's longsword by mere millimeters and went for his body.

Wang Lu was caught off guard. He flicked his wrist, and the sword hilt was driven towards Rui Bing. Rui Bing blocked it off with one hand, her eyes shining brightly, and swept her leg up silently into a kick.

Rui Bing's sudden approach surprised Wang Lu, but he kept his calm. He let go of the sword in his right hand and tried to fight Rui Bing with his bare hands. He lifted his left leg up, blocking the kick from Rui Bing. Wham! A wave of energy came from the attack, driving Wang Lu backwards as he stumbled a few steps behind. Wang Lu was surprised by her strength. No one could imagine so much raw energy in a woman like her!

Rui Bing's eyes flashed, her bent left leg straightened as she swept towards Wang Lu like a white swan, staying close to the ground. That suffocating beauty harboured a cold killing intent. Rui Bing's long hair trailed behind her, her eyes glaring sharp as a

knife. She drew her right elbow back, her palm fisted, ready to deliver the killer blow.

This was the moment of truth!

Wang Lu looked deadly pale, watching Rui Bing coming closer and closer to him. He knew that he had lost.

Perhaps she would kill him! Everything around him slowed down, his senses turning sharp than ever close to his death. Being the challenger himself, there was no reason for her to leave him alive. Besides, he had attacked with his sword earlier with the intent to kill, and she would definitely have noticed it!

Wang Lu was right. Rui Bing did feel his killing intent. In challenges similar to this, Rui Bing would not usually fight to kill. However, Wang Lu's strong killing intent had finally angered her. She could clearly sense his wish to kill her. As a true combat expert, she too had her own pride! Besides, she was no longer the naive young woman she once was.

She decided to teach Wang Lu a lesson.

Just then, a strong sense of danger struck her.

Rui Bing quickly angled her body as a flash of light drew across her sleeve. Rip! A long gash was left on the sleeve of her snow white training garb.

Mrs Wang held her sword, standing before Wang Lu. It was she who ambushed her. She was feeling very conflicted inside, since ambushing like this was a huge taboo. However, she also noticed Rui Bing's intent to kill. She could not just stand by and watch her husband killed.

The Wang Family villagers who were watching all showed embarrassed expressions, but one of them said a word. Even Wang Zishi looked conflicted. He knew that his master, Wang Lu and his wife had gone against the rules of the world of combat, but he also found himself unable to speak out. After all, he could not just stand

by and watch his master die too. After all these years of benefiting from their generosity, they were like parents to him.

A few spectators laughed, barely suppressing themselves. This was like a slap to the face of every Wang Family member. The people were reminded then that it was not only the Wang Family villagers that were watching, but many other outsiders. However, these outsiders were also smart enough to come out and offer a few words of wisdom. That would have been equivalent to suicide.

The Wang husband and wife stood side by side with their swords in their hands, their expressions unreadable.

Rui Bing's face was expressionless. Her sharp glare made Wang Lu and his wife felt guilty. Rui Bing knew that was nothing she could say now to change the situation. With her left hand, she tore away the broken sleeve on her right hand, revealing the white smooth skin beneath.

Now this was just plain offensive. She never imagined that anyone would forcefully break an unbreakable rule of the world of combat. As a conservative, she was deeply offended.

She decided to fight with all she got.

Ye Chong stood up and bid farewell to Master Yan. He had learned much from their discussion today, just like the days before this. Master Yan, however, was feeling a little dazed. Ye Chong found it curious, but knew better than to comment on it. He never would have guessed that he was the source of Master Yan's predicament.

Ye Chong headed off, along with Fei Si.

## Chapter 355: Storm III

As they walked along the street, they found it completely empty. Many of the shops were not even closed properly, the goods still on display outside.

Ye Chong was surprised. Such an unusual circumstance made him wary immediately. He quickly dragged Fei Si along as he ran forward. Fei Si gasped in surprise, and was greeted by a strong headwind before she could react.

As expected, something had happened! Ye Chong looked at the huge crowd in front, his heart missing a beat. Without a saying word, he half carried Fei Si through the crowd.

Everyone was focused on the fight between Rui Bing and the Wang Lu couple, and no one noticed Ye Chong's movements. Besides, Ye Chong moved deftly with Fei Si, sliding easily between the people.

Ye Chong and Fei Si reached the inner part of the crowd without drawing any attention.

Victor Tower was the tallest building in the Wang Village. Here, one could see the entire Wang Family Village. It was also home to the Chief. By the window on the topmost level of the tower, stood a very old man and an attractive young woman.

"What do you think?" The young woman asked with a tired voice. This was the current Chief of the Wang Family Village.

"That woman in white is a Jie expert," an ancient voice replied, sounding like an autumn's breeze. Deep wrinkles covered the old man's face, though it did not move much when he spoke.

Chief Wang was surprised. "A Jie expert? Impossible! She's so young!" The chief was caught off guard. While she knew that the old man was never wrong, she still found it hard to believe. Rui Bing was too young, and she had never heard of a Jie expert of her age. Besides, she was deeply unwilling to make enemies with a Jie

expert, but it seemed that she was left with no choice.

The old man flicked a quick glance at the young woman and shook his head. "Age? Age has got nothing to do with being a Jie expert."

"Then aren't Wang Lu and his wife in danger?" Chief Wang was worried for the couple. She did not want to village to lose two capable combat experts in one go. After all, combat experts on their level were difficult to find, much less a pair of them who could work well together.

After a long pause, the old man said, "The woman is the one in danger. She has no weapons, and it's a terrible disadvantage." He was reluctant to admit the unfair advantage offered by the swords.

The old man was right. Rui Bing was now in a dangerous situation. She never anticipated that Wang Lu and wife could be so powerful once they worked together. Besides, she had no weapon of her own to defend herself. Wang Lu and his wife had recognized this opportunity, and chose not to attack Rui Bing directly, but sought to trap her into an indefensible position.

The swords glared menacingly. Rui Bing barely avoided their attacks more than a few times. Her movements became more restricted, and Rui Bing could do nothing about it. She was not at the point where she could block sword attacks with her bare hands yet. Besides, the couple had executed their sword techniques perfectly, leaving no openings.

As sweat began to form on her forehead, Rui Bing's face remain composed.

The weapons in the building were less than five meters away from Rui Bing, but both Wang Lu and his wife had positioned themselves between them. If she could get her hands on any of the weapons, Rui Bing believed that she could create an opening herself. She only needed a chance, however small it was. Alas, the weapons were so near, yet so far away.

Her movements were restricted more and more.

Ye Chong was also aware of the dangerous situation Rui Bing was in now. However, he also knew that Rui Bing still stood a chance. The Rui Family's unique attacking skills were similar to that of the mentalists'. However, by his assessment, the best case scenario was both sides sustaining heavy injuries.

He did a quick examination of the situation. Wang Lu and his wife were steadily pushing forward, but this steady advance gave Ye Chong time. He led Fei Si quietly around the spectating crowd and into their dwellings. Everyone was focused on the ongoing battle that no one noticed Ye Chong and Fei Si slipping past them.

However, even if they noticed, they would probably pay it no mind. After all, it was a well known assumption that the only person in this strange group who could fight was Rui Bing.

Inside the building was Old Jalopy and the young boy. They were watching the battle outside anxiously. The outcome of the battle would determine their futures as well. Only Scarface seemed unperturbed.

When they saw Ye Chong returned, everyone was overjoyed. Ye Chong quickly hushed them, and they quieted down. Ye Chong took out three Night Enchantment pills, and handed them over to Scarface. He explained with a whisper, "This is a strong knockout agent. Throw it outside with force, they will explode upon impact. The effective radius is about 15 to 25 meters, takes half a second to activate." Ye Chong explained the Night Enchantment's usage briefly.

Scarface accepted the three Night Enchantment pills without a word. Ye Chong took out a bunch of small, beige colored leaves, and gave one to each of them. "This is the bufferleaf, keep one in your mouth to stay awake."

Everyone quickly put one of the beige coloured leaves into their mouths.



"Get ready to move. Rui Bing will bring you to the starship," Ye Chong gave his orders succinctly.

In that short moment, Ye Chong had done his calculations. If it was just him and Rui Bing, they could escape unscathed without issue, with a success rate of 95 percent. The problem was bringing the rest of the group with them. If they did not escape with Ye Chong and Rui Bing, then the final result would be him and Rui Bing being unable to leave the free space zone, since they would not have enough people to man the starship.

Ye Chong decided to stay back to cover them. This was, in fact, the only workable solution, if he still wanted to leave the free space zone.

Everyone understood Ye Chong's intention immediately, and were moved by his offer. They respected his sacrifice. Regardless of the situation, the decision to stay back alone and cover them was not an easy one to make.

After explaining the plan, the battle outside was also reaching a decisive point.

Rui Bing was forced into a tight space. If she did not fight back soon, there would be no hope left. Rui Bing's eyes glowed brightly as she prepared to make her move!

Just then, a figure crept up behind Wang Lu.

Up on Victory Tower, the old man's eyes widened.

Wham! Wang Lu was thrown aside like a sandbag. The sudden turn of events caught everyone off guard.

Ye Chong always attacked to kill!

He did not hold back with this punch. A huge wave of power was transferred from his fist to Wang Lu's back. It was like Wang Lu was hit by a mech head on, his body now bloody all over.

Wang Lu never expected to be ambushed. The spectators around

him were mostly the Wang Family villagers. Just who would dare to ambush him in this fight? He was focused entirely on Rui Bing, having nearly being killed by her. He treaded carefully, afraid to leave an opening for Rui Bing.

Wang Lu received the full blow from Ye Chong, and died instantly. Ye Chong looked skinny and all, but the strength that belied his physique was extraordinary. Even the Sang Tribe members, strong as they were, were no match for Ye Chong. Moreover, with the September Lan Family's unique energy amplification techniques, Ye Chong could increase the power he released by a few times over. Ye Chong had also directed his punch at a vulnerable spot on Wang Lu's body.

Everyone was shocked, but quickly recovered.

Ye Chong's actions were like throwing a bomb into a boiling pot of oil. After all, there were more than a few tens of thousands of people watching the battle, and most of them were members of the Wang Family.

They all cried for blood, closing in on him, eager to shred him into pieces!

Ye Chong did not panic, his eyes exuding an unusual calmness. At the same time, his hands were already flinging out the Night Enchantment pills he had prepared!

Puff! Puff! The two pills hit the ground with a soft sound, unnoticed amidst the chaos. However, a defense tool of Lunatic Guan's choice was nothing but powerful!

Without a sound or a flash of light, the entire crowd abruptly blacked out, lying unconscious on the ground. This resulted in a huge, empty space around Ye Chong, who was holding Rui Bing in his arms. They were the only ones standing.

The spectating crowd was so dense that if a random shoe fell from the sky, it would hit more than one of them. The Night

Enchantment did its work perfectly.

Rui Bing was unconscious as well, since the Night Enchantment worked on her too. However, Ye Chong was prepared for this. He brought Rui Bing closer to him, and did something that shocked everyone who was watching.

Ye Chong suddenly lowered his head, and kissed on an unconscious Rui Bing's lips.

Was he crazy, doing something like that at this time?!

They were further surprised to see Rui Bing awaken in Ye Chong's arms next. Both the crowd's sudden loss of consciousness and Rui Bing's awakening was astonishing to everyone who was watching.

The entire place fell silent for a moment.

Up until now, Ye Chong's plan went smoothly. The ambush and the Night Enchantment pills worked perfectly. He was holding two bufferleaves in his mouth, and had given one to Rui Bing just now. That was why she had awakened.

Just when everyone was frozen in surprise, Ye Chong hooked his bag to Rui Bing's waist, which had the starship's signkey in it.

"Take them to the starship," Ye Chong whispered into Rui Bing's ear.

Ye Chong pushed his hand that was around Rui Bing's waist outwards, and Rui Bing was flung out quickly like a white cloud towards his group.

"So far so good," Ye Chong thought to himself and relaxed a little.

Now, all he had to do was hold on until Rui Bing and the rest bring their starship over here to rescue him. His eyes swept across the awakening Wang Family villagers with a cold glare. He stepped past their bodies on the ground towards the weapons rack, and picked a lance.

Bring it on!

Surrounded by a large, dense crowd, Ye Chong stood by himself with the lance in his hand, his eyes burning with eagerness for battle.

## Chapter 356: Battle I

Rui Bing felt tears welling up in her eyes as she watched Ye Chong getting further and further away from her. She held back her tears, gathered herself, and darted towards Old Jalopy and others like a swooping white bird. She knew exactly what she had to do. On her lips were a faint taste of bufferleaf and a scent unique to Ye Chong.

"Please help us," Chief Wang pleaded. The old man shook his head grimly and said, "I will not. Wang Lu and his wife had acted dishonorably. Humph, since when has the Wang Family become too afraid to acknowledge their own flaws?" The old man's tone of disdain made Chief Wang's pale face flushed in embarrassment.

She spoke no more. From up here, she could see everything that was happening down there. She could not deny the old man's words. On the other hand, she was also unwilling to criticize the actions of Wang Lu and wife, since she understood that, should things happened in according to the rules, then many ambitious members of the younger generation would choose to leave. These people were the backbone of the Wang Family's strength. If they left, the Wang Family would lose their power in the next few decades.

She could not allow that to happen, and so she had quietly condoned the actions of Wang Lu and his wife. Ye Chong would never understand this extreme form of tribal spirit, but perhaps Rui Bing could.

Nonetheless, no one expected an alchemist, a weak fragile person like Ye Chong could be so strong!

The old man watched everything that was happening below and could not help but gasped, "What a strong killing aura!"

In fact, much blood was shed down below. Melees and close range combat were Ye Chong's preferred ways of combat, and he

excelled in them.

His lance moved unpredictably, the dark tip of the lance shining as bright as a star in outer space. The lance weaved an erratic trajectory in the air, ending the lives of people who never expected to die today. It was not dazzling or magnificent, but the flickering shine of the tip of the lance brought a chill to one's heart.

Ye Chong understood Rui Bing's nature. There was also no time to ask about the details of what happened earlier. He had wanted to use Han Jia, but quickly dismissed the idea.

He knew exactly what Han Jia meant to the people here. If he deployed Han Jia, Ye Chong was certain that no one could stop him, even if he could not wipe out the entire Wang Village. Of course, if he could escape this place, then so could Rui Bing. Ye Chong could even carry a few people with him as they escaped. However, since they were already labelled as outsiders since the beginning, showing the mechs would only invite an extreme and violent reaction from the locals.

Ye Chong was wary not only of the Wang Family members, but also of other strong fighters who took a neutral stance in this skirmish.

These include the shopkeeper of the Pavilion of Treasures and Master Yan. These days, Ye Chong came to realize that there were more strong characters in the free space zone than anywhere he had been. These people might not be a threat to him and Rui Bing, but they would be for the rest of his group. The threat could be fatal.

Better for him alone to be in danger than risking the entire group. He was confident of his own abilities, and there was always the option of retreating. However, if a few of the bodyguards died here, then they would never be able to leave the free space zone.

That was an outcome that Ye Chong must avoid at all costs.

This was why he had arrived at this seemingly dangerous plan that may not be perfect, or even the best option. However, in that short amount of time given to him, it was the best he could come up with.

In fact, Ye Chong's decision was right. Up until now, those who attacked him were all Wang Family members. He stole a glance at the neutral bystanders, seeing their look of disdain towards the Wang Family Village, and knew that he had made the right choice.

This allowed him to focus entirely on the battle before him.

He did not have the leisure of contemplating if this was the most dangerous situation he was ever caught up in. The waves of enemies were suppressed quickly. Compared to the battle against the mutants in Ze Xi Academy, this was a piece of cake.

Everyone here would have been considered highly skilled in the He Yue Galaxy, and the creme of the crop in the Five Galaxies. Ye Chong was completely surrounded by weapons of all kinds, and his clothing was nearly torn to shreds.

Ye Chong moved his hands as fast as he could.

His movements were a blur. The sound of weapons clanging against each other as he blocked them did not cease since the beginning of the mass attack. Everyone was waiting for the climax of the attack to be over, but it never happened. The battle grew fiercer, and silence never came. The horrifying sound of clashing weapons was stressing for the observers.

45 seconds!

Ye Chong had held back against the attack for a solid 45 seconds! His feet never left the ground. He was like an unyielding rock against the crashing waves of the sea.

"What strong determination," the old man at the tip of Victory Tower commented with approval.

Ye Chong was in a sorry state. His clothes were almost gone. His

shirt was full of long gashes from the weapons. Shreds of cloth were scattered in the air like butterflies.

Though Ye Chong was fast, and had keen eyesight and minimalistic combat moves, injury was still unavoidable. His nearly naked upper body was covered with many lacerations, and these bloody cuts were increasing by the second. The cuts bled, but the blood was quickly diluted by the sweat on his body.

Even though Ye Chong was now in a tight corner, no one treated him lightly. On the contrary, they were surprised and deeply impressed by him.

Just how in the world could someone fend against these attacks for 45 seconds? It would require incredible reflexes and rapid moves. More importantly, he must remain absolutely calm!

The spectators also noticed with fear that, given his tight spot, Ye Chong still managed to kill 36 villagers. This many kills, in just 45 seconds!

Ye Chong could feel his stamina depleting rapidly. The overwhelming attacks did not allow him to think. He was fighting only with his instincts. He still had three Night Enchantment pills with him, but there was no time for him to even reach for them.

"Everyone stand back!" An ancient but thundering voice exploded from the back. Everyone looked up to see three figures leaping across roofs, coming towards them.

"The Ancestral Hall Guards!" Someone in the crowd cried out. The neutral observers turned grim. If a young man like Wang Zishi was the backbone and strength of the Wang Family tribe, then the Ancestral Guards were the tribe's last and strongest line of defense. The Ancestral Guards were responsible of protecting the tribe's ancestral hall, and were usually not involved in matters of the village.

Every tribe's Ancestral Hall Guards were the the tribe's most



secretive power. It was rare for them to appear at all.

"Wonderful, Uncle Yun and the others are finally here," Chief Wang clapped her hands as she declared, happy as a child.

Just then, Ye Chong felt a the attack force from around him slacking. He immediately reacted without thinking, grasping the opportunity. Like a spring unwinded, he began to attack back madly as the restrictive force around him was gone.

The lance shone in all its glory!

With the blue lines and dots all over his vision, Ye Chong could no longer tell one person from another. He could only see a simple mosaic of blue lines and blue dots.

The lance struck without hesitation, aiming at all the blue dots he could see.

The bloodshed reached its climax.

The victims howled in pain, as dozens of people fell under his attacks, blood spraying from their wounds. Blood rained for nearly 10 meters around Ye Chong.

Everyone was shocked!

Ye Chong's head finally cleared up. He cursed his own confusion and switched to a more evasive stance. Mobile warfare [1] was a better strategy for his current situation.

"How dare you!" The three people charging towards him all looked furious, staring at him with bulging eyes. Usually, they would not get themselves involved with matters of the village, but their loyalty to the Wang Family was exceptional. Now that something so terrible was happening before them, how could they just stand by and watch?

Ye Chong ignored their raging voices as he made his next move, slipping easily between his enemies as he attacked them all like the God of Death. Wherever he passed, blood sprayed onto the ground,

and painful howls were heard. The dimly shining tip of his lance belied its sharpness.

The average lance turned into a living being in Ye Chong's deft hands. Everyone was vulnerable against it. Ye Chong had aimed at all the blue points he could see, and killed with every strike.

All the spectators paled as they watched. Ye Chong could feel some of his stamina returning. His sudden change in strategy had caught everyone off guard.

They paid the ultimate price for this.

Just then, Ye Chong heard an almost imperceivable breeze from behind him.

# Chapter 357: Battle II

An expert!?

That was the first word flashed in Ye Chong's mind. He dodged the attack and made a giant swing. The lance knocked the back aggressively.

Crash.

The part of lance shattered as the specks scratched Ye Chong's body. Ye Chong could feel the ending of his lance being chomped away. He was swinging a wooden lance after all.

The technique of the foe sent chills to his back. That was quite the strongest foe he ever fought since the Battle Royale. But he did not have that grace to give compliments, the assassin was clearly striving to slow him down!

The reason why Ye Chong could travel in the crowd seamlessly was because of his speed and unpredictable steps. But if he ever got bogged down by something, like an assassin for example, he would be sieged at any moment, conflict would happen, a crowd fight would occur, he could not be confident enough to presume he would survive from another wave of that.

Ye Chong exerted forces on the ground and backed away speedily, with his lance directly impaled with his greatest strength!

The lance vibrated vigorously as it transformed into a stack of afterimages which frightened the assassin who was unable to react in time and took his dagger to block.

Clash.

The wooden lance broke, as specks showered the surrounding. Wails were heard everywhere. Ye Chong also was wounded by the broken pieces, he felt the aches with few pieces stabbing in his back. The flowing blood was chilling his back. And he began charging forward.

The assassin was... pretty much done for. Ye Chong's attack came in like a wrecking ball that whammed right not his face. Blood was spilled and he was sent flying, crashing down a few people.

Ye Chong was able to take grasp of that assassin's appearance for one second. It was a young man, of age about Wang Zishi's, with a plain appearance.

"Get him!" He instructed and let off a few painful coughs.

The villagers then realized what that line meant. That line also inevitably put Ye Chong into danger. The villagers had been attacking brutally, though their flow of attacks was highly disorganized, that was why Ye Chong survived. But thanks to this combat order from the assassin, the situation changed as the villagers nearby all aimed at Ye Chong, not an attack but a constant clinging.

Ye Chong was stuck.

Above the Victor Tower, the elderly looked down. He seemed confused, "Who's that young man just now? He does not seem too bad compared to Wang Zishi, while being fairly intelligent."

The village owner, the mistress pondered, "Odd. I don't think I have met this person before. Very odd, how could no one be aware of such a great fighter?"

"Hah! Mistress, my fair mistress." Chuckled the elderly, "You too have that moment of blindness being unable to see talents." The mistress was embarrassed as it would be her mistake on her job if she missed a talent like the boy down there.

"Well, sometimes I-" She was going to cook up some excuses but the elderly's enlarged eyes stopped her, "Wait."

"Why? What's wrong? Did you see something?" asked the mistress.

"He's not from the Wang family!" he stated gravely.

"No?" The mistress obviously was still out of the situation, "But he's wearing a cloud robe?" The cloud robe was the apparel exclusive to the Wang family, specially for combats.

The elderly denied her reasoning with a shake of his head, "The sword technique he used was not of Wang family." The elderly was the authority at this so his statement could not be wrong.

The mistress was astonished, as realizing the oddity - a person not from her family, wearing the robe of her family in the crowd of her village - what exactly would that person want?

The place had gone chaotic. The assassin had vanished. The mistress's worry intensified.

Rui Bing sprinted, with one hand holding the little boy, the other lifting Fei Si, striving to get back to the spaceship with the folks before anything happened. She got to slow down however, not because of the weight she had to carry, but the speed of the other folks. At least they were still a little competent in combats even though they were trained to do ranged attacks, that included the scarred man who possessed the richest experience in combats. His sense of timing was the most accurate that he utilized well the 3 pieces of Night Enchantment Ye Chong gave. The timing he tossed the pill, the spot he aimed to toss the pill, both were impeccable, that the chasing villagers were getting cautious the more they were bombarded with a massive stunning spell. Rui Bing had also demonstrated her skills that convinced the villagers to not blindly bump ahead.

They were fortunate because Ye Chong was the main target in the village so the flock after Rui Bing and the folks was small to begin with. Plus the scarred man shrunk the crowd further using the Night Enchantment to keep the crowd always at a distance with the group. Well, the villagers did expect aids to come joining them soon to pin down the target.

Unlike Rui Bing's fun runaway, Ye Chong was having an epic

fight. He was in a dangerous situation. The villagers grew more intelligible in their moves after the reminder of that assassin - to not attack but to hold Ye Chong up! He started slowing down and he had lost his only weapon ever since that speck attack.

On several occasions he almost used the last 3 Night Enchantments in his possession. Those were his trump card, the last resort to his survival. He held the pills inside the muscle of his right arms. The technique of Lan of the September had given him masterly control over his muscle, that he could always launch one pill from his right arm to his palm right away on demand.

The 3 guards chased Ye Chong at a horrendous speed. Ye Chong felt puzzled. He was already troubled enough with those villagers and now 3 obviously experts came after him.

So he launched his first pill and flicked it to the crowd.

Then, as if a scene of a horror movie, the villagers, hundreds of them within the proximity of 45 meters, passed out to the ground. And Ye Chong ran through the smokescreen caused by his pill.

He panted... Ye Chong was wetted by his own blood and sweat. The moisture passed by his scratches and openings, it felt like a torture that was going to disassemble him in any second.

His lips were clipping the bufferleaf, so he was unaffected by the effects of Night Enchantment, unlike those rash villagers who charged through the smokescreen and joined the fainted crowd.

The others who just arrived by the scene held their steps, as they realized the other identity of this terrifying person - he was an alchemist, an alchemist who did not need to do a thing to stop the entire crowd. They hesitated and stood by the proximity of Night Enchantment.

They were waiting for the moment to break in, and swore that would be the last moment of Ye Chong. The weather was fine however, so the duration of Night Enchantment could be very

much maximized.

Ye Chong was feeling drained, hoping that Rui Bing and the folks would come and pick him up in the spaceship right away. A spaceship could have shown these primitives a taste of the avant-garde. It was such a shame that he forgot to bring the dimensional keystone of Han Jia or the twist would have been fun.

Everything just happened so quickly that he did not have the time to get things right.

The fatigue was real. It was shocking for him to be still able standing there.

The guards were getting more aggressive the longer they waited by the smokescreen, as curses were heard along with the sound of weapons brandishing. Ye Chong prayed his break could last till the spaceship came back. His tired eyes fell upon one of the collapsed villagers. He picked a lance, just to calm his nerves.

He lifted his head again, to see the empty sky.

Time felt extremely slow for him at the moment.

"They are not from here!" The leading villager's face tightened the moment he saw the sinking spaceship to the sea. An outsider? Outsiders were the biggest taboo in the entire natural space zone, including Dankwood planet!

Well? Good. The villagers seemed very much relieved by the conclusion. They no longer had that slight guilty on their faces. That would be the perfect reason for their committed murders to the authority of the village.

Outsiders would deserve none of their mercy.

"Few of you, head back and report to the mistress," said the one leading. "The rest of you, stay here and guard the sot with me."

The leading villager's expression seemed complicated as he saw the few villagers running away.

# Chapter 358: Battle III

Once the folks got into the spaceship, they carried on running. No time to waste. They were well-aware of the situation - if Ye Chong got into anything, they would be that part of it too. Even though most of them came only under Ye Chong's threat, they worked hard, striving to help out their fallen ally, including the little boy who was biting his lips stonily.

"Everyone. Get ready in your positions," commanded the little boy. "Sister Bing, the main processor." And she ran to the processor with her maximum speed, as the stack of afterimages traced her sprint. She then placed little boy in front of the main processor.

The little boy then quickly booted the system, while the remaining folks got to their steerings.

"Check-ups."

"All air ventilation system: normal."

"Engine system: operational."

"Detection system: operational."

He received the few notifications on the screen, as his fingers clumsily fiddled the program.

"Spaceship Pre-departure Program: Activated."

"Calculating energy remained. Performing optimized calculation. System is ready to take off."

The last task before taking off had been completed promptly. Everyone was concentrated in holding their steerings, as taking off could get as complicated as one could imagine a plane would do. It required coordination across the ship. The tasks had been completed flawlessly thus far. So it would be fine to take off.

"Next-"



Beep

Beep

"Warning."

That was not a good word to hear.

"Warning. Remaining Energy Level is less than 8%. Remaining Energy: Insufficient. Remaining Energy: Insufficient. Request unable to be completed," said the angelic-voiced system.

Rui Bing's face was drained.

...

Pant

Pant Pant...

Ye Chong was catching his breath. The air filled with Night Enchantment was slightly sweet, yet it scorched his throat every time he breathed. Sweat rolled over his bloody body. He was breathing heavily. His expression was still, yet there was blood at corner of his lips, along with scratches over his body. People were amazed by his vitality - that was the only they could do anyway as they were blocked off by the mist of Night Enchantment.

"I have an idea!" Right when they felt helpless of the situation, a genius gave an idea, "Throw your weapons at him!"

Oh no.

Ye Chong recognized the voice of that mastermind! The voice was the assassin's. He quickly reacted with a tumble on the ground right after the statement was shouted.

He got to run, he got to run fast.

But his stamina was below the safe level and he was surrounded by a swarm of attackers. He suspected if he could last even a minute if they launched their attacks again...

The villagers started lobbing their weapons at Ye Chong. Sharp

clinks could be heard all over the place as the weapons showered upon the ground.

Ye Chong pressed the ground with both his hands and knees, rolled and bounced off like a pinball.

Weapons penetrated the sandy ground.

Ye Chong was glad he acted fast or he would have been turned into a dead porcupine.

Ye Chong made another tumble to reposition himself and discerned that one blank spot, he tossed his weapon that flew through the very gap.

Ye Chong's arms were pumping dramatically in rhythm, then an indiscernible wave flew along. The handle of the lance suddenly shuddered!

The crowd enveloping the flying lance felt a force slammed upon them, as they fell onto the ground.

"What the hell!" Curses were heard again.

And Ye Chong had made an opening for himself. He then flew into the angry crowd, grabbed the lance and zapped away to the other side of the street - the direction opposite to where the guards were.

Ye Chong knew the right moves in a crowd fight. The more complicated the environment, the better he could act. His brain and body allowed him for the best survival. He picked the most crowded area and moved unpredictably to make sure that he would not be stuck again.

The blue lines appeared in his eyes again, they danced as his eyes moved.

His potential was rose again as the situation pressured.

His eyes were soulless. He looked at the targets expressionlessly. The blue lines were forming the best angle to attack for him. He

had already lost his humanity, it was all for survival or nothing. The complicating geometrical visual of strategy, the crude yet impeccable attack, the overly logical calculation, these had made Ye Chong a killing machine as the wildness and inhumanity engulfed him. Logical yet illogical.

...

"Are you sure you aren't making a move?" asked the mistress in a shaky voice, as her strained eyes looked upon the dying villagers. Her heart was aching, she had never experienced a massacre like this. She thought Ye Chong would still be a human, that he would fall at some point but he had just lost control.

The elderly was indifferent, "Keep your sanity there and not spend your time here with me. You do not have much time. You should be heading down and try regaining control of the situation, not negotiating with me."

The mistress bit her lips, as her eyes were then filled with disappointment. Few seconds lapsed in silence and she stormed out of the building.

The elderly then stared at Ye Chong. His eyes were somehow burning with an indescribable passion.

Ye Chong was fast, while he was agile. He would only need that little space to perform a surprise burst attack. His speed made him more unforeseeable, uncontrollable. With a lance Ye Chong was typically a bull in a Wang shop, that people would probably shatter upon contact.

He was strong and merciless. His moves were painful and homicidal. The crowd was no longer as maniac and bloodthirsty as before, their body tightened as they started holding back.

How many men had he killed? Ye Chong had already lost count. He only felt the growing weight in his arms along with his hastening breath. His body was getting worse and he was not

seeing a spaceship coming to him anytime soon. It felt so hopeless that he might have lost hope at some point if he had not experienced the dead-or-alive before.

Ye Chong did not give up. He would not give up till the very last moment, so he would raise the chance of his survivability to the maximum! The ship was not coming, but it did not mean the ship would never come, probably Rui Bing and the folks had encountered some problem...

That would be the worst case scenario, undesirable yet the most possible. Rui Bing would still come for him anyhow... a mech could have been good enough.

Then, should there be an accident!?

Ye Chong started calculating the remaining time he could stand up.

No time, he would have to get out of here!

In 0.1 second, a decision had been made.

His lance impaled throat of one villager, whose eyeballs popped in pain with hushes of his dying struggle as he waved his weak limbs.

Splash.

His throat exploded.

Ye Chong disappeared.

The blood splattered upon the frightened expression of the people.

Ye Chong sped up to the maximum and overcame the crowd. He ran, towards the street of houses, leaving the few tens corpses on the ground behind.

Another runaway, another dead-or-alive. He was that greenhorn who did not know how to run away at first, and now he had become the adept of runaway.

It seemed like he would be running away forever. The talented could never go unnoticed huh?

Once he got to this street, he could escape the fate of being sieged from time to time. Well, at least, a siege consisted of smaller amount of people, that was more manageable. He had stayed long enough to know the geographical layout of the place.

And that was when a roar was heard behind, "Where do you think you're going?"

The piercing voice impaled his soul.

# Chapter 359: Battle IV

Ye Chong lifted his head and looked afar, his expression changed drastically. The three swords were coming, in A-formation. They zapped towards him so quick and so forcefully that the hushes by friction in air had engulfed the screams of people around.

In the air, the faces of the three guardsmen were dead red , apparently they had consumed every last ounce of their strength on that powerful attack.

Ye Chong could not make it if he were to dodge, but somehow he was calm, as he gripped the pole of his lance and stared upon the incoming swords, ignoring the other attacks surrounding him.

Emotionless, expressionless, toneless and passionless.

No emotion would disrupt his schemata.

His eyes were then wide open, his waist sank, tilting his lance.

HMPH!

MORTAL ROAR!

Wavelengths were slammed through the air as they began reaching the surrounding. The villagers nearest to Ye Chong suffered the most brutal death, as their eardrums felt hammered inside their blanked head, with blood dripping from some of their noses.

The people afar only felt they were overwhelmed by an unseeable force, as their uproar went settled by the waves.

Ye Chong's sharp eyes discerned the three swords slowing down because of his sound wave. It's working!

Almost simultaneously, Ye Chong's body seemed to have mutated... It was a rather creepy sight, as his muscular cells seemed to be wriggling like countless snakes all over his body from waist to the abdomen to the chest and to his shoulder, lastly his arms. It felt like a seasonal migration of his muscles, as his arms

began pumping and grew into lumps and lumps of bulkiness.

It sounded complicated but it all only happened in a few seconds.

Ye Chong had never felt such strength in his arms before! But he was losing his balance as his feet felt light.

The lance felt like nothing in his grip as he aimed and impaled, accurately struck the three longswords.

Klink. The three longswords cried as collusion occurred.

Ye Chong could feel a pressure on his lance. Crack! The lance blew up due to the overwhelming strength, as countless specks it had transformed into. The muscular cells accumulated on Ye Chong's arms seemed to have receive a reorganize-order, as they retreated back to their former positions.

Spat! Splash of blood escaped from Ye Chong's mouth. His legs felt lighter than ever as he fell to his back.

The guardsmen were not having an easier time either as not only the final attack consumed every bit of them, but also the fact that they were sending the swords in the air and took every pitch of Ye Chong's roar. The forces their swords exerted might have warded them, but that would only be a damage reduction at most and it became the last straw to their vitality. They were hurt, both inside and outside.

Ye Chong had been wounded, potentially at a worse state than the guardsmen. The muscular cells did not retreat on his will, but they were actually forced back as their formation shattered by the collision of two attacks. Ye Chong would have lost his arms if it was not for the fine build of his body. He could still breathe but that did not mean he could last longer in the field, as he started to feel his breath getting out of pace, lungs apparently received a considerable amount of damage as well.

When was the last time he had this? The foreign sense of danger was sending shudders to his body, out of fear yet also out of a kind

of excitement.

His body felt scorched by the pain. Ye Chong tried relaxing his body.

Breath in... out...

The attack had disintegrated so they were falling to the ground. Ye Chong got to relax his body as in a few seconds he would have been that sandbag crashing the arena. He suddenly made a twist on his waist, repositioned himself and tipped the ground with his legs, as he launched himself into the houses dexterously.

The guardsmen were shocked by the sudden disappearance of Ye Chong.

"Such horrible monstrosity!" said the leading elderly, as seemingly he was worried. The Wang family had offended an inhumanity, that had got to be the worst case scenario to the village. The steps of Ye Chong were unpredictable, the attacks of Ye Chong were precise, the lance skills were ever-changing, and he knew a sound wave attack while being colder than any merciless beast.

"Right, we had failed the entire family, literally." The second guardsman was angry, very much eager to slice Ye Chong into million pieces.

The third guardsman was silent as he set his eyes upon the tall Victor Tower.

...

Pant...

Pant pant...

Hah.... Hah...

Ye Chong ran. Ye Chong dashed. Ye Chong sprinted, over one slope and another, launching himself over one ground to another. Like a wounded beast, he forced his way out, fearing to even spend



a split second more at one place. He was running in a primitive village area without any technology, there was no communicator, there was no mech, yet he feared that very trained efficiency of the mighty Wang family force. He was still fighting as one on hundred thousands, his outcome of doing that was clearer than the water he stamped on, it was obvious, blatantly obvious, no deduction and no rebuttal needed.

Most of his wounds had been cured. To be honest, he was not expecting to be given a potion from that person. He did not see the need of the person providing the assistance in the first place. And of all potion, he got the one with greatest effect.

A potion of the village felt redundant, obsolete in the galaxies out there, as the medical technology had expanded to whole different horizon. With an advanced pre-programmed medical machine, nobody would want to use a bottle of suspicious looking fluid, yet that bottle would come falling like an angel to everyone's salvation in the village. It was what everyone dreamed for, since hell knows when you would be skewed by countless specks of wood, where the potion would be a savior.

Salvation it was indeed. The potion made out of Brown Mistletoe Nut was healing Ye Chong at an astonishing rate.

He would remember that favor for the rest of his life.

He had reached his maximum, as he ran on. At least he was starting to see the woods growing denser, that should hinder the chasing Wangs a little.

The frail twigs whipped his body as he ran intensely fast, yet the slight pain was ineffective against his shooting adrenaline. Through the forest, he traveled like an agile jaguar. The shades of the woods should have provided him the perfect camouflage, yet the Wangs seemed to be not losing him anytime soon...

There were 12 guardsmen hunting him down. And the Wang family had only trained 15 best guardsmen in the house. His fate

was clear if he were to stop while being chased by 12 superbly trained fighters.

Ye Chong sometimes would grab the vines and swing himself further to preserve his draining stamina.

And he landed, with a stomp that caused the branches to deform, and he jumped once more to the ground ahead.

10 meters ahead there was a broad branch.

That would be a good launcher! And he accelerated.

Klink!

A few projectiles flashed by.

That was the fifth time he got attacked... He withdrew his dagger and blocked them away.

Klink! Klink! Klink! Klink!

His wrists felt numb as he struck them back. The force was very strong to overcome.

Ye Chong started distancing himself from the raiders again. Apparently this was the fifth wave of assassins awaiting him in the dark. They were extremely skillful in blending themselves in the woods, while the way they treated their prey was brutal. They were highly alert as they would hide themselves again once they had missed. To pursue they would do things slow and steadily.

The first wave gave the biggest shock. If it was not Ye Chong's quick reaction he would have died just there. The following raids were stronger and more sudden than before but Ye Chong had already anticipated them himself, so he faced them not as clumsy as before.

His dagger was his savior. Thanks to the Do-Kun stone enhancement, it was sharp enough to break the incoming weapon at one slice. The assassins noticed the successful counterattack as they fled the scene, back into the woods.

Ye Chong could do nothing else than running.

At first he thought those were from the Wang family, but it just felt different the more he fought. The Wangs would never fight such way. They were not the kind who would finish their foe without a fair fight. If they would, Ye Chong would not be alive by then.

Although in reality the assassins were feeling more helpless than Ye Chong, they believed their attack - whether on timing, the coverage, the way they did it - was flawless and perfectly demonstrated their skills, yet this ugly-looking boy had blocked everything successfully. How depressing.

Most importantly, they were attacking from the dark, which supposedly had given themselves a headstart, yet Ye Chong lived like an annoying cockroach.

That dagger! Dammit! Someone break that dagger! Curses!

The assassins were probably thinking so...

Ye Chong did not decelerate, as being chased by the Wangs and the assassins from nowhere. He just hoped his speed could last him long enough to lose these people, as he sprinted in straight line.

The woods had gotten denser, as the path got engulfed by the darkened leaves. The air felt humid while exuding a faint rotten smell.

The light was starting to be engulfed by the trees.

The place got quieter, that sometimes he could hear the insect cries.

And it became dead silent, where breeze could hardly be felt.

Too quiet. Ye Chong was not feeling good on this. But he lacked the experience necessary to judge the forest just yet.

He slowed down at first, as hesitated. Then he made up his mind and kept running.

At far end behind , the bush started rustling out of sudden, with 3 men popped out. Their faces were painted in green stripes, hardly recognizable, while their outfits were strange - stripes of green and yellow, a blend to the forest's color scheme.

"He had entered the woods." The leading one commented, as seeing the shrinking silhouette. His tone sounded relieved somehow.

The other two was also gasping in relief.

"Phew! Finally, we don't have to face that horror."

The third person nodded, "Right? He was such horror, scarier than the specter, faster than the specter too. The leader of Team T almost died in his brutality. And he has that ridiculous dagger, at least we don't have to face him. So does this mean mission accomplished?"

The leading one halted, "...Yes... I guess? No one had ever come out of the deeper woods alive. So we don't have to worry on this. We just have to report as what we saw. Let the authority figure this out themselves, though what a waste of a good dagger." The tone was filled with a great desire towards Ye Chong's overpowered dagger.

A voice rang behind them, "The Wangs have arrived! Retreat." And the shadows vanished into the forest.

Within half a minute, a large group of Wangs appeared right next to the bush, with Furry the fair white creature popping its cherry nose to the ground.

It rose its tiny body, as began roaring madly to the deeper woods, refusing to take a step further, as if something was convincing it to stop moving.

"He had entered the deeper woods, apparently. It looks like our job is done. We should be working on the other outsiders instead." The speaker sounded very much relaxed, this was their most

desirable scenario.

Everyone recognized the forces of Ye Chong, that they felt nothing could stop him, other than the greater Mother Nature that is. The deeper woods...

"Hah..." It sounded as if they had broken free from their greatest fear.

The group was wordless.

...

"Shall we go?" One wave and the group left the fearsome depth of the woods.

The deeper woods, silent as it acted, quiet as it was supposed to be, only had the whispers of the insects ringing in the silence.

# Chapter 360: Dangerous Forest I

Ye Chong's heart grew colder the farther he walked. The place was quiet, too quiet... He was able to discern the soft chirp in the woods at first, but now he heard nothing. It was so quiet that even the rustling he made upon stepping on the rotten leaves sounded ear-piercing.

His nerve was tensed, as alarmingly he looked around constantly.

The humidity of air chilled his chest. The forest grew denser as he walked on.

There were all sorts of plants, peculiarly disturbing, that it felt like a nightmarish visit to a botanical garden. The sun could never reach the place, yet the plants grew so well it was creepy.

The greenish leaves, the colorful flowers, alluring yet soul-taking.

Ye Chong's heart was racing. He took a look at the plants. His alchemy knowledge had convinced him to take a deep cold breath in fear.

Glitterbloom, Haemovine... Dartelion?

Where am I, what is this, is it hell?

Ye Chong froze. His muscle tightened, feared to make even the slightest move. His glance eventually reached that grayish brown tree ahead of him. There was a sprout, with a body of blue stripes and countless silvery tubes all over it, that made it looked like a handle of wind chimes. Ye Chong's heart skipped a beat again, he knew he should never make one step further.

He recognized that plant.

Scientific name - *Argentubus Arecales*, people call it "Pines of Spider Web", with a sensory proximity about 7 to 10 meters, carnivorous. Once an animal approaches the plant, the tubes would fire projectile like spider webs that contain spikes which

give off deadly poison to paralyze the prey.

In Lunatic Guan's encyclopedia entry, *Argentubus Arecales* is typically rated as a Level 4 hazard. Those tubes were horrifying enough to Ye Chong that he would give a Level 4.5 for it instead. Not because of its effect but its appearance, the illustration in the entry had only a few tubes over the body, while this particular sprout... had tons, so many that he lost count.

Gulp.

He grew cautious and thanked Lunatic Guan in his mind. If it was not her knowledge, he probably would have been buried along with the beautiful flowers, enjoying a premature death. He took a careful observation at every single spot in the woods while his mind kept exclaiming how fortunate he was to avoid that one plant trap ahead. If he mindlessly walked just one step to the front, he would have been dead.

But luck would never be always by his side. He would not gamble his life on this.

No wonder there was no animal here. No way any animal would have survived in a place like this. The place was literally a dangerous-plant-go-round where 80% of Lunatic Guan's registered hazardous plants could be seen here.

Even Ye Chong began to suspect if Lunatic Guan was once here and was scared to death like him.

These plants had simply made the forest a typical deadly forest.

He looked behind and checked out how many ways he could die based on the types of plants there. He got afraid that it already felt like a miracle when he remained in one piece after walking mindlessly for so long.

So how do I leave this hell? Ye Chong was puzzled. The only relief was the fact that he needed not to worry those snipers and chasers. Since this place was obviously a hazardous deadly zone,

only outsiders like he himself would foolishly enter. The locals probably never would even consider to come here.

It would be impossible for him to back away now. Practically he had already lost his sense of direction. The woods were so dense that every trace he made as he advanced was gone. Without experience or assistance of any apparatus, people would simply lose their way here. And Ye Chong was sure that he did not come all the way here in one straight line.

There was no longer the concept of "backing away" and "advancing forward", either of those felt literally the same to him. Maybe he would end up circulating the place as he walked.

When the situation had gotten to its worst, somehow it would become calming at the same time.

The first thing was not to find a way out. That would sound a little far-fetched for the moment. So, instead, he should be figuring how he would survive in here.

Lunatic Guan's microchip contained massive amount of information, along with the mechanism to help automatic analysis. It was so convenient that people could just carry it around, use it like a pocket dictionary that saved all the hassle figuring things out.

If one fails to prepare, one prepares to fail. The chip prepared Ye Chong. As advised by Lunatic Guan, he should remember everything so that he would truly harness the knowledge and not let her knowledge go to waste, which he did and these knowledge he remembered had become the sole key to his survival in this dangerous forest.

Ye Chong regained his calmness and began observing again.

His brain ran fast, soon realized his situation was not as terrible as he first imagined. Compared to those haunting troops and those assassins sniping him at any second, he was more willing to face



the forest. The forest was dense and was filled with dangerous species, but there were also quite a handful of them being edible. The edible plants not only was succulent, but also highly nutritious, which could last him for quite sometimes - that would determine his basic necessity fulfilled and ultimately it meant he had already bought enough time for himself.

He would need the time to familiarize himself with the forest, to have a better understanding on the characteristics of these dangerous plants. He might have a massive encyclopedia in his head, but that did not mean he totally understood every single entry of it. He recognized the plants merely because he had seen their visuals as he skimmed the encyclopedia before. There was no in-depth investigation nor practical exposure. And this little gap between theory and practice could cost his life.

He had the patience to prepare himself.

He carefully avoided the Dartelions, the edges of the leaves were easily the blades of an actual dart as the cuticle was so hard and sharp that it could leave a cut by just sliding through it. Dartelion's fatality was not known for its sharp leaves, the content of its tip however was the one to look out for as it was coated with a kind of enzyme that would prevent blood from clotting. You might be bleeding till you died at that one scratch you made on your careless mistake.

According to the description in the microchip, some alchemists would actually utilize the tip of Dartelion by coating their weapon with its secretion.

Avoided the Spider Web, Ye Chong proceed very, very sluggishly, with his eyes carefully looking out for the dangerous plants around and... below. There were sprouts of Haemovines hanging in the air, at where they spread their trochal disc, suction cup-like structure to entangle their preys. As much as its appearance suggested, once the prey was entangled, it would deflate as the vines enlarged dramatically. Much of a draining attack.

Ye Chong was finding the place much more intense than Trash Planet-12.

He held his steps again, as stumbled upon a giant Vinesack which visibly was about few hundred years old. Its leaves were dense, with peculiar appearance as if the two leaves were tightly stuck together from edge to edge, leaving the tip unstuck however, making them like a sack, a sack between the vines. Thus its name Vinesack.

Ye Chong first observed the trunk of the tree, making sure that there was nothing funny - especially plants like Haemovines - on it. And he advanced forward.

He was eyeing the sacks on the tree. As the tree aged, these sacks would darken, their toughness would increase, making them a natural container. He picked the darker leaves which seemed to be at least alive for already a few decades, the darkest among them all. Pretty close to fall, since most sacks would fall naturally after the age of 50.

Withdrew his dagger, he sliced and ... realized the leaves remained firm on the tree despite his pull. He thought he could break almost everything by accident after snapping alloys like titanium yet the leaves remained in whole piece.

He gave few more cuts and successfully removed 6 to 7 pieces of them. These natural containers would be what he needed exactly at the moment. He then took a few fine vines to strap them over his waists.

The juices of the tree could be a perfect ingredient for growth-inducing component, sadly he lacked the necessary apparatus for extraction, so he got to let it go.

Now with the containers he could collect water and food, even some alchemy production for his daily life.

The forest might be dangerous, but it also was considerably a

heaven for alchemist.

Sigh, if only he had the most primitive alchemy apparatus...

## Chapter 361: Dangerous Forest II

Ye Chong spent the third day in the forest without moving beyond 100 meters of his proximity. His face was smudged with mud, barely recognizable, though his vision was still clear.

The night was long as he slept not more than 5 hours a day, just enough to recover his stamina. His wounds had healed themselves completely within the three days, justifying the effect of that super potion, probably even those premium hospitals in 5 major galaxies could be defeated by the pill.

Too bad he had none of those magical pills left. Night Enchantment was also already a goner during his run.

The three days lapsed with him scouting, observing every single plant around him. He dared not show negligence even to the tiniest sprout of weed on ground, hell knows if the weed was carnivorous as he tried recalling the few lines he captured when he studied the encyclopedia back then. As Lunatic Guan had once taught, the study of alchemy originated from the study of botanic, the study of plants. So the more ancient the branch of alchemy, the more likely it would have vast information on botanical studies.

And Ye Chong actually remembered the few details on each plant there, which meant all these plants were part of the entries in the encyclopedia, also proving that the branch in which Lunatic Guan studied was truly something from the ancient. That was something shocking, although Lunatic Guan had never mentioned anything about the origin of her studies, not even in her chip or from her words.

And regarding what exactly the branch he was learning, it did not seem to matter, even though what he had learned this far was beyond complication while he had literally zero foundation on the study itself. Well, as long as they were useful, they deserved to remain existed.

He distinguished each plant he perceived, whether they were dangerous, how could they be dangerous, of what kind of danger they impose - all for preparation. He did not have tools to perform experiment to test these plants out, he could only try to reminisce that part of the plant in the encyclopedia. What he needed to do was to grasp as much as he could in his head at the moment, to a point where the characteristics of these plants felt like at the back of his hand, so his security would be maximized, the likelihood of his survival would increase.

Ninetails, Borneo's Heart, Layered Lavender...

Names of the plants flashed in his mind quickly along with a massive amount of data refreshed constantly. His main focus would be those with high hazard levels and he would spend an extra few minutes on them whenever encountered.

Well, luckily plants as hazardous as the Pines of Spider Web were not that common, while having an easily discerned size. Those smaller plants with lower hazardous level could be potentially more dangerous however, like Dartelion for example, they could hide within the grasses effortlessly. One careless step and you would already be wounded.

Well Ye Chong was cautious enough to live the next few days without any casualty.

After the accumulation period, he finally started to hasten his journey, although he still could not tell where he was and to where he was heading. These plants were hindering his sights everywhere, to a point where they felt suffocating sometimes without seeing an opening.

On the seventh day Ye Chong started to feel at better ease moving within the forest. Certainly, at a presupposition that he was careful enough, since one mistake could cost his life.

His appearance was bizarre. His body was hung with quite a number of Vinesacks, like a Christmas tree. Any part of his body

which would not hinder his movement could be a nice hanger for Vinesacks. He did maximize the use of his fleshy hangers with additional vines, but his vining skill sucks, making him look like a package to be delivered from the fish market. He would not mind as long as those vines would not break.

The Vinesacks contained the loots of his foraging daily.

Growl...

That meant mealtime. The stomach reminded him so, as he stopped walking and took a look around. Okay, the plants were not as dense as the last spot he stayed, there should not be a problem. Perfect for taking a break. He took out his dagger and cleared an opening on the ground.

He got himself seated and withdrew a yellowish fruit. It was known as the Pomegold. It had a high nutritious value and was a pretty rare material for alchemy. Ye Chong made a chomp and chewed slowly. He would not end his only mealtime in seconds before the next few hours of journey. The forest bore lots of edibles but that did not mean he could let every food go to waste.

To be honest, the taste of Pomegold did not live up to its name. It was rather plain... but sufficient to provide Ye Chong the energy to travel. Well, if Lunatic Guan ever knew her apprentice ate some precious food as his daily course, she might be tossing the flasks at him now. Wait, not only Lunatic Guan, probably every professional alchemist would capture such preposterous sight, with their heart aching. What a waste!

After he finished the fruit, he took out Water Bamboo at his waist. As its name suggested, the bamboo could absorb the moisture from the earth and stored within its cavity. The water was pure and perfectly drinkable. To be frank, the fluid inside the bamboo was also a precious material for alchemy reagents since it only grew in tedious environment, which caused harvesting to be more difficult, thus the rarity. Nevertheless, there seemed to be

quite a number of Water Bamboos in the forest.

The bamboo he got had 5 levels and each level was like a tiny cup that Ye Chong would use his dagger to slice open, revealing that juicy heavenly green which he would fail to resist after a sip and gargle everything.

It tasted way better than those sugary drinks of the known branches. It had that faint scent while being refreshing at his tongue. The liquid of Water Bamboo was exceptional to the taste of Ye Chong. He kept the remaining stand however, that would be his source of water.

He then closed his eyes and had forty winks. Well at least the dangerous forest ensured no wild animal raiding him when he was asleep.

2 hours passed, well it felt like two hours. He opened his eyes. He stretched his body, which felt replenished at that moment.

It was the 15th day and he started to get used of the place, as he could already tell if the plant was dangerous at one glance. And the Vinesacks were full, of all kinds of things he believed to be useful for his journey. He did not keep those precious plants he saw on his way however.

Preciousness could aid him nothing in survival. Those plants could be wasting a slot in his limited inventory.

The biggest loot he got was on the 18th day.

He forwarded with the more caution. And he flinched, as he felt something hard underneath his feet. The path of the forest before this had always been at soft and fluffy due to the additional layer of the withered leaves. Nothing this hard was felt before, not even a piece of rock.

He squatted after taking a glance at the surrounding. He withdrew his dagger and swept the leaves away.

That one item revealed from the brownish leaves sent him a

stunning spell, while giving him an overwhelming joy right after. His hand grew towards the item with extra care.

It's... It's a flask?! There's a flask right here?

He removed the flask from the leaves. The flask seemed to be a portable version of its typicality, with a more limited design, but that was more than pleasing to Ye Chong.

A portable flask? Ye Chong had something in mind as he began digging with a twig, after keeping his dagger away. He could not dig the ground with a sharp blade, the edges could rupture something, assuming there was actually something really helpful underground.

There was something! There was indeed something!

A set of skeleton, once of a rotten corpse perhaps. There was no clothing left. Ye Chong presumed the corpse had been buried underground so long that every bit of it had disintegrated. Right next to the skeletons, there were a few containers typical to the alchemy laboratory, along with a few metallic accessories.

The dead should be once an alchemist. Speculated Ye Chong, the evidences were pretty blatant. His eyes were all glued upon the skeleton while giving zero attention on those accessories laying next to it.

If some jewelry-fanatics were ever along, they would go literally insane the moment they perceived the sparkle within the ground. There was a silver pendant with a piece of Skylee embedded, there was also a ring made out of dark amberjade - every single piece of the accessories was priceless, justifying the social-standing of the dead in the past. Well, to Ye Chong, they were not as valuable as the flasks though.

The containers were tightly sealed, which made Ye Chong hesitate to make his next move.

Like hell knows what the containers stored! Those could be the



security measures, the self-defense mechanism by this once-chemist possibly from the ancient to hurt people. And as far as Ye Chong revealed the reagents he made in the story, all of them turned out to be extremely fatal, the Bluefire chemical was the prime example, which one could never survive once they got ignited by Dimming Blue.

Assuming those were the contents, it would be horrible to open the containers recklessly here...

Nonetheless, the hesitation only lasted for a few seconds, as the need of a proper container demanded Ye Chong to gamble his luck. He made up his mind - he would be opening the containers.

He took the first container, which was tightly sealed, but well the effect of the content could not be guaranteed as it had probably been a century old.

He turned the knob. The inside was some dark red powder half a bottle full, soon a choking spiciness raided the air.

The heck is this? Ye Chong was bewildered, but he could not identify what it exactly was just yet. He gave it a thought... and carefully poured a little bit of the powder at one thick leaf of the Liebig tea sprout nearby.

A chemical reaction occurred?!

His nasal cavity was then choked by the tiny column of smoke. Ye Chong took a look at the sprout. The sprout had withered?! It only took a second for the powder to drain every bit moisture of the tea sprout. The thin trunk had lost its succulent strength and had shattered.

This is an intensive dehydrating agent?! Wait, I had seen something like this in the chip before... Redsand! The Redsand Dehydrator! The name struck Ye Chong's mind.

He then replaced the cap, with extreme caution as if fearing a single particle to be freed into the wind and fall onto his body. His

heart tightened, he tried calming himself.

Such terrifying dehydrator!

"The Redsand Dehydrator is used for extremely efficient dehydrating. It is known for its spiciness and is a secret formula exclusive to the Smoke branch of alchemy."

That was the description of Redsand in the encyclopedia entry, although the formula, as the way it was referred, remained unmentioned in the chip. Never once Ye Chong would expect the "dehydrator" - while its name sounded uninteresting as Lunatic Guan briefly mentioned it - turned out to be such brutal horror. He believed, it would only take a little bit of Redsand Dehydrator to completely dehydrate a fully grown adult.

He recalled that there was a list of instructions on using the powder in the entry as well. Apparently, in order to handle the powder properly, the user would have to apply a thick coat of proofing on the hands. The proofing was rather simple to produce, It was technically a mixture of Pagodamadens fluid with Extrafragrans powder and a hint of Chrysanthemum Balm for condensing effects. The end product would be colorless while exuding a gentle hint of aroma. It would form a film over the hands to prevent the powder from contacting the hands. The proofing had a wide range of uses. Most deadly-on-contact alchemy production would require it for general handling.

Ye Chong did see these raw materials somewhere in the forest before.

So was this person from the Smoke branch?

Ye Chong looked at the skeleton, speculation began brewing in his mind as his curious eyes wandered at the few other containers.

He proceeded with his lucky draw as he opened the remaining fortune bottle, only to discover that all of the content had already decayed over the years. And Redsand Dehydrator survived the

centuries probably because of its supreme quality seal. Well at least he got a few containers for professional alchemy now.

The flasks might be limited in its functions but the richness of the resources here had already provided him countless blueprints of his exciting production, since there were precious plants everywhere in the woods.

Ye Chong was so joyful that he actually cleaned the containers using the fluid of Water Bamboo extravagantly.

Ye Chong gave one last glance at the skeletons. On proper thought, he should bury it and he did eventually.

Just when he was gong to toss his first handful of dirt, he noticed the accessories.

## Chapter 362: Dangerous Forest III

He recognized the silverlight metal. This metal was extremely malleable, and a good additive for alloys to improve malleability. However, people would not usually do that, since it was a very rare kind of metal. It was not cost efficient to use it. Ye Chong was never interested in rare but useless metals, even though he could always recognize them. Ye Chong only knew about Skylee, which was a type of gem.

The pendant had a very interesting shape, like smoke, or flowing water. The thread circled around the Skylee gem in a whirl of fantasy. The necklace was intricately carved and very impressive. However, Ye Chong did not have the aesthetic sense to appreciate it. To him, it was only a typical example of useless luxury.

What really interested him was the dark amberjade ring; more precisely, the black pearl on the dark amberjade ring. It was an utterly black and flawless black pearl. Most people would think that it was naturally made, but it was not. Ye Chong recognized this pearl as the fruit of the Herro smoke tree, called the smoke pearl. Dark amberjade was a very rare kind of jade, but it paled in comparison to the smoke pearl.

In Lunatic Guan's chip, the Herro smoke tree was classified as extinct. Every Herro smoke tree would only produce three smoke pearls. That was exactly how rare the smoke pearl was.

To the layman, the smoke pearl was only an average black colored bead. To an alchemist, however, it was an absolute treasure. Smoke pearls could counter almost any kind of knockout agent. Of course, there were exceptions. According to Lunatic Guan, there were three kinds of knockout agents that could still affect a person wearing a smoke pearl - Qian system's Illusion, Hanming school's Ice, and Jiu Family's Blissful Drunkenness. However, even the three strongest knockout agents would have diminished effects when a smoke pearl was in play.

A battle between alchemists usually occur silently, without any physical violence, or any dazzling transformations. However, it was just as dangerous as mech battles or human combat. The outcome of these battles could be decided in seconds. This gave the alchemists a mysterious facade, but the cruelty that laid within was like a nightmare to most people. For example, a person who died from the redsand dehydrator would dry up into a corpse without any water at all.

This was a mysterious and secretive field of knowledge.

Compared to them, the alchemists in the Five Galaxies were all academics. They only did research, and lived much more peaceful lives.

Ye Chong knew all he did about the alchemists here from Lunatic Guan. In the end, it was only a theoretical understanding of things. It was when he used the Night Enchantment that he came to truly appreciate the strength of alchemists. If not for those Night Enchantment pills, he would definitely not be able to handle the situation. The sight of a huge crowd of people slumping into unconsciousness was staggering.

Knockout agents were alchemy weapons that Ye Chong had grown familiar with. Even with his abilities, he was easily knocked out by Lunatic Guan. The smoke pearl dark amberjade ring was a priceless treasure, and it allowed Ye Chong to freely move within the forest .

He immediately put on the dark amberjade ring with the smoke pearl and, after some thought, the silverlight necklace as well. As for the other items he found, Ye Chong did not find them particularly useful, so he buried them together with the skeleton he found.

With this discovery, Ye Chong's difficult life in the forest turned for the better.

With the smoke pearl dark amberjade ring on him, he did not

have to worry at all about the poisonous miasma and knockout chemicals from certain plants. The few alchemy products he found might have simple uses, but they gave Ye Chong a definitive advantage.

The resources here were abundant, giving him plenty of choice.

His leaf pouches, which were filled with different types of ingredients, were now filled with alchemy products instead. He had treatments for injuries, insect repellents, strong knockout agents, alchemy products to cover his body scent and many more. Ye Chong never considered if these alchemy products were valuable, he only prepared them based on his needs for survival.

He even made plenty of nutrition pills. Nutrition pills were a must-have for aged alchemists. They were made of high calorie ingredients, and could be easily absorbed by the human body. Ye Chong chose the best ingredients, such as the cray fruit, and prepared two big bags of leaf pouches of nutrition pills out of them. They were enough to last him for two months.

"This is an alchemist's paradise," Ye Chong wondered to himself. If only he had a laboratory here, equipped with all the necessary tools and devices. That would be wonderful!

Ye Chong was in some ways an academic.

The skeleton he found came to mind unrestrained, and Ye Chong had a newfound respect for the person.

Time passed quickly, especially when he was busy. Ye Chong grew to like this place. There were no fights here, and the place provided a bountiful supply of resources. It was filled with all kinds of treasures, waiting for him to discover. These days, Ye Chong's skills in alchemy improved by leaps and bounds. Of course, many plants were sacrificed in his path to excellence.

No alchemy would use all these precious resources carelessly like Ye Chong did.

Ye Chong began to move more freely in the forest. The only problem was, he still could not be sure of his path.

He advanced every day, even though he was not sure if he was only going around in circles. His leaf pouches were full of his possessions, but the weight was nothing to Ye Chong, and was not a hindrance to his movements.

Perhaps it was due to his vegetarian diet, or the long duration spent without sunlight, but Ye Chong's skin turned fairer. With his slender body and fair skin, he looked even more like a soft-spoken gentleman. If Shang could see Ye Chong now, he would be scandalized. However, Ye Chong did not have much of an opinion on his own looks.

With leaf pouches hanging all over his body, and a wooden spear in his right hand, Ye Chong looked like a savage. The spear was made out of ironwood. Ye Chong had happily stumbled upon an ironwood tree that was older than five centuries some time ago.

This ironwood tree was about 150 meters tall, with such a wide girth that it needed about a dozen people to circle around to fully surround it. The ironwood tree had a peculiar look. Its branches were all straight, like an artificial product. From the bottom of the tree to the top, a branch would appear every 30 centimeters. The lowest branch was the shortest, and the length increased going up the tree. These horizontal branches spiraled up evenly. From afar, the tree looked like a pillar, attached with horizontal steps that spiraled upwards.

Ironwood was a very tough material, the hardest known wood material. The lowest branches were the toughest, and Ye Chong had chosen one that was two meters long. He would not have been able to break off the branch if he did not have his sharp dagger. Ye Chong tried to break off the lowest branch with his bare hands and found to his surprise that he could not. This was also the first time Ye Chong got to experience the difficult process of sawing with his dagger.

Besides the surprise, Ye Chong was also overjoyed to find that the wood would make for an excellent weapon. He spent an entire day shaping the branch into a spear. He suddenly recalled the spiral patterns on the wooden spears in Sang Family Village. They prevented slipping and offered a more stabilized flight when thrown. Ye Chong etched those patterns on the entire wooden spear he made.

Ye Chong was very satisfied with the final product. The pitch black body of the weapon made it inconspicuous, and its surface was evenly covered with spiral patterns. The flat ends of the spear were carved with three uneven fullers [1]. The entire weapon was black in color, but upon closer observation, one could notice that it was actually a very thick ink black.

The forest did not lack poisonous vegetation. Ye Chong managed to extract the sap from five different types of poisonous plants, and used them to make a mixed poison. It was extremely poisonous and fatal. Ye Chong believed that it would definitely be on par with the most deadly poisons recorded in Lunatic Guan's chip.

Ye Chong dipped the spearhead repeatedly in this poison for no less than 50 times. He was absolutely patient when it came to preparing his weapon of defense. He was surprised to find that the colorless poison further darkened the ironwood spearhead after dipping, but luckily the weapon was already black in color, so the effect was not too noticeable.

The wooden spear was a truly dangerous weapon, and even Ye Chong had to use it with extreme care. If he accidentally cut himself with the spearhead, he would definitely not survive. The poison was so strong that there would not be time to ingest an antidote, and in any case, Ye Chong did not know of any antidote for it.

Ye Chong carefully wrapped the spearhead with his leaf pouch, and used it very cautiously.



The forest was much larger than Ye Chong anticipated. It had been a full month, but Ye Chong had not reached the edge of it. Of course, there was also the problem of directions, but he knew that he had traveled a very large distance.

His waist was now adorned with seven blue wooden stakes. These wooden stakes were about 20 centimeters long, and looked a bit like arrows. A few days ago, Ye Chong had accidentally touched a bellvine shooter, which "bestowed" upon him these seven wooden stakes. They had nearly killed him, since bellvine shooter's air sac had a kind of strong hallucinogen. It was a nerve agent that caused mental disorientation and affected one's motor functions.

It would be a death wish to wander about this dangerous forest carelessly.

Fortunately, Ye Chong did not encounter any dangers since then.

One day, Ye Chong noticed that the plants around him were gradually growing sparse. This was encouraging to him.

Perhaps he was in the right direction!

# Chapter 363: Valley I

Ye Chong never expected to see a cliff that soared sky high at the edge of the forest. This cliff was unlike any other. It was as though someone had forcibly chopped off the edge. The walls of the cliff went outwards going up, which made climbing up impossible. Ye Chong longed to have a mech right now. Even the simplest mech would spare him the trial ahead.

He walked along the bottom of the cliff. Up above, the cliff reached outwards, blocking the sun and providing him shade. Cool water dripped occasionally from the rocks above onto him.

There were no signs of human activity here. In fact, there were no signs of human activity in the forest. Those Smoke school members must have entered the forest hundreds of years ago. The forest was extremely dangerous, bordering fatal. No matter how strong you were physically, the lack of alchemy knowledge would surely lead to an early death. Alchemists may be able to identify dangerous plants, but it was highly likely for them to fall prey to the likes of the web palm and the bellvine shooter due to their weak physiques. Didn't the Smoke school members who had their smoke pearls died here too?

Ye Chong felt very blessed to still be alive right now. He was very grateful towards Lunatic Guan. Without her, he would probably be a corpse by now.

The moist walls of the cliff were covered with moss, and smelt of moist decay.

It might be foolish of him to walk along the bottom of the cliff, but it was also the safest. These days, getting his bearings was his number one problem when he was in the forest.

He walked for three days. There was no need to concern himself with getting his directions right, so Ye Chong advanced quickly. He ran tirelessly like a leopard.

At the two ends of his wooden spear hanged two large string bags. His weapon was reduced to a shoulder pole. The string bags were not what someone with Ye Chong's crude handiwork could make. It was actually from a sarmentous plant, known as the earthlush wisteria. They grew along the ground, spreading out like a web. Ye Chong used them to make his string bags. Inside the string bags were the materials that Ye Chong harvested from his surroundings, including a multitude of alchemy ingredients in large quantities. Ye Chong also found plants that were not recorded in Lunatic Guan's chip. He collected samples of them for analysis at some later time.

Deep down, Ye Chong had the quirks of a researcher.

On the third day, he finally made a discovery. Ye Chong noticed the crack in front of him, and stopped in his tracks.

The crack zigzagged down the walls of the cliff from the top. It was very narrow, only about five meters across. Where did this crack lead to? No one knew, but Ye Chong hoped that it would bring him out of this forest.

The forest was like an alchemist's paradise, but without the proper apparatus, it was like seeing the most alluring and naked woman before him and not being able to touch her. Aside that, his warily spent days were wearing him out. Moreover, he was also getting tired of the fruits that he had enjoyed very much at the beginning. It was too bad that he could find even an ant in this forest.

It took only three seconds for Ye Chong to make his decision.

Once inside the crack, it opened up into a wide space. This was no crack in the wall, but a huge valley. The entrance to the valley was narrow, but it widened up as he progressed deeper inside.

It was like entering a whole new world.

The dark red rocks that formed the walls were jagged. The walls

of the valley were in patches of faint or intense dark red, like being washed with blood. There was no sign of life inside, not even moss, and it was dead quiet. Unlike the moist air in the forest, it was very dry in here. The air was almost scorching to breathe in.

Ye Chong's first reaction was to feel for the bamboo water container on his waist. He relaxed when found there to have enough water for him.

He turned serious. This place was weird, no matter how he looked at it. Ye Chong took down the string bags hung on his wooden spear, and tied them onto himself.

He gathered his focus. With the wooden spear in hand, he advanced slowly but firmly. The solid rock felt nice below his feet, suitable for him to spurt if necessary. Back in the forest, the thick and soft layer of decaying leaves under his feet made him feel unsteady all the time. Now, he finally had solid ground to stand on.

As he moved further in, Ye Chong found that there were actually some vegetation in the valley. He could find moss in shaded corners behind some rocks. Water that seeped through the rocky walls were enough for him to replenish his water supply, even though it did not taste as good as his own water stored in his bamboo container.

Ye Chong walked for about five kilometers from the entrance, by his estimate. He took five hours to cover this distance out of wariness.

The day turned dark, and night came.

Nighttime did not bother Ye Chong, since he could see clearly with just a little bit of light. Ye Chong did not stop walking just because it turned dark.

There did not seem to be any dangerous animals in here. Ye Chong sighed in relief. This was definitely good news for him.

The dark red valley walls seen in the dark looked like a giant sleeping creature. The cloudless sky was covered with twinkling stars.

Abruptly, Ye Chong felt moved by the vast changes that were happening to him. The stars shone like diamonds in the sky, even though they would look much brighter in outer space. However, without the atmospheric disturbance, they would not twinkle as they would have right now. Some time ago, he was still flying a highly advanced starship; now, he was like a savage trying to find his way through the forest.

Ye Chong smiled wryly to himself and kept on walking. There was a right turn ahead. Somewhere above eye level, a rocky part jutted out.

Something weird then happened!

Suddenly, the rocky part that jutted out began to glow in patches of a vivid purple, as if some purple lights were turned on!

The palm-sized purple glowing patches continued to increase in numbers. Soon, the entire rock was covered in dense patches of purple light.

The soft purple glow was not too bright, but it was still very visible against the darkness, making it impossible to miss.

Ye Chong had sharp eyes. He saw everything clearly, sudden as it was. The rock was covered with a kind of seastar-like organism. These organisms rested on the rock. They were the ones that emitted the purple flow. In fact, they were glowing like five-pointed stars, but the details were lost due to the distance.

Ye Chong turned back and ran without hesitation.

The best strategy against an unknown threat was not to investigate, but to get away as fast as possible.

Ye Chong did not see the strangeness that was unfolding behind him. The purple patches floated into the air. With closer

observation, one could see that the glowing organisms were spinning about themselves very quickly, thus propelling themselves into the air. Their five soft tentacles were like five blades of a propeller. By spinning very quickly about themselves, their bodies looked like purple discs, or purple laser discs.

Ye Chong did not see this, as he was running as fast he could away from them.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

Ye Chong heard the sharp booms from behind him. He turned around and was shocked by what he saw. Heavens! The numerous flat purple laser discs were all coming towards him. There were so many of them, probably in the hundreds.

They're quick! Ye Chong had thought that he was quick, but now he knew better. He was not five hundred meters away when the five-pointed star organisms caught on to him.

Ye Chong felt a cold chill overcoming him.

He heard something closing in from behind, and quickly rolled to the side.

Puff puff puff!

The rock in front of Ye Chong was hit! No less than a few dozens of purple laser discs had hit on the rock. The solid rock crumbled under the attacks of the purple laser discs. They easily penetrated the solid rock like it was tofu.

Ye Chong felt another chilling wave overcoming him, and shuddered. He knew that his body was not as tough as that rock. If the purple laser discs hit him ... The thought was terrifying.

Ye Chong reacted quickly, launching himself high up into the air.

Dozens more of the purple discs buried themselves into the ground where Ye Chong was.

With death so close, Ye Chong felt his surroundings abruptly

slowing down. His breathing calmed down, an ability honed through countless experiences of escaping death.

He gripped onto his wooden spear, and his vision tuned out the laser discs. Now, Ye Chong could only see fast-flying blue dots around him. His vision had once again turned into this simple geometrical image.

While his vision became simplified, it was still the most complicated geometrical image he had ever seen. The blue dots moved quickly, and he was not sure if he could lock on to them. The faint and short blue lines were also moving unpredictably, appearing and vanishing randomly in his vision, making it even more difficult to lock on to the blue dots.

Ye Chong considered his situation calmly, making rapid calculations in his head. He was at the peak of his calculating abilities, a combined result of extreme calmness and madness.

His eyes shone coldly, without any trace of emotion. He was silent as a grave, his apathetic expression much like a lifeless corpse.

His legs stepped here and there and he wielded his wooden spear with deadly accuracy.

This was a moment that would inspire any combat expert.

Every established combat expert would have their own style of combat. It could be passionate and aggressive, or continuous and gentle. It could be with overwhelming force, or strange and unpredictable. Ye Chong's preferred style was one of calculation. Calmness, accuracy and efficiency were all hallmarks of Ye Chong's combat style.

Now, Ye Chong demonstrated the full potential of his own combat style.

The wooden spear always took the shortest route to its victim, delivering an accurate and lethal blow to the purple laser discs.

The purple laser discs came at him like heavy rain. They traced purple archs in the dark due to their fast speed. The night sky of the valley was now filled with a purple meteor shower, and at the center of this meteor shower was a young man with his wooden spear.

The leafy covers on the ends of the spear were already torn open, exposing the ink dark spearhead beneath. Only when the spearhead met its purple glowing target that it would shine with an eerie black.

Ye Chong's hands were moving as fast he could manage. He was like a spring compressed to its limit and then released, unleashing his strongest attack. His efficient attacks and cold, calculative mind saved his life.

He could hear sharp cries from the purple creatures. Ye Chong's wooden spear was also damaging to them. Five-edged mollusk bodies were scattered around him, their purple glow slowly fading out. The poison on the ironwood spearhead was strong enough to kill these creatures that Ye Chong had never seen before.

Ye Chong's breathing shortened. His stamina was depleting very quickly.

133 of them! That was how many blue dots he had hit. They were already decreasing in numbers, but these creatures learned from experience. They switched tactics, abandoning straight lined attacks. They circled around Ye Chong, but did not easily approach him .

This change made it even harder for Ye Chong. He could only sense the attacks coming when they were near, so he could only focus himself and be prepared. The swooping sounds of those creatures as they flew around him were a heavy load on his mind.

In his first round of attack, Ye Chong had moved his hands so fast that he exceeded Mach 20! If word of this got out, it would create an uproar in both the Five Galaxies and the He Yue Galaxy.



However, Ye Chong had no perspective of how fast his hand actually were.

Up until now, he had benefited from other people in terms of combat and alchemy. Mech maneuvering was the only thing that he relied completely on real life experience to improve himself, after Mu/Shang's initial training.

These star-shaped creatures knew about tactics!

Ye Chong was troubled. There were at least 200 more of them. On the other hand, they were beginning to fly around almost lazily, like they were drunk. With their charming sways and small sized bodies, they would certainly make for popular pets for the fairer sex. Ye Chong, however, was deeply troubled by their movements.

After nearly half a minute, those star-shaped creatures swayed higher up unsteadily, as if they could crash down at any time.

Abruptly, Ye Chong's eyes swept across something. He was immediately encouraged, as he now had a plan.

On the ground were his many scattered leaf pouches. When Ye Chong rolled on the ground just now, his string bags were torn open, leaving his leaf pouches all over the ground. However, he had wrapped each pouch tightly, and none of them were torn open.

Ye Chong's plan was to open these leaf pouches. Inside were more than 30 different kinds of knockout agents.

He continued to stare upwards, wary of the swooping purple discs around him, all the while quietly moving towards the leaf pouches.

The star-shaped creatures were smart, but even they could not guess what Ye Chong was up to.

Ye Chong was now three steps away from the nearest leaf pouch. He was secretly overjoyed, but dared not be careless. The closer he

was to victory, the easier it was to fail. He had no intention of wasting this opportunity.

His wariness paid off.

Swish!

15 purple laser discs came towards him from all directions. Seen from above, one would be able to make out some crude form of coordination amongst these 15 laser discs.

While there were only 15 of them, their attack this time was many times stronger.

Exhausted, Ye Chong's wooden spear still swung about deftly, but now that he was no longer completely tuned in for combat, his movements were a little stalled. He only killed seven of them and avoided five.

On his body were three bloody gashes, like being cut with a fast moving knife. He experienced first hand the power of those fast-spinning tentacles.

The faint scent of blood in the air was very tempting for the hundreds of laser discs in the air. This was their first success, and they were all getting excited.

This slight delay was an opening for Ye Chong.

Without further hesitation, Ye Chong launched himself towards the leaf pouches.

Rip!

The tightly wrapped leaf pouches burst under Ye Chong's pressure. The colourful powder inside was now released to the air, their colours unrecognizable in the dark.

The air smelled of a blend of every possible smell. All knockout agents were designed to spread out wide to increase their effective range.

In that instant, a fifty-meter radius around Ye Chong was filled

with this powdery mist. The knockout agents, made of precious ingredients, were so dense that he could see through them. This wasteful use of the knockout agents would have caused a heartache in almost every alchemist, Ye Chong excluded.

"30 over kinds of strong knockout agents, let's see how you fare?" Ye Chong thought to himself as he heaved a sigh of relief.

## Chapter 364: Valley II

The fact was, all the alchemy formulas in Lunatic Guan's chips were very reliable. Crash! Splat! The star-shaped creatures fell from the sky like kites losing control. Even Ye Chong, with the protection of his smoke pearl, felt a little dizzy as he stayed in the smoky mist.

He thought to himself, "What a strong agent!"

Shang came to mind, for some reason. He would have loved these kinds of things. Shang was the type who was fond of sinister means of attack.

Sigh, just when would he be able to meet Mu or Shang? From within the midst, Ye Chong's stony expression betrayed faint traces of warmth. Anyone who saw him now would have thought he was the same guy as the apathetic man they came to know. Now, Ye Chong was just a boy who missed his friends.

This gentle moment of sentiment quickly evaporated, and his face returned to its usual coldness.

Ye Chong crouched down and studied the weird creatures that nearly ended his life.

The ground was covered with them. Some were still glowing a faint purple, while others had faded completely. They were the size of his palm, their soft bodies shaped like a five-pointed star. It was hard to notice the details of their dark purple skin in the dark, and Ye Chong did not find anything suspicious. They laid quietly on the ground, bellies rising and falling rhythmically, looking quite adorable, with none of their earlier viciousness. Their five-pointed tentacles had a hard and sharp edge, deadly under high speeds.

Ye Chong was not quite over with his risky encounter just yet. If he had responded slower, the odds were that he would be dead by now. These creatures were smart, whether due to their natural

fighting instincts or innate intelligence. Whichever the case, they were still very dangerous beings to deal with.

He did not know how long these creatures would stay under from the knockout agent, but Ye Chong would not risk his life to know the answer. He lifted his wooden spear, and stabbed at each and every one of those star-shaped creatures. The poison at the tip of the wooden spear was deadly. The creatures stopped moving and turned black in color the instant they were cut with the spearhead.

After finishing his job, Ye Chong felt a deep sense of fatigue overcoming him. His legs felt heavy as lead. His entire body was drenched in sweat, and he felt cool under the gentle night breeze.

Ye Chong did not sit down immediately. That would not do any good for restoring his stamina. Instead, he loosened up his body slowly, dragging along his heavy feet. The truth was, he was so tired that the thought of moving even a finger was overwhelming.

Ye Chong gritted his teeth and fought against the wish to just lie down on the ground. He moved his arms and feet slightly. In the end, his effort paid off. His body did not ache as much, and he could feel his strength returning slowly. Now, he finally sat down, gasping heavily for breath.

After half an hour, Ye Chong stood up. He felt invigorated, and no longer so fatigued.

Ye Chong began to summarize and analyze his fight against the star-shaped creatures.

What else was here? He did not know. However, he knew that there would be others. No one knew if there would be more of those star-shaped creatures.

It seemed that he was really not suitable to work as an alchemist. He did not put alchemy on the same priority level as combat and mech maneuvering. He would only thought of using alchemy when combat and mechs failed to solve his problems.

He had unwittingly committed this terrible mistake. Once, a long time ago, Mu had taught him to make use of all his resources and pick the most appropriate solution for each problem, and not rely purely on his preferred methods.

If he had released those strong knockout agents and hallucinogens while he was running away earlier, those creatures would not have been able to touch a hair on him, and he would not have been in such a desperate situation. He remembered that he had ran for 500 meters away from them before they caught up to him. If, in those 500 meters, he had released some of those knockout agents, it would have been enough to deal with the whole lot of them.

Ye Chong laughed mockingly at himself before he picked up the undamaged leaf pouches. He counted them, and found that he had used almost all his knockout agents. The emergency just now did not allow him the luxury of deciding how much exactly to use.

Back in the forest, Ye Chong produced a whole lot more of the knockout agents. The forest was rich with resources, and Ye Chong need only acquire the raw ingredients from the edge of the forest. However, he did not mind spending time on this endeavor, since it would increase his likelihood of surviving. He would not want to die just because he grew impatient.

Ye Chong re-entered the valley this time fully prepared. He had seven leaf pouches hanging on his waist, with two of them open at all times. These seven leaf pouches were filled with strong knockout agents. The alchemy bottle filled with redsand dehydrator was also on his waist. He covered his palms with a thick layer of gum, but left his smoke pearl untouched. The two opened leaf pouches were filled with two strong knockout agents with a high dispersion rate. They formed a protective circle around Ye Chong. With the smoke pearl, Ye Chong was immune to its effects. If not for his ring, he would not have been able to use this plan.

Ye Chong did not slow down as he passed by the rocky part that jutted out from the wall from last time. However, he was relieved to see it without any of those creatures.

He marched on forward. The dark red walls had an oppressive feeling to it. The shady sky made the valley felt even more oppressive. There was no sound at all, not even a whisper. Even someone as mentally strong as Ye Chong frowned with worry.

There was no soil in here. All the surfaces were made of rocks. The valley did not have any traces of human activity. The territory was uneven. However, it did not bother Ye Chong much. He could leap and climb like an animal.

Gradually, the path along the valley grew more treacherous. There were troughs to watch out for everywhere, and it was hard to find a flat surface. Ye Chong also noticed that the ground was sloping upwards. That meant he was climbing further up.

The occasional sounds of dripping water in the silent valley were unsettling.

However, Ye Chong quickly got used to his environment. It reminded him of his time on the trash planet, of his solitary life before Mu or Shang made their appearance. The desolate trash mountains were filled with unknown dangers, and he had to face them alone.

Ye Chong soon dismissed those thoughts and focused on his surroundings. This was not the time for nostalgia.

Just then, his ears caught an almost imperceptible buzzing sound.

He immediately stopped in his tracks and focused on listening.

It's right ahead! The sound came from in front of him, just beyond a bend.

The buzzing sound grew louder, and it was heading towards him. Ye Chong quickly studied his surroundings, and found that the

turn in front was about 40 meters wide.

"Alright, let's do this!" Ye Chong decided on his strategy.

He may not know what the buzzing sound implied, but it was never wrong to make the first move.

He took down two of the leaf pouches on his waist and opened them carefully. These were two different kinds of knockout agents. They were both highly effective, and without color or smell, just like the rest of the knockout agents he prepared.

Ye Chong spreaded them out evenly at the bend, moving with familiar ease. These two agents had an effective radius of about 50 to 80 meters, enough to cover the entire bend. A wide perimeter of knockout agents covered the entire bend.

The valley had no wind, and that was very advantageous for Ye Chong.

After doing all this, Ye Chong quickly retreated 500 meters back, before hopping into one of the deep troughs for cover. He wanted to see what the thing was. He must have a direct observation of this creature. If the knockout agents were ineffective, he would have to figure out something else. Of course, this was all for future preparations.

The buzzing sound grew clearer and clearer. Ye Chong waited patiently in the trough, watching the bend closely. He was ready to make a run for it if the knockout agents did not work out.

Buzzzz! The sound grew louder abruptly, like a plucked string of thick metal wire.

From beyond the bend came a huge, dark swarm. The bend instantly fell into darkness.

Ye Chong inhaled deeply, his heart racing. However, his expression did not change. He was all ready to run for his life!

He had never seen so many flying insects before in his life. If



these insects were immune to the knockout agents, then he would be in deep trouble. Combat skills were useless against an army of flying insects.

He stared straight at the bend in front of him, full of suspense.

# Chapter 365: Meeting a Mentalist Again

Splash! A black rain came down at the bend! The black swarm crashed down right at the bend, the dense swarm of black insects giving Ye Chong goosebumps. He was glad for doing what he did. Those insects filled him with dread as he watched.

The buzzing sound was clear as day now. The fact that Ye Chong could still stay calm spoke volumes of his courage.

The insects were slow and dumb. That was Ye Chong's assessment of the flying insects. However, anyone who found themselves surrounded by the insects would die horribly. To Ye Chong, these insects may not be as dangerous as the star-shaped insects yesterday, but without any alchemy chemicals or mechs to help him, he would have only one option - escape. This was not a foe he could fight with bare handed combat.

The bend was not too wide, and with two full leaf pouches of knockout agents, the effect was quite satisfying. Up until now, none of the black insects had flew past the bend yet.

To any observer, these two knockout agents were the perfect insect exterminators. The ground was covered with a thick layer of black insects. However, the insects were not exactly intelligent, and continued to fly straight into the bend.

The insect rain continued on for a full 10 minutes. An entire flying army was thus silently vanquished.

With the buzzing sound gone, the valley returned to its initial silence.

Ye Chong waited for another five minutes, making sure that no more black insects were coming from beyond the bend before coming out of his trough.

He studied the black insects closely. They were thumb-sized, with three pairs of wings on their backs. Each insect's body was covered with a black, metal-like shell. Under its pair of red

compound eyes was a sharp, hollow needle. At the end of its tail was a black, sharp needle. These two must be its weapons. The black insects looked like hornets, but had a few differences with them too. Ye Chong could not determine what they were. The universe was full of all sorts of creatures.

He dismissed the problem quickly, since it was truly a waste of time trying to figure them out.

The knockout agents were ineffective against Ye Chong. He gathered all the black insects together on the ground, which piled up like a mound. In the end, knockout agents were not lethal, and they had an effective time limit.

Ye Chong carefully took out his redsand dehydrator and sprinkled them sparingly on the black mound. He could hear small splattering sounds, and the mound shrunk immediately like a melting snow mountain, except that it was happening all too quickly.

Once he saw to the end of the black insects, Ye Chong returned his redsand dehydrator back to its pouch, satisfied with its work. He would not want any of those black insects to attack him later from behind. Who knew how long those two knockout agents were effective against these insects?

Even though Ye Chong had won, he did not let down his guard. Instead, his two dangerous encounters had led him to become more careful.

He advanced slowly. The land grew more treacherous, and often times he would have to climb to move forward.

Ye Chong was surprised to find there to be a small river in this place. The river zigzagged its way down from high above, bringing life to the valley. Years of water flow shaped the surface of the solid rocks, leaving big and small troughs here and there like a crisscrossing network. The river branched and converged along the troughs as it flowed down, and finally seeped through the

creaks of the rocks into an underground river.

Perhaps it was due to the water, but Ye Chong found the occasional plant in this area, holding onto their lives as they sprouted from the cracks between the rocks.

The further up he went, the larger the river flow, and the more plants he saw.

Ye Chong estimated that he must be about two thousand meters above where he started. The ground was growing level, and he could see small islands of vegetation here. The plant looked healthy, unlike the dead atmosphere in the valley. Here, the temperature was warm enough, and the weather suitable for life. Ye Chong was surprised to see animals here too, scampering off as he made his way through. The only thing that did not fit into the picture was Ye Chong himself. He looked alerted, stepping lightly in preparation, the wooden spear in hand.

Ye Chong abruptly halted. His eyes lit up, and his pulse raced.

He had found signs of human life! There, on the soft grassy plain was the trace of human footsteps. Ye Chong crouched down to have a closer look. Judging from the freshly broken blades of the grass, this person must have been here not too long ago.

Nonetheless, Ye Chong did not get overexcited. That would only get him in danger. His vigilance did its work once again, and he quickly calmed down. He knew nothing about this person, about whether he would be received with friendliness or hostility. Staying on his guard would maximize his chances of survival.

Ye Chong followed the trail.

"Who is it?" A voice abruptly sounded by Ye Chong's ear. He felt a sudden dizziness. Ye Chong was surprised, but he reacted immediately, rolling to the side into a bush. When he reached a small tree, he suddenly leapt up and landed on the tree. Any combat expert would be amazed by his feat.

His every movement was flawless. His reaction time was amazing, and his hiding location was excellent. From above the tree, he could watch everything around him while staying hidden behind the leaves.

Logically, Ye Chong should have had the upper hand right away.

However, he was surprised to find things not as simple as they seemed to be.

"Humph!" The voice humped coldly out of nowhere.

His battle instinct, honed by long experiences in actual combat, warned him of extreme danger! Right after the voice, he felt something binding his body when in fact, there was nothing around him.

The woman in white training garb came to mind - Rui Bing! That was his first thought, which was weird! However, he did not have time to think about it. If the voice was not male, he would have thought it was Rui Bing. He was very familiar with this form of attack, having sparred frequently with Rui Bing.

He was surprised, but still composed.

Ye Chong's eyes grew focused, and his vision began to fill up with many blue lines, swimming around like fishes.

The blue lines were changing drastically, and Ye Chong's vision was filled with the sight of them. He did not panic, however. This was familiar to him.

As expected, the ever-changing blue lines suddenly undergone a drastic change, and began to converge onto a spot. His vision was now all cleared up except for a blue dot.

Unlike Rui Bing's, this blue dot was a lot fainter.

Ye Chong's eyes lit up. The wooden spear in his hand came to life. A black figure shot its way across the air.

The wooden spear met its target, hitting the blue spot. From the

feel of his hand, Ye Chong felt that he had stabbed through something, but he was surprised to find the binding on him still there! Based on his experience fighting Rui Bing, he could always make it go away once he attacked the blue dot.

However, that strong feeling of restriction around Ye Chong's body persisted.

"Huh?" The man hidden in the shadows sounded surprised.

Ye Chong did not panic because of this unexpected outcome. His arm muscles contracted abruptly, and the wooden spear began to vibrate at high frequency. The ironwood was strong, and when the spear vibrated, it became a terribly powerful weapon. Snap! A soft sound was heard. Ye Chong felt his body go loose, and the restraint was gone.

Ye Chong moved without hesitation, his body now a blur. Without knowing his enemy's position, the best option would be to move fast to prevent being targeted, and try to locate his enemy.

"Jie expert!" The hidden assaulter's voice was full of surprise, and even a little joy.

Ye Chong turned. The man had exposed his location through his voice.

Ye Chong's explosive power propelled him forward like an arrow!

A mentalist!

When Ye Chong had his first look of the attacker, his mind immediately supplied a name for him. Mentalists were a mysterious bunch, and he had not seen one for a long while. The last time was in the Orbits.

Mentalists were easy to recognize. They always wore a light green robe, and dressed plainly. More importantly, they had a unique aura about them, and Ye Chong could easily identify them. Be it Jia Zhuo or Mr Yin, both had left a deep impression in Ye Chong.

Mu or Shang had even interrogated Mr Yin for a lot of information about mentalist training, but it was a pity that, unlike with other skills, Ye Chong had absolutely no talent for it. He had kept practicing meditation to no avail. If meditation was not useful for combat, Ye Chong would have abandoned it a long time ago.

This mentalist had long white hair that reached down smoothly all the way to his waist. His smooth face made him look incredibly young. Only the crow's feet showed his true age. He had a mature, weather-worn face and a refreshing smile. Donning light green clothing, the white-haired man stood out easily. Despite his heavily discolored clothing with many tears to match, he still looked like a composed gentleman.

"What a young Jie expert!" The white-haired man did not sound hostile, and even said this with a smile.

Ye Chong did not reply. He was estimating the distance between them. If he launched himself forward, what were the odds of him killing the man in one blow? Mentalists were too mysterious, and even Mu or Shang did not know much about them.

More importantly, this white-haired mentalist was very strong!

## Chapter 366: Huang Baiyi

The white-haired mentalist smiled as though he could read Ye Chong's thoughts, and spoke up first, "Relax, relax, I come in peace. Oh, you should know that mentalists are very sensitive."

Ye Chong knew this alright. Mentalists were all about mental training. They were more sensitive than the average person. Even combat experts with their strong six senses were no match for the mentalists. Strong mentalists could even do something akin to having premonitions, and even Mu or Shang did not understand the reason behind this.

It was a queer phenomenon, but a true one, and Ye Chong had seen it in action himself. Back when he fought against Feng Su, the woman's fighting techniques had left a deep impression in him. The truth was, Feng Su was not all that great in combat, but he was the one who was in a tight spot when they fought.

Ye Chong was not afraid of these abstract concepts. He knew more about mentalists than the average person. Nothing in this world is absolute. These skills were only a kind of element, like speed and strength. Mentalists were just people who were particularly skilled in this element.

They stood with 15 meters between them. Ye Chong did not attack immediately, since he was not confident of succeeding. It was obvious that this white-haired man was much more powerful than Mr Yin in the Orbits. That mental restriction on him was also more powerful than Rui Bing's. Who knew if he had other ways of attacking! With 15 meters between them, it would only take him an instant to cover the distance. However, he also knew that while mentalists were physically weaker, their attacks were usually faster than combat experts.

They attack by controlling the mind.

That was a bit iffy. Back on the trash planet, Mu had told Ye



Chong about the importance of having spirit when attacking. However, Ye Chong had only really achieved this with his lance techniques, which was also when he achieved Jie. However, even as a Jie expert, he could do little in terms of controlling the mind. On the other hand, Rui Bing as a Jie expert outdid him in this field. She could even perform purely mental attacks.

Of course, Ye Chong had no opinion on that. He was in pursuit of strength. Strength was the result of a combination of factors, and not just some specific ones. Besides, everyone had their own unique ways of combat. Ye Chong, for example, excel in physical strength and speed. The September Lan Family's muscle control techniques allowed him to perform miraculous feats with his body. Aside from physical strength, speed and mind, there were many other elements at play, such as experience and tactics.

"Who are you?" Ye Chong asked, his plain voice sounding hard and expressionless.

The white-haired mentalist was not offended. He smiled gently and said, "I am Huang Baiyi, a mentalist." Huang Baiyi was not exactly handsome, but his demeanor and charisma were flawless. His voice was calm and steady, without any awkwardness. His calm demeanor was entirely opposite of Ye Chong's calmness; the former was warm, the latter cold.

Ye Chong was doing a lot better now, as he could partially hide his killing intent. This was unlike before, when he was like an unsheathed blade, always so noticeable and not fitting in whenever he went.

"Huang?" Ye Chong's eyes widened. "Do you know Huang Jiming?" He was very touchy with the subject of the Three Aristocratic Families. As members of Xi Feng Clan, most women had the surname Feng, while men had the surname Huang. Huang Jiming was one of the elites of Xi Feng Clan. If this white-haired mentalist was from Xi Feng Clan, he must know him.

"Huang Jiming?" Huang Baiyi paused in thought, and shook his head. "Don't know him. Who's he?" His expression was open, nothing suspicious about him at all. More importantly, his pulse did not change.

He was not lying. Ye Chong calmed down. This was the free space zone, and it was very unlikely to meet a member of the Xi Feng Clan.

"Is he your enemy?" Huang Baiyi asked, curious.

"No," Ye Chong answered crisply.

Huang Baiyi laughed softly and studied Ye Chong with interest. "My young friend, how old are you?"

"Why should I tell you?" Ye Chong asked bluntly.

Huang Baiyi was surprised, and laughed heartily. "Okay, okay. How about this? I'll ask you a question, you'll ask me a question. Quid pro quo, and you have to answer all questions posed. What do you think?"

Ye Chong thought about it, and nodded. "Alright." He too had many questions of his own. Perhaps this man could provide him some answers.

Huang Baiyi smiled and said, "Alright, hmm, I'll ask first. Consider that my first question."

"23," Ye Chong answered as briefly as possible.

Huang Baiyi's eyes lit up with surprised. "Amazing! A Jie expert at such a young age, your future is full of potential! Hmm, your turn then."

Ye Chong tilted his head and gave it a moment's thought before saying, "I'd like to know your true strength." This was what Ye Chong needed to know right now, as it will guide him in making the right decisions.

Huang Baiyi was caught off guard, and smiled wryly. "Now that's

a hard one. I don't know how much you know about mentalists. Mentalists are not like your world of combat, where there are clear delineation of levels in strength and achievement. Mentalists have no such levels, so I don't know how to describe my true strength." He pondered for a moment before continuing, "I began practising meditation when I was six, and it's been 60 years since. I reached my first bottleneck at 30, my second at 45. As for my abilities, well, I'm not too bad compared to the other mentalists."

He spoke his last sentence lightly, but it was tinged with absolute confidence.

Ye Chong was shocked. If this man had practised meditation since six years old, and it had been 60 years since, then he must be 66 years old now. He could not reconcile the image of this white-haired middle-aged man and an elderly.

Bottlenecks were something that anyone strong enough will have. Reaching a bottleneck meant that that person had achieved a significant level of proficiency. To the average person, reaching one bottleneck was already considered miraculous.

Ye Chong had only reached his first bottleneck so far. It was when he broke through this bottleneck that he attained Jie. His second bottleneck did not seem likely. This man must be quite powerful if he had broke through two bottlenecks! While he did not know if bottlenecks had the same meaning for mentalists as they were for combat experts, he was sure that this man must be very powerful.

"Err, if you're not happy with my answer, you can ask another question. This one doesn't count." Huang Baiyi's easy and open attitude was easily likeable.

Ye Chong shook his head. "No need. You ask." From the confident voice of Huang Baiyi, he already had his answer.

"Are you interested in learning the skills of mentalists?" Huang Baiyi looked straight into Ye Chong's eyes, and quickly explained,

"Haha, you'll know how dull life is here very soon. It's better to find something to do to pass the time."

"No," Ye Chong answered with certainty. He had no talent in the realm of the mind. This he knew from a long history of experimentation. Besides, he was already studying a large mix of skills. What he had to do know was to consolidate them. Picking up too many skills would only leave him unaccomplished in all of them.

Ye Chong's solid rejection surprised Huang Baiyi. However, he quickly recovered and nodded. "Each to their own. Some things you can't force." He spoke with equanimity, suggesting a very open and tolerant personality.

It was Ye Chong's turn. "What is this place?"

Huang Baiyi took a curious glance at Ye Chong. "You don't know? How did you end up here? This is the Black Forest, the most dangerous place on Dankwood planet. You're lucky, considering that you've survived so far."

Huang Baiyi sat down as he continued, "I know what you want to ask. However, I don't know the way out. Guess how long I've been staying here."

"How long?" Ye Chong could not help but asked.

"10 years!"

Ye Chong fell silent. For someone to live here alone for 10 years, it must be a maddening experience.

Huang Baiyi smiled, unperturbed. "It's not a bad place, actually. There's no war, no fights. Once, I was lonely, but now you've arrived. I'm curious, though, how did you end up here? Even a Jie expert, it's very unlikely for you to survive the Black Forest unscathed."

"I know a little alchemy," Ye Chong answered.

"I see! The Black Forest is an alchemist's paradise, but also a place of death! He was spot on. Ye Chong agreed with him. Black Forest offered alchemy ingredients in abundance, and was definitely a paradise for alchemists. However, this also made the place dangerous. The average alchemist would not survive for long in the Black Forest.

Huang Baiyi looked at Ye Chong curiously, and said almost jokingly, "To think that I'd meet a genius. A Jie expert skilled in alchemy. Haha, that's a powerful combination of skills!" It seemed that he was familiar with all these different occupations.

Ye Chong no longer felt like killing him anymore. If Huang Baiyi was speaking the truth, then it would be important to have a comrade here. He knew from his experience on the trash planet that loneliness was a much harder fight to win against compared to physical battles.

However, Ye Chong did not give up. He would study this area himself.

# Chapter 367: The Dark Secret

Huang Baiyi was kind of a nice person. That was Ye Chong's conclusion after interacting with him for few days. He was both well-educated and well-mannered, while he was so experienced in socialization that even Ye Chong started to grow on him.

"Did you discover anything?" asked Huang Baiyi.

Ye Chong was obliged to scout the area daily to look for the way out here. Well, Huang Baiyi had done that before, while being a little pessimistic, he still asked Ye Chong in a concerned manner.

"Nope," shook Ye Chong. He in fact had yet discovered a path out here. There were technically two and two directions only, where one led towards the Black Forest, the other led up the slope to the peak at which one would be welcomed by the deadly cliff. It did not sound so bad if one possessed a mech. Leaving the place would only be a matter of time even with a Raven. Unfortunately, sadly, coincidentally, Ye Chong just had nothing in his hand. The waist bag of all technology and hope in his possession had already been handed to Rui Bing during the emergency back then.

Technology is truly strength! The truest hope!

That was the lesson of his life.

"Well, take your time. You would get it someday. Not like we are in a hurry anyway," comforted Huang Baiyi, who had gotten used to the place over the course of 10 years. He was practically cold-hearted on ever leaving the place. It was rather satisfying that god decided to bestow him a companion in this labyrinth.

"Mhm," muttered Ye Chong as he twisted the grilling fish. If there was no other way out, then he had to join the Black Forest again. So there was this deep pond with fish of a particular species about the size of his palm and tasted fair. It would not be a chore to get some fancy spices from the forest to enhance their meals but passing the valley had become a taboo for him ever since those

horrible lifeforms approached him. Luckily his second cautious visit ended safely and meals of the following days had turned better.

Huang Baiyi was not the carnivore in the team, he favored the berries, which the fact was peculiar to Ye Chong that it felt like a miracle when Huang Baiyi had not suffered from nutritional deficiency in the past 10 years.

Ye Chong would get him some berries on every visit to the Black Forest, since the forest offered way better variety than the outskirts. Huang Baiyi was frail, that every tiny travel sounded like taking his life as he panted. Ye Chong was pretty much amazed of how Huang Baiyi was once able to get so high on the slope.

"So...", initiated Huang Baiyi, chewing the last bit of berry, "are you sure you don't want to learn anything about Mentalist... not at all?"

"No," replied Ye Chong promptly.

"Uhh... We would need something else to kill the time...", The man pondered, "Do you know chess?" with expectation in his eyes, he asked.

"I don't know," shook Ye Chong. Mu had never taught him the dance of chess pieces over the board, though he remembered how Mu once was engaged in the duel with Little Rock on that.

"How about I teach you then?" Huang Baiyi remained persistent.

"No thanks," promptly Ye Chong replied.

"Why?" Huang Baiyi was bewildered.

"What good can it do to me?" Ye Chong seemed more perplexed than the man.

"Well, you could kill fair amount of time with it?" answered Huang Baiyi

"Time is precious. Don't just kill it." Ye Chong did not seem to

perceive the man.

"What?" Huang Baiyi's eyes enlarged, "Tell me, what do you do for pastime then?"

"Learning... Practicing..." He went silent, "Oh and... thinking."

"What else?" asked Huang Baiyi.

"What do you mean by 'what else'?" Ye Chong was finding the question ridiculous, "What else can I do when I have no more time?"

Huang Baiyi's ultimate mentalist's mentality seemed to have cracked...

"You are only doing these, everyday?"

"Not exactly," corrected Ye Chong. "There were also biological activities like eating and sleeping to sustain my living. 90% of the time would be on these 3 activities I've mentioned, with 10% as the buffer."

"I see..." Huang Baiyi's laugh sounded dry as the sand, "Do you find it interesting then..."

"Interesting?" Ye Chong tilted his head, pondered, "It's always interesting to see your strength improving, isn't it?" Probably that would be his favorite pastime then...

"Right, right." Suddenly Huang Baiyi felt his linguistic ability had regressed decades behind, he was at loss of words.

...

It was a moment of silence, then he asked, "Do you have a life goal then?"

"Life goal?" Ye Chong was astonished, as his mind chewed on the phrase with Mu Shang and Rui Bing flashing by... "Com..." Something escaped his lips, "Companion. To find companion."

"Good goal." Huang Baiyi was calm again, briefly he smiled,



"Better than what I had in mind when I was your age."

"My age?" That was when Ye Chong realized this very man was already 66 years old.

"Yeah." The old man was sentimental, "When I was your age, all I thought was how to avenge myself, even till 10 years ago." His tone was filled with the bitterness of the missing youth.

"Avenge?" Ye Chong's brows rose. That term was not foreign to his ears, as he once, too, had the same thought. He wanted to avenge his Papa, but that mission had gone unheard in the following arcs, while he also had seen through the vanity of the world. Papa will never return even if Ye Chong went and slaughtered every villain behind the scene. It did not sound like an optimal choice if he was too consumed by it. Ye Chong held the same attitude towards his identity. Probably... the Ye family had something to do with him, but what about that? He never agreed to the family, and never once he thought he was related to them anyhow.

He had Mu Shang... mhm, and Rui Bing. Well, it felt a little complicated to define the relationship with her but, in short, Ye Chong felt these individuals were the truest intimate he could imagine.

Other than these intimates, he could not think of any relationship that he should care. After countless battles as he wandered in the galaxies all these years, Ye Chong had learned what to fight for.

Sigh... I shall... pick a safe place and settle down, living in tranquility after I reunited with Mu Shang and Rui Bing.

This was his sole wish, his greatest wish.

"Yes, to avenge." Huang Baiyi's nostalgic voice broke Ye Chong's schemata, "Though I no longer feel anything of it, I in fact was once a person in search of avenger."

"Why?"

"The clan. I was from a clan, a great clan." Pride was heard in his words, "Well, once a great clan. We were glorious... but I had never experienced the glory... There were only 13 men left when I was born. And I, was the sole descendant..."

Ye Chong flinched as he remembered a portion of history he had learned before. It was a brief lesson but he was able to grasp the gist of it, in which a tribe or clan would probably be dead when there was hardly a population remained in the world. With one single descendant, it was not even possible to reproduce.

"Our bloodline is rather peculiar, as we could pass certain traits of our family to offspring only of parents from the same tribe. Well, hah, you could say our tribe is long done-for when I was born." His eyes wailed, "And I learned the past only after I grew up. Our tribe was never this desolate, as we were once the natives of the free space zone, yes, the true innate local natives. But on one day, a large population surged the area, with a way higher technological standard in comparison, though they too did not fancy the technology. They were friendly too. They even invited the few main tribes over for tea, that includes us, of course. We were the brightest after all. However... after the few tribes of population witnessed the greatness of the outsiders' technologies, things changed, as the residents parted..."

"Few members of the group imagined leaving the space zone would guarantee them the best future, while the others insisted on preserving the traditions. Eventually, as what you might have presumed, the tribe broke up as those few members left the place, whereas the remaining slowly got buried by time."

Ye Chong felt his brain was struck by something, "Xi Feng!" The phrase escaped, he remembered that the little boy once mentioned that the Xi Feng clan was once a part of the residents in the free space zone.

"Hm?" Feng Baiyi seemed surprised, "Never expected you would know that." He gave a smile wryly, "I thought only people of the older generation would remember our tribe." Well it seemed like he was not aware that he was already old enough to be part of the older generation.

Ye Chong then became calm, probably the "Xi Feng clan" he mentioned was not quite the tribe Feng Baiyi had told in the story, since Feng Baiyi would never expect this very young man was an absolute outsider at this place.

"As soon as I started getting aware of this world, I always hold one ambition, that is, to find the lost tribal members who left the space zone in the past, though I have no idea what I could do if I ever find them, hah... isn't that funny, or even ridiculous? Hahaha... I just wanted to find them, after all. I tried asking around, by hook or by crook, via kind words or threatening ones, eventually I got news, bad news... that those outsiders had destroyed the pathway right after our compatriots left the place, thus the utter isolation of the space zone with the outside world, and my deepest grief..."

Ye Chong was silent. He knew there must be another way that could lead them to He Yue... well, at least that one path they once took turned out to be one, maybe?

"Not too long after this, I had hit a dead end of my training, and I began wandering, looking for a breakthrough, and that was when I encountered our men..." Feng Baiyi's calm eyes suddenly tightened, the mood intensified!

Ye Chong was shocked by the pressure exerted in the atmosphere. Such mentality... that it could drive Ye Chong away....

Feng Baiyi quickly withdrew the tension as he gave an apologetic smile, "I'm not sure of your understanding on the expertise of Mentalist, but it is similar to the martial arts, in which there are

several branches, styles holding different beliefs and masteries. And our tribe, because of our bloodline, trained entirely differently than the folks out there. So, I did recognize them, at first sight, during the first moment of encounter. They should be the direct offspring of our tribe but... strangely their performance was extremely low..."

"Maybe you could not understand how mentalist works but generally offsprings of our tribe are born mentalists, yet awkwardly the energy they exuded was not purely of the mentality, there was something else..."

Mentalist Pilot?! The term flashed in Ye Chong's mind.

Yes, since pilot was still the trend in the outside world and Ye Chong remembered the strength of this kind of pilot.

"And I won. On a 1 versus 3." The statement went flat, as if a report, even though it sent shock to Ye Chong's perception. Those Mentalist Pilots of the Sanctuary were strong enough to break an entire army and Feng Baiyi could challenge a one-on-three. Of what strength did he wield? And those pilots he encountered were merely the troops at the outermost defense, imagine the pilots from the core. Of what psychic would it possess?

"Yes, I won. But I was not pleased by it. Not at all. Instead, I was mad, utterly angered. The first time I felt the actual rage burning in my soul since I was born, as I never expected their psychic ability to be this substandard. Did they discard even the very last bit of our tradition? Did they not? And I went on an investigation just to taste that earth-shattering truth. They had changed, the last bit of tradition had vaporized as their will. They had turned more intrusive than before. The worst part was... they seemed to have an indescribable relationship with the Abductor."

Abductor? They are related to Xi Feng clan?! What exactly is Xi Feng clan?!

"So I began wandering again, looking for Abductors to hunt. My

target was simple, I just wanted them to recognize the strength of Mentalist so that they would regret themselves and pick up the tradition they once trashed before."

Well...

Ye Chong shook his head slightly. Be it a Mentalist or a Martial Arts Practitioners, humans were still humans. They are fragile. They are frail. Fleshes only get grilled on metal and do not break through it. Mechs dominated the world for a reason.

"I would have a careful scouting at every place. And as soon as I seized one Abductor, the rest would never run, their nest would be busted," flatly Huang Baiyi elaborated. Ye Chong knew the old man was not exaggerating his story, since mental manipulation was the Mentalist's game. Hypnosis, behavioral control were the common practices even by the trainees. Let alone the super Mentalists like Huang Baiyi.

"I spent the next three years doing the same. And I did make a breakthrough since then, sadly, there was great restriction imposed on the spaceship of the free space zone. It was a hassle to even sneak in. So I lost my progress there, or they would have been a goner." The flat statement was ironed with threats.

"Wait, there is spaceship in the space zone?" Ye Chong rose, the question went word-by-word precisely, since it was unimaginable to have a spaceship, a craft of the finest technology in a primitive space zone that would go against it.

Like how in the space zone do they have a spaceship?

## Chapter 368: Proposition

"Spaceships are indeed a rare sight in the space zone but they still exist, since this was not the only planet in the zone, and it is unavoidable to make contact with the other planets. I had heard that the development, the technique specifically for building the spaceships was also one of the 'gifts' brought by those outsiders during their visit that year. Normally, a planet would be facilitated with only two spaceships which would be under possession of the two largest tribes of the planet. For example on Dankwood, the Han family and Renlo tribe own the two limited ships, although they hardly used the ships, only during the Congregation perhaps," elaborated Huang Baiyi as Ye Chong appeared to be confused in his eyes.

"Congrega-what?" Ye Chong did not quite get the foreign term.

"You don't know what Congregation is?" Huang Baiyi's stare grew foreign, "With your capabilities, how would you ever be uninvited to a Congregation? Did your teacher disallow you from joining the event?"

"I don't know." The plain, honest reply from Ye Chong was even more confusing.

"Maybe your teacher did not wish you to be distracted by things other than the training. Well then, you have a good teacher there." Huang Baiyi was sentimental, but towards Ye Chong's ever-confused expression, he went on explaining, "A Congregation is an event that happened once every 5 years and is held on Planet Risserd, in which all participants are the topmost experts in every planet out there. It is an important event in the space zone. There are many categories, but martial arts, mystic arts (the mentalist expertise mostly) and alchemy are given much greater attention, as they have the most yardsticks. Every planet has their own set of standards of 10 each on these categories. But, to a planet, 10 yardsticks are a bit less and over the top for decorative purposes, as

the competition is far greater in actuality, many people had died during the process. Sigh, all for an impractical fame. Your teacher has a better insight in this! To not let you join the event!" Huang Baiyi gave out a loud sigh, shaking his head.

"Have you joined the Congregation before?" asked Ye Chong, curiously.

"Yes I did." Frankly he replied, "Thrice. But I had never become a champion. Not even once." His tone remained flat, as if the statement was more factual than a fantasy to he himself. It felt like a fantasy to Ye Chong however, as it was not very long since he came to this tiny barren-looking village of the Wangs and he had already encountered quite a number of adepts. Now, set back and imagine, with the area and population of experts multiplied into size of a planet... Huang Baiyi was surely something for he was able to pass the selection process and joined the Congregation thrice at least.

Not that shocked... to be honest. Not like the shock-shocked, jump-shocked, scream-shocked kind of shock, not the kind like fandom on the forum discussing the latest moves of the mysterious YC, Ye Chong had met countless miracle-manufacturing experts since he encountered Mu Shang. Be those experts from the field of piloting, martial arts or the alchemy or those from the darker side like the Mavericks, these surfacing figures already had convinced him that there would always be a greater one somewhere out there, only whether known or not known to the humanity.

"The Wangs?" Huang Baiyi sounded very familiar to every force in the place, "You meant the family of the Segean Sea? They were great once in the past, although they were already facing regression the moment they migrated too the coast of Seagean Sea. Speaking of them, I truly wonder what had happened to them all these years... But I guess their forces lingered somehow so they are still far better off than most folks like us," muttered Huang Baiyi as he tried reminiscing the past, "Oh yes, they once had quite a figure

in the tribe, a Jie expert if I remember correctly... he joined the Congregation too... He should be in his eighties now, well, given that he's still alive, though I remember he seemed to have banished his own skills 20 years ago... on an accident? He apparently committed some taboo of his own kind... Wait, why the Wangs all of sudden? Is any of them your teacher?"

"Nope," shook Ye Chong.

Okay, wow, the Wangs haven't even flashed their trump yet. Luckily I did not join the war directly or it would be bad, very bad... But what about Rui Bing and the others... I wonder what had happened to all of them...

"Oh..." Huang Baiyi's eyes, trained by encounters over ages, recognized the expression of Ye Chong, "You seek to avenge? You have bad blood with the family? Well, with your skills, I don't think you would be terribly sorry in the fight. Wait, so did the elderly show up? Or... they have a new Jie expert?"

"They came in waves," concisely Ye Chong replied.

"What?" Huang Baiyi was bewildered, "Don't tell me your teacher never informed you any rules and regulation here before letting you out... You can't be challenging the authority all alone on a whim, it's an embarrassment."

Ye Chong was wordless. It had been a nice chat with Huang Baiyi but he would not want to reveal himself being an utter outsider to the place, not just yet.

...

"Sigh! Let's stop talking about this! It'd be pointless if we are stuck here!" That was when Huang Baiyi realized they had sailed way off the course, although he was so indulged in chattering at the moment, "So, what's your best move?" And so he initiated a new, better topic.

"Lancing." It took Ye Chong a while to spit the two syllables. He



was puzzled by the question, to be honest, since he was technically an all-rounded fighter. He was good at muscle control, exceptional in strength, speed and accuracy. He was also agile in hand-on-hand, or an armed fight with his dagger. He probably was good at everything while being exceptionally good at nothing. If he were to spit something, lancing seemed to be it?

"By lancing you meant this?" Huang Baiyi's glance set upon Ye Chong's wooden lance. Well, Ye Chong no longer possessed a mech, so any form of weaponry would be his key to survival. He had been carrying the wooden lance since forever.

"Yeah," he replied briefly.

"Oh! A lancer!" Huang Baiyi lowered his eyes, reminiscing again, "I do remember there were few adepts of lancing, but lancers do not seem to be as common as swordsmen..." Ye Chong's glance was sending him the awkward signal, "Well, ummm, uh, since, little I know being a Mentalist, not an actual martial arts practitioner."

"To be frank, I did once discuss the issue with the real deal before, and his comments left in my mind forever. He once said that, the weapon might be different, the technique might be different, but the core factor, the determiners to its mastery are always the same few. Do you know what those determiners are?" He looked at Ye Chong interestingly.

"Strength. Speed. Spirit." Ye Chong said without hesitation, then he held for a while, as something came to his mind, "Maybe the Angles too. And timing. Yeah, these two should form the factor of 'Position', both spatial and temporal. Hm, yeah, position."

Huang Baiyi remained silent. His mouth was half open.

"What's wrong? Were my answers wrong?" He then went on pondering his answers earlier for the next three minutes, "It should be right." He lifted his head as he stood strong for his claim.

"You are right indeed," replied Huang Baiyi with sentiments, as

he stared at Ye Chong, "You are brilliant for a twenty-three-year-old, knowing the working of this."

"The senior said the same exact reply to me that year. In a typical martial arts execution, Spirit is not as apparent as Strength, Speed or Position, and it would only manifest itself during some occasion when you had achieved a greater self... which I guess you had experienced it well enough."

Ye Chong nodded his head approvingly.

Finally! Huang Baiyi was excited, as he finally found the lighter to Ye Chong's interest! And they began discussing passionately on the determiners of martial arts, with focus on the factor of Spirit. It felt like a talk between a child and an adult at the beginning. The child was Ye Chong of course due to his lack of understanding on Spirit in this, but both of their positions soon switched when other factors came into light.

Their friendship grew rapidly, as Huang Baiyi had appeared to be an inquisitive educated man in Ye Chong's eyes, which was quite his type... Hah, but the irony was, both of them knew well deep in their hearts, that the passionate conversation was merely a mean to kill time. It was only logical for Huang Baiyi to act so excitingly when he finally discovered a companion, and something that he could work hard with that companion.

The motive was not the concern as Ye Chong was amazed by Huang Baiyi's mental capabilities which appeared to be almost peculiar and otherworldly to him. The capabilities were unpredictable enough to earn Ye Chong's respect, since... well, as his policy would go - strength determines hierarchy.

Coincidentally, Huang Baiyi was also as surprised as Ye Chong, no, maybe even more surprised than Ye Chong who looked literally like a monster with those monstrous strength inside his feeble-looking body. Ye Chong reacted quickly, like too quickly while his tenacity was great as he kept his "hobbies" at all eternity. Ye Chong

had never stopped spending the rest of his day "pondering" ever since their first encounter.

And Ye Chong, as he said, also did practices. No entertainment, no flashy movement, just the good old-fashioned basic moves. Ye Chong seemed really enjoyed doing it. Huang Baiyi discerned few hundred thousands times of repetition on the same exact movement by Ye Chong as an attempt to improvise it. Ye Chong would come to him, soaked in hot sweat after the practice everyday. Well, it would be very much shocking for a Jie expert like Ye Chong to get himself jammed on the same swing for a gazillion times.

That was when Huang Baiyi realized the fact that Ye Chong's skills were mostly founded by these torturing, punishing, virtually destructive training the whole time.

Ye Chong also demonstrated his tremendous comprehension and thinking skills.

Such horror...

The only thing that annoyed Huang Baiyi was how Ye Chong insisted to not even have a session on the mystic arts with him, while ironically being extremely interested in the working of mental application, although the main focus had always revolved about the ways to overcome Mentalists in a fight. One could imagine Huang Baiyi's quivering corners as he smiled along.

It was only a matter of time till Huang Baiyi realized he had become basically... a coach, more like a training partner, to be precise. Like most wizardry, his mentality was sustaining while his physical attributes were... well, it would be basically a painful comparison if his partner happened to be the inhuman Ye Chong. Huang Baiyi could feel his back withering after days of training, while Ye Chong remained alive and kicking.

I am indeed old... Hah, age is a terminal punishment.

The sentiments rose in his head again and again,.

He did not intend to retain his privacy however, as he never was the stingy person on knowledge-sharing, especially towards a fine diligent young man like Ye Chong. Ambition? Avenge? Appreciation? Those were no longer in his mind after being all alone in the last 10 years.

The simple life was still attractive to him... even though it was a lonesome life. Thought he.

He knew Ye Chong would leave here one day. But his knowledge-sharing session was never getting less passionate. It was a pity however, that Ye Chong was not (and not going to become) a Mentalist.

Sigh, probably the true mystic arts of the Xi Feng clan would mark its actual death very soon. Oh well... what can I do?

At least Huang Baiyi was forgiving on this, unlike his younger self.

Ye Chong caught that growing passion in Huang Baiyi's session and worked harder. He might not become a Mentalist in the end, but he would acquire better understanding on the control of his spirit, his mentality, which should be able to enhance his attacks. Most importantly, he would find a way to fight against the Mentalists from Huang Baiyi's session.

Even though he worked extra hard on learning, never once he stopped figuring out the way to escape this dangerous forest.

And he had just gotten a feasible proposition.

Here's some information.

There are technically two directions from their current site. One descends towards the Black Forest across the valley, another ascends right up to the peak. As mentioned before, there is nothing but a deadly cliff on top of the peak where the mountains covered up the forest.

It would be a simple task if he had a mech, but sadly Ye Chong only had a dagger.

His preposition was... well, of course not making a mech, he might be the most talented craftsman but he was not a magician. Perhaps he could make a simple glider, he thought. The peak to the ground stood at a height about 3000 to 5000 meters. If nature was kind enough to not drastically change the direction of air, at great chance he would nail a safe landing. That would sound less like a dead-or-alive gamble compared to a trip to the Black Forest.

Thanks to the fundamental knowledge of mech production, Ye Chong was very much familiar to the theories of aerodynamics. A glider however, was something of the museum at that period. So Ye Chong could only design one from scratch based on calculation and the knowledge he had.

Huang Baiyi acted cooperatively the next few days, as he did not disturb Ye Chong, although a little bewildered by Ye Chong's blatantly increased duration on his pondering session.

Ye Chong went to the Black Forest and returned with a broad log. It was quite a sight to see a feeble man carrying a giant log like toothpick. Huang Baiyi's expression was priceless. The twigs had been removed by Ye Chong promptly, judging by the fresh cuts on the surface.

"What are you going to do with this?" asked Ye Chong in confusion. He simply could not figure out the hows and whys.

Ye Chong worked on, without lifting his head, "Something to fly."

"Something to what?" Huang Baiyi could not believe his ears. He had neither seen an actual mech, nor learned aerodynamic. The only inorganic substance that could fly was probably a spaceship to him.

But spaceship? Log wood?

... How?

Ye Chong carried on slicing. His dagger was the perfect tool for this. It was sharp enough to slice Ironwood, so it was nothing strange that he could cut this piece of log effortlessly. Ye Chong picked the trunk of a wood named Sandtree. The hardness and durability were great. The best thing was this kind of tree had a rather balanced quality across the entire trunk. So it would be convenient for Ye Chong to perform a calculation on its center of gravity.

No processor, no fancy technology, all Ye Chong could rely to realize his proposition was his head and his brain.

## Chapter 369: The Seed

Ye Chong's life suddenly got all busy and lively. Well, it was not much of a hassle to design a glider, rather the problem laid within the parts necessary for the building process - what parts would make up the portion, how they would fit in the entire dynamic and what material Ye Chong could use that just so happened to be in the forest. To figure that out, Ye Chong paid another visit to the Black Forest, in search of the appropriate materials.

Whenever Ye Chong began crafting things, Huang Baiyi would be watching by, with interests zapping from his eyes. And every time Ye Chong demonstrated his impeccable control of strength exerted on even the smallest parts, gasps and compliments would escape Huang Baiyi, to be ignored by Ye Chong however.

The breathtaking sight was justifiable. Anyone would be gasping as much as Huang Baiyi when they saw that broad log shrinking in Ye Chong's grip gradually like magic, as Ye Chong's hands swung gracefully his dagger.

Huang Baiyi gave a stare at the strange parts around and set his bewilderment upon this unfriendly, withdrawn young man, as he wondered what exactly the young man was. At first, Huang Baiyi assumed the young man to be merely a hardworking student once imprisoned by his master doing training deep in the woods, and was liberated at last. But hey, crafting parts from scratch was not included in a typical lesson plan of a martial arts practitioner.

Huang Baiyi had travelled to countless places, met with countless entities when he was young. And those parts on the ground convincingly were the essence of an ample amount of knowledge one possessed. Martial arts practitioners were no scholar - it was a truth universally acknowledged. Sure there were practitioners with variation in personalities. He had seen the crude brawler, the cold-blooded, the gentleman, the tenacious adventurer, but never once he had encountered a scholarly fighter, especially of such age.

A man's time has its limits since he was born, and every field has its own depth deeper than the sea.

It would take generally the entire life of a person to master one single field. Martial arts practitioners would master their physique, as what their harsh training would define, with countless repetition of the same move attempting to make breakthrough and discovery. Huang Baiyi might be unaware of what field a glider would exactly originate, surely it would be a field that required massive calculation.

Unlike martial arts practitioners, it was more likely for one to encounter a scholarly Mentalist.

Huang Baiyi did not intend to inquire however, as he had technically perceived Ye Chong's temper these days and he would not wish to disrupt their founded relationship hard to come by because of a silly, trivial question.

He was more concerned on the conversation with Ye Chong, of the working of the ancient mystic arts. The true Xi Feng clan had died decades ago. So it was his sole wish to pass these knowledge to Ye Chong at the very least. Those were from the ancients after all, that he would not want them to permanently depart from the world along someday.

The misfortune was, Ye Chong did not seem interested in becoming a Mentalist. The fortunate was however, Ye Chong seemed intrigued of the mystic arts, although merely because it was Ye Chong's habit to go too deep into everything.

Huang Baiyi eventually stopped mentioning the word "Mentalist" and just instilled Ye Chong with the theories of mental manipulation.

"Alright, so, the core of mystic arts is merely about manipulation of mentality, your own mentality that is. Well, of course, this is not a theory I came up during my sleep. This theory could be verified. So first off, what is mentality? Is it attitude? Is it your



senses? Generally, there had been lots of definitions going on in the field, like it could mean your soul, your spirit, some said..."

Huang Baiyi got pumped up as he saw that concentrated stare of Ye Chong. His aged face remained calm as he explained. Most of the ideologies were passed down to Ye Chong through the little talk of his.

Whenever a concept was mentioned he would need to provide a generous amount of example, like an actual application of a certain technique, that was when Huang Baiyi became utterly detailed on his explanation. Ye Chong was focused even on the details. It was a journey of 60 years when Huang Baiyi began his training and he had gained temperament throughout the 10 year stay in the Black Forest. The rich experience from fights in the past, the foundation he was given when he was born, and the contemplation of 10 years, all these had made his mystic arts evolved.

As there were too much information in every conversation with Huang Baiyi, Ye Chong had to spend a considerable amount of time to digest it daily. So the progress of glider production became halted - a pleasing sight to Huang Baiyi, although his expression remained unchanged. The approach Huang Baiyi took was tricky, revealing just enough information on how to fight against a Mentalist to pique Ye Chong's interests and kept him busy.

Soon a complete system of the mystic arts had been built inside Ye Chong's head, well, only the theoretical part of course, which was more than sufficient for Ye Chong. To him, a little understanding of the mystic arts would allow him to at least not fight a losing battle against the Mentalists, although he did not seem to realize how that "a bit" was literally the entire infantry.

Huang Baiyi believed that Ye Chong would meet the other Mentalists one day and this young man would soon realize the values of these theories as a conflict occurred. Based on his observation these days talking with Ye Chong, certainly Ye Chong was the kind who would go very deep into the field once the value

had been identified.

The lectures so far were just preparatory works.

And he looked forward to the future. He was excited, it felt like an interesting game he was playing, as he had planted a seed of the Xi Feng's mystic arts, an unknown seed that maybe would sprout into something undistinguishable as its forebears but who cares! Xi Feng's mystic arts remained existed in this world at the very least!

Years back Huang Baiyi had already predicted the fall and the demise of Xi Feng's mystic arts. He refused to accept it however. It eventually bogged him down like a giant rock on his heart, and now he had felt much more relieved. He had contributed something to the soon-lost mystic arts at probably the last few years of his life.

Regarding those former compatriots who had gone astray, they were no longer his concern.

It took Ye Chong quite some time to craft the glider, but he made it anyway. It was not smooth ride, as Ye Chong had failed probably at least 30 times at certain more complicated parts during the process. He made it, he made a glider from scratch, with only his dagger.

Such perseverance! How I wish he would be using his talent on the mystic arts!

Exclaimed Huang Baiyi in his mind.

Ye Chong went to Huang Baiyi. "We can leave here. This glider could take both of us. The success rate is about 70 to 85%," briefed Ye Chong.

"Move, you could just leave me here. I don't want to go," stated Huang Baiyi calmly.

The reply was uncalled for. It took a moment of silence before Ye Chong could comprehend the situation, "Why?"

Huang Baiyi smiled slowly, "I am old. I don't feel like moving anymore."

"Are you sure?" Ye Chong frowned, since that did not sound like a legitimate reasoning.

"Remember the Xi Feng clan I had mentioned you before? I would like to ask something," Huang Baiyi sat back slowly, "Do you think if it was right for them to leave the space zone in the first place?" A random question from him.

Ye Chong thought for a while. "Yes," he replied confidently, as he recognized the strength of the Xi Feng clan in any of the galaxy, be it the 5 major galaxies or He Yue. They reached even the current space zone they were in. Anyhow, they were correct. Their decision was right. In Ye Chong's opinion, Mentalist Pilots were far more resourceful compared to Mentalist. The ancient force would shatter as the technological age stomped.

"I knew it," muttered Huang Baiyi, his eyes were soulless. It took him a while to recover, "Well, it seems like I was too rigid myself. It was only a matter that they took a different path."

...

... ..

"I have taught you a lot these days." His speech broke the silence out of the blue, "As part of the exchange, I would like you to do me a favor. Of course the choice lies within yourself."

Ye Chong pondered for a short while. "State it," he said.

"Try your best to eliminate the Abductor." The calm tone was boiling inside, "Well, if you could do it that is, since you are still fighting alone."

"Why?" That was the second inquiry of confusion from Ye Chong today.

"I might not have the rights to judge if they took the correct path

in the past, but I could not tolerate such immorality."

"I cannot guarantee," replied Ye Chong frankly. Although he could not perceive the point of Huang Baiyi's anger in such act by Xi Feng clan, he believed the absolute relationship between Xi Feng clan and the Abductor. He had seen quite a number of young Mentalist Pilots inside the Sanctuary back then, Zhu Ling was one of them. Probably those kids were from the outside, and likely they had forgotten how their parents looked...

But those were not his concern. The whole point was the relationship between Ye Chong and the Abductor. He could nod at Huang Baiyi's request, but he knew his strength well enough. The promise... sadly would happen at the tiniest probability he could imagine. Well, if he were given the chance to deliver the final blow, he would take it, no doubt.

"Mhm, you don't have to keep the promise till death." Huang Baiyi gave a smile and looked certainly relieved.

"I'll be leaving." Ye Chong turned away and moved to the peak, where the glider was placed earlier. Every preparation had been done. It was time to go.

"Have a safe journey." The old man spoke softly, as he sat on the mossy ground, hunched. His brightened eyes set a silent farewell to the shrinking figure.

# Chapter 370: Gliding

Han Yue took a look at the pack of Fangwolves before him. His heart ran cold as his eyes were overflowed by the rumbling pack. The people stood there, their faces were pale. It was a miracle of their training that their feet could stand still.

Fangwolves were the typical social animal. They traveled in pack, a rampaging pack, in which they raised their furry body that reached the height of a grown man. They would wield threatening strength in their most brutal aggression. It would be a fortune if you encountered them in single or a pair. It would be your doom if they came to you in a pack. They were strategic fighters, in a coherent group, to an extent they would put any merchant group or practitioners to an absolute death.

Han Yue's lips tightened as his palms were frozen by the grip of the sword. A fine 28 he was, where he was believed to be freed from being the shrinking violet of early adolescence as he would march towards the grand adulthood. He might have dressed plainly, without any unnecessary adornment, but no one would judge him by his look. His hands were coated with cuts and calluses, his eyes were sharper than his sword. Speaking of his sword, that was another marvel to behold, an overlooked one though.

He was a trustworthy worker as he would make his decisions firm, that the master would respect and hand him the mission. He knew a great mission had been shouldered so he was well-prepared, as he carried an army of 300 men who possessed impeccable skills, enough to raid a tiny town on their will.

And there he was, being surprised of the attack. He never expected to be surrounded by pack of Fangwolves with size that reached the horizon ahead. There should be about ten thousands of them, a formidable force, almost destructive, annihilating. Unless a miracle was bestowed or he would never survive.

Without any order from the leader, everyone in the group took their weapons out. The alchemist was producing potions promptly at a hurry behind, which were then passed to the warriors at the frontmost. Mentalists were right behind the practitioners, assisting them to avoid the critical hits using their extrasensory future sight.

Han Yue was feeling fine with the current formation, as he took the leisure to glance at the old lady whose face was glaze-white, whiter than the snowy hair of hers, looking worn out as she sank in her white cloak calmly, with her emerald bracelet as the eye-catcher. A team of men in black guarded her, along with a white clothed girl beside. To be honest, the panicked look of the girl was getting more colorless than her clothing at the moment.

The ten men were the adepts of the experts. Han Yue would assume he had the more diabolical side while being more strategic than the foes, yet he never managed to state the standard of the black-clothed guards.

"My leader, what do we do now?" Asked his assistant, with a fearful look. obviously he was at loss of ideas and was too confused to move.

Han Yue's eyes rested upon the old lady who was all serene and insensible. He breathed in deeply, as he heard his heart resounding. A boiling rage, "What are you so panicked about? It's clearly either they die or we die!" His shaking hands fondled the handle of his sword, trying to regain his temperament.

The assistance, the vice leader of the team remained in an awkward silence of embarrassment.

Han Yue went to the front and shouted, "All in your position! Shrink your formation! Prepare for battle! The backup had been sent! Aids are coming! We only need to guard for 10 hours. Remember, only t-e-n hours, as long as we made it, we would be alive, by hook or by crook!" His tone rang affirmatively and it was

inspiring to the people. Staying on tight guard for the next 10 hours might be the harshest task in their whole life, but it was not impossible.

Han Yue was looking undisturbed, yet he was sighing inside. The pack of wolves must have aimed them quite sometime ago. Based on his experience dealing with Fangwolves, he recognized the animal-unlike intelligence as they would show up in front of their prey only after they had prepared their unattainable for the aids to break through the siege. Nevertheless, he could not express that statistical pessimism of his, being the leader, the last reliance of hope, that little bit of probability was the fuel to rekindle their souls.

The old lady seemed to be ver impressed. She could think in Han Yue's shoes, as she had also experienced many.

The gathering Fangwolves were howling in aggression, signing the completion of their formation, as the thrashes waved in with the dances of fangs.

The Fangwolves were fighting with brutal force of nature, as they manically rushed upon the formation of human at its shrinking-most. Fleshes were splashing, blood was smelled - it was nauseating but people were not bothered by the little detail to the atmosphere.

Han Yue picked his sword and struck upon the pouncing Fangwolf. Splash... the warm blood of the cold animal showered upon him. He had no place to run, had no place to hide. His sight was tainted by the angered crimson. He became agitated as he repositioned his sword and gave a quick wipe on his face.

He was a bloody man, not bleeding but bloody, like his fellow comrades.

The formation was shrinking drastically as men collapsed. In the past 30 minutes, he had lost 41 comrades, a painful 1/6 of his current force. His heart ached in a burning rage, his longsword

swung violently.

The battle carried on, not ending but intensifying.

...

"Okay." Ye Chong was performing the final checkup which the main focus would be examining the connective points of all the main components, since the parts were connected using the Emerald Vines. Such plant had a very relaxed structure that offered decent durability. It was a bit of a chore to take the very lining within the plant though. At least it was rewarding. The greenish lining was fairly thin, while having lightweight. It was more than sufficient to wrap the points with 3 linings to keep the parts together.

This was probably the simplest, the most primitive glider Ye Chong had ever imagined himself producing. It took the form of a bird literally, with two curving wings reaching the back. To achieve a better airborne time, Ye Chong had polished the surface of the wings with his dagger, since it was just a glider without engine to produce the required momentum, only with a simple purpose of carrying Ye Chong to the ground safely.

The other side of the cliff was a terrain of grasses, where a broad winding river reached the horizon.

Well the glider was meant for two persons at first. Who knows Huang Baiyi left the party at the eleventh hour. He thought it would be more convenient to Ye Chong but it was quite the contrary, merely because Ye Chong would have to perform his calculation all over again. Fortunately, it was a simple issue to remedy, as long as Ye Chong got somebody or something else to take Huang Baiyi's place, like the two giant wooden crates he made for example, which contain all the materials and raw production of his alchemy series. The Black Forest offered super rare materials after all... Also his wooden lance had become his assistance again, as it acted as the supporting pole to carry not the sacks but those



crates. One would imagine the lance breaking upon hanging but Ye Chong had wrapped it with layers of Aromatic Leaves. In addition, Ye Chong added a sack to carry his food and Water Bamboos on the greenish pole.

Ye Chong was considerably well-prepared for his next journey. He even did a new camouflage. Hell knows if the Wangs could reach the other side of the world. It would be nasty if he was surrounded by a bunch of Wangs upon landing. Lunatic Guan's encyclopedia had taught him the camouflage formula, in which he pick one randomly, well, since the formula seemed to have the highest rating by the author herself.

Materials were a little hard to find, but producing the potion was not hard. Ye Chong had coated his entire body with the potion, just to make sure he looked natural and not artificially duo-colored at some angle. He must admit the potion was pretty good however. Unlike the inapproachable terminal patient look he used to disguise himself before, he just looked different. Well the potion was considered a superb luxury to the outside world, only a fool like him would pour the entire bottle of gold on his body.

Ye Chong checked thrice, okay, everything seemed fine. He would not want to gamble this, he might be a Jie expert but he would be a goner if something went wrong in the air. Man, how he missed the mechs, the fancy flying crafts he had. Seriously the glider he made felt like something he would scavenge on Trash Planet of the ancient.

He fixed the sack and the crates on the lance.

He reached his out beyond the cliff, feeling the airflow.

Weather: Fine

Airflow: Stable

Wind: Gentle

He inhaled slowly and began sprinting towards the edge. He was

accelerating and he sprung into the air at the very end. He spread his body and let the wind carry his weight.

He glided, like a bird!

It was quite a sensation on his adventure, as the incoming wind whispered into his ears. It felt refreshing. But he regained from it quickly, as he began shifting his focus on the steer.

He never had once "piloted" a glider but he was a talented pilot after all, he got the gist of it... since the control of a glider was way more simpler than a mech. A glider was much slower too, thus more time to react. It eventually did not take long for him to grow familiar of the handles.

It seemed like his next journey was indeed happening. The departure was seemingly successful.

And that was when the airflow changed.

The gale slapped upon him. It happened too quick. The glider was shaking and Ye Chong had already forgotten the gorgeous view above.

The glider waved like a fallen leaf.

# Chapter 371: Landing

Han Yue's arms grew heavier as his heart. Looking at the collapsing ally, his mind turned numb. Slaughter! Slaughter! Slaughter! His arms mechanically brandished the sword with last ounce of strength. Carcasses were on the ground, the blood could be tasted. Sometimes he wondered if he was bleeding or the blood of the fallen Fangwolves tainted his body. His clothing was torn, his arms were feeling disengaging soon.

Three hours had passed at the battleground, the intensity of the wolves' attacks did not seem to be ebbing away however.

Han Yue was feeling their extra hours were merely an exchange of his allies.

It felt hopeless.

"My leader, take a rest. You have fought enough, leave the frontline to us for the moment." A voice was heard as a pair of lances came from his back. He then felt being forced to the back, into the circle of the formation. The long battle had completely drained him. That was a handy change of pace. His loyal allies offered a switch in the nick of time. No gratitude was heard from him, as his words only escaped as the fainting pants. He begged for a dramatic recovery, just so he could return the favor better by getting back into action before things went wrong again.

His bleary eyes glanced at the standing men whose face were all worn out and getting insane somehow. It was a demanding fight, he knew. He also saw the few wounded men being forcibly dragged behind, as the few mentalists had ordered. Their extrasensory perception however had bestowed them the sensibility in the situation. Their senses, their mind and their heart made them the best strategist in group. The mystic arts seemed more ornamental at this situation, gorgeous but impractical in war field to most men perhaps. Nonetheless, it was the mystic arts that had become the bad luck ward of those warriors in front. The spells guarded the

critical attacks for them on occasions.

The main attackers were the martial arts practitioners and alchemists. Yup, the alchemists were always the most lethal with their potions which could easily launch a heavy AoE attack - perfect for the belligerent wolf packs. Unfortunately, the trump force of the team seemed to be diminishing, as a large portion of the raw materials had been consumed for the attacks. Soon the alchemists went dethroned of their largest output to the battle as they got escorted to the very center again as a non-battle member in the team.

They could only rely on the practitioners and the mentalists now. The people who got out of the frontline was dead silent, as they gargled drinks and crunched their food supplies, striving for recovery quickest as possible.

Glad that I brought quite a number of mentalists this time. I might have lost way more allies if without these mentalists. But well, not like I managed to keep most of my allies.

Not even half of his army remained standing in the field now...

He glanced at the old lady again. She still retained her character - insensible and undisturbed - which was convincingly highly experienced of the spices of life.

Such old lady! Such decisiveness... I could never compete. Probably I would lose more men if she did not call her men to join the field. Yes, she was left with 2 guards, as the other eight formed into pairs guarding four directions. Their strength were far greater than even the leader of the surrounded team, Han Yue himself, that their stance remained like a dead nail on the wall, unshakable.

Their vitality seemed everlasting as the pace of their attacks persisted. No panic, no confusion, like 8 humanoids, overclocked, unaware of fatigue and careless mistakes. Their expression remained stern and solemn, as if nothing could shake them at all.

Thanks to the 8 guards or we would have...

That was a frightening thought Han Yue had.

When are the aids arriving?

Han Yue could hear his heart pounding in wails as he saw the retreating men in cuts and blood. But all he could do was to wait... for a flickering hope that felt unreachable.

"Have some water." A bottle was passed to his lips. Han Yue flinched, he lifted his head to see the white clothed lady resting by his side. It was the servant of the old lady! Her fair hands were holding a container of classy design. Han Yue's eyes shifted to the old lady who returned him a smile at the other side. He stood up and gave a bow immediately, as his hand reached the bottle, "Thank you my lady." The lady smiled, "You're most welcomed."

Han Yue was going to take a sip, however one wounded ally suddenly sprung from the ground as his bloody finger pointed the sky, "My leader! Take a look at the sky! The sky! W-what is that?!"

Han Yue's eyes traced the direction and they enlarged instantly, as his raising hand stopped. People were looking, with all their attention upon the sky.

There was a tiny spot... traveling rather rapidly... towards ... here?

...

Ye Chong was trying to regain control of his glider. The turbulence was tormenting the sense of balance, especially for a newbie like him. It would be a great if he could land in one piece, but that seemed as far-fetched as a miracle when the glider seemed to be getting hopelessly out of control. The speed was increasing. The airflow was pressing his squinted eyes.

The lever of the glider was being frantically shifted all sides, but the outcome was unhelpful. If Ye Chong was a professional in this, such wind might not be a trouble as he could have utilized the

ever-changing airflow to regain momentum and control of direction. But well, Ye Chong was not a professional, so was his glider. Those techniques that sounded almost acrobatic were speaking alien in his head.

He tried everything he could, yet the situation remained unchanged. He focused on the control, as he realized he should forget about direction to ensure at least a safe landing.

Phew.

Finally he felt the airflow slowing down - the biggest good news of his entire life probably since a complex and ever-changing airflow is the most lethal at high velocity. He could imagine himself directly crashing into the ground if the airflow refused to cooperate.

People would have imagined an iron orb causing a crater on the ground for Ye Chong's accidental landing, but he was still human, and it was almost natural for a human like him to shatter upon crash.

The flight had stabilized. He was feeling at great fortune when the glider actually did not get dismembered by the potent air flow.

Finally...

He quickly took that leisure to observe the landscape.

What?

Ye Chong might be a brave man who had broken different places he once treaded his step on, but the dense pack of Fangwolves was an alarming horror. He did not recognize the species being Fangwolves, but any social animal traveling in group would be a taboo to make contact with.

He would love to glide a bit longer, but there was no uplifting air thrust to bring him to the sky again. And it was not possible to make drastic direction change at this point. His schemata ran wild as he watched the glider slowly descending.

That was when he saw the surrounded men.

He calculated the landing point. Okay, he would be 50 meters away from the group at best.

As the airflow was much more stabler at the lower altitude, the steer of the glider could be unmonitored. So Ye Chong took out those intense hallucinogens as the final preparation for landing, since he knew the fact that all sorts of these intense hallucinogens would be his best bet after his experience with smoke pearls. He had lots of these trickeries in his Vinesacks as well as the crates.

It should be fine if I use it wisely. I should be able to escape the wolf pack alive. Thought Ye Chong, with zero mention of the surrounded men in his mind.

20 meters before landing.

He was prepared to jump, as he did a countdown. 10 meters... 8 meters... 5... Ye Chong gave a gentle hop.

The wolf pack was very much ready for this falling meal. Some of them lowered their body, going to pounce, while the others were howling endlessly.

Gah! Ruff! Grrrr...

Before Ye Chong even reached the ground, the few Fangwolves had already thrashed upon him. The bloody eyes, the cold fangs flexed as their bodies when they launched themselves.

Ah!

It was a scream in the surrounded group, coming from the white clothed servant. She shut her eyes tight as she covered her mouth, fearing to behold the upcoming scene.

Ye Chong decided to write a plot twist himself. He ignored the shriek and picked with his lance, the powdered hallucinogens sprinkled.

The Fangwolves' raid was merely child's play to Ye Chong, who

had once spent his daily life handling all kinds of intelligent monstrosity on Trash Planet back then. The mutated lifeforms were much, much more aggressive and unpredictable than the wolf pack.

He retreated his legs slightly as he dodged the jumping Fangwolf. Then he launched his legs again right onto its forehead.

Owww Owwwww Owww...

It felt like a hammer slam upon the head of the wolf, as it crashed the ground like a meteorite. It came up fast and it landed faster.

Hush... the sand tinted the air. Ye Chong regained height with the momentum he created, causing all the following attacks of those wolves missed gracefully.

Such kick... Complimented Han Yue in his mind. It could feel a little shabby as one could imagine any grown man producing such force on his kick, but this weird man was in the air, there was nothing for him to conserve the momentum to produce the attack, so he was indeed amazing.

Well Ye Chong certainly deserved the label "weird man" since his appearance was ... pretty peculiar. His original clothing was technically burnt during the process of fighting the Wangs, then he got lost in the forest. Most of his equipments came from the things of the nature as he hung tons of Vinesacks over his body like ornaments, while a greenish fine pole was lifting two giant crates.

It was strange , just very strange.

When Han Yue was expecting further action to be taken by the strange man, something just happened!



## Chapter 372: Bargain

Suddenly, without any warning, the fangwolves began to fall in large numbers. Han Yue did not see how the strange man's hand was moving at all when it began.

How was that possible? Han Yua and the rest of the group looked at the strange man in disbelief.

"What a strange man!" Han Yue knitted his brows and whispered to himself. To him, the strange man was probably an alchemist, since wide ranged attacks were an ability unique to alchemists. However, no alchemist could attack without leaving any traces of how it was done, much less in front of a group of combat experts. That seemed to be what mentalists could do. In terms of unexpectedness and concealed attacks, mentalists were the best of the lot. However, it was hard to imagine a mentalist killing so many fangwolves single-handedly. Could he be a combat expert? His kick earlier was quite strong, but not enough to convince people that he was a combat expert.

Just who was this man? All of them were troubled by the same question.

Ye Chong ignored the curious stares from the group. They would not be able to see his pouring movements on the glider. Beside, before he jumped down from the glider, he had opened up a few leaf bags from his waist, which contained knockout agents, thus surrounding him with a dense, colorless and scentless cloud of knockout agents. These knockout agents had some ingredients that helped them spread faster in the air, thus their effects had spread out surprisingly quickly.

Only someone who had a smoke pearl like Ye Chong could make this plan work. It was no wonder that Han Yue and company were baffled.

The sky was clear, and there was no wind at all. The knockout

agent did not spread out as quickly as he had wished, covering only a 30-meter radius around Ye Chong. Within this radius, none of the fangwolves could stay conscious.

At the center of this large hoard of fangwolves was a 30-meter radius clearing, where fangwolves lay on the ground. Standing at the center was a strange looking man, carrying two boxes. The fangwolves beyond the perimeter were unsettled, but none of them stepped closer to the man.

Strange, very strange indeed! Despite Han Yua and his company's rich travelling experience, they had never seen anything like it.

Ye Chong relaxed as he saw the knockout agents kicking into effect. While he had a few other tricks up his sleeves, it was better to use the simplest method. The Black Forest was full of treasures, but he would never enter it again without a mech. This meant that whatever resources he brought from that place would deplete as he used them. Some things, like the redsand dehydrator, were things that he did not know how to replicate yet. He did not want to use them all up until he could replicate them.

Ye Chong prepared to leave. He studied his surroundings for a moment. There was a wide river not too far away. Perhaps it would be a good idea to walk along the river.

Seeing the strange man about to leave, Han Yue and group finally reacted.

"Han Family's Han Yue begged for your assistance!" Han Yue shouted at Ye Chong's back. His throat was already dry from his earlier exertions, so his voice sounded cracked and hoarse.

The Han Family? Ye Chong stopped in his tracks. Huang Baiyi once told him that one of the two tribes on Dankwood planet that had starships was the Han Family.

Seeing the strange man halting, Han Yue felt relieved and spoke even more humbly, "If you can please lend your assistance, the Han

Family will definitely repay you generously!" He spoke this with determination, evincing a sense of trustworthiness. He stole a quick glance at his comrades at the outer edge, fighting a losing fight, and grew even more desperate, but dared not show it in his eyes. To him, Ye Chong was one of those otherworldly respectable elites. He knew that these kind of people were often solitary, and so he treaded with care.

"Repay me generously?" Ye Chong understood that part. He turned back to Han Yue and asked, "With what?" He asked this easily. Bargaining was something that Mu/Shang had taught him repeatedly. He remembered it well, and had basically adopted it for himself. The way he saw it, he was not related to these people, and was thus not obliged to save them. If it was a bargain, however ... He could accept that.

A few people around Han Jie looked at Ye Chong with anger and despise. They were furious that this strange man had seen it fit to negotiate terms, given their dire situation. Every second mattered, and any one of them could die at any time. They despised him because they had thought he was some otherworldly gentleman, but he had acted sordidly.

Han Yue thought differently. He was secretly pleased to see the man interested in his proposal. He was afraid that the man would be unmoved by these worldly pleasures. Since this was not the case, then there was hope yet. He was confident of his family's power. There was nothing the Han Family cannot do on Dankwood planet. His priority right now was to escort the Old Mistress back to their home.

"What would you like to have?" Han Yue asked carefully.

Ye Chong cocked his head to the side and thought about it.

No matter what they thought of this strange man, they all knew that he was the key to their escaping this place alive. Everyone but the warriors still battling against the fangwolves at the perimeter

was watching the strange man closely.

After a long moment, Ye Chong said, "Money. Map." Ye Chong was zuanless, so money was a no-brainer. He also desperately needed a map, or he might lose his way and enter the Black Forest again. That would be horrible.

As for finding Rui Bing and the rest, he could only do that discreetly and not rely on the Han Family.

Han Yue exhaled deeply and answered, "Of course, we will definitely fulfill your requests. However, please get us out of this place." He was afraid that the strange man would make some weird requests. That would spell trouble for him. To the Han Family, money was only a digit. He remembered that the Lord had once said, any problem that could be solved with money was no problem at all. The map, on the other hand, was even easier. The Han Family had one of the most complete maps of Dankwood planet. This was not exactly classified material, so it would be alright to make a copy of it for the strange man.

"Alright!" Since the man had agreed to his requests, Ye Chong was more than happy to fulfill his part. He took the two open leave pouches from his waist and held them in his hands. He then circled around the group's perimeter, and the fangwolves around them were immediately knocked out.

All of them heaved a sigh of relief. The combatants who had fought for too long sat down heavily, gasping for breath. Ye Chong controlled the amount of knockout agents used carefully, and the group was not affected.

"So he's an alchemist," Han Yue thought to himself in relief. Once he knew the man's skillset, he could better fight against him. Not that Han Yue planned to go back on his words, but it was a precaution. It was better to be careful against unfamiliar people.

"You're very skilled!" Han Yue was not flattering Ye Chong. Instead, he was genuinely impressed. The man had easily dealt

with the fangwolves around them. He was confident of leaving this place alive now. The alchemists under Han Yue were also looking at Ye Chong with deep admiration. They did not recognize the knockout agents that Ye Chong used. The man was a mystery to them. Besides, Ye Chong had used just the right amount of knockout agents, sparing them all. They were much impressed by this man's capabilities.

"Can you see which school he's from?" Han Yue stole a glance at the strange man as he asked softly to Bibia. Bibia was from the Suyu school, and the strongest alchemist that Han Yue had brought with him this time. On Dankwood planet, the Suyu school was not as famous as the Qian system, but it was still quite respectable, with a long history of its own. Disciples from famous schools, like Bibiya, were often very knowledgeable.

Bibiya himself was a short and skinny man. He had a pair of bright eyes, and they were now shining with confusion. He shook his head and said, "I don't know. He must have used a few different kinds of strong knockout agents. They must be nearly as strong as the Qian system's Illusion. His scattering methods are complicated and obscure."

In fact, Bibia had overestimated Ye Chong. Ye Chong's knockout agents were strong, but they were still weaker than the Qian system's Illusion. It was only because Bibia had never seen Illusion in action that he made this wrong assumption.

Han Yue asked, "Could he be from the Qian system?" There were three alchemy schools that were famous for their knockout agents - the Qian system, Hanming school and Jiu Family. Qian system's Illusion, Hanming school's Ice and Jiu Family's Blissful Drunkenness were the three most famous knockout agents. Of these three schools, only the Qian system was on Dankwood planet. That was why Han Yue suspected it.

Bibia shook his head again. "No. His knockout agents are strong and aggressive. Qian system's knockout agents are gentler and

longer lasting. These two are very different." After a few seconds, Bibia laughed wryly. "He's used more than a dozen scattering methods, and I don't know any of them."

The other alchemists showed shock, admiration and even envy at Ye Chong's performance, just like Bibia.

Ye Chong's eyes swept across the unconscious fangwolves around him. He secured his leaf pouches once more. If he just walked into Han Yue's group like he was, they would all fall unconscious.

Everyone looked to Ye Chong with respect. Ye Chong's demonstration was enough to win their admiration.

The guards that were securing the perimeter quickly dashed towards the Old Mistress and surrounded her. They watched Ye Chong carefully.

"Don't be so ungracious," the Old Mistress admonished her guards, before smiling gently at Ye Chong. "Young sir, please don't be offended, they have overreacted." At her age, she had earned the right to call Ye Chong "young sir".

Ye Chong nodded, ignoring the guards. He did not want further trouble. He could see that these guards were strong, and he had no intention of making things complicated.

Right now, he was thinking about how to help these people escape from all the fangwolves around them. If it was just him, his knockout agents would be sufficient. With the entire group, however, they were far from enough.

He must figure out some other way.

## Chapter 373: Green Tempest

A clear, green liquid lay quietly inside an alchemy flask like a mellow lady. This was Ye Chong's latest product. He had used a few precious ingredients to produce it, but he was quite happy with the final product. This was his first time producing this chemical. He had thought about it back in the Black Forest, but his tools and equipment were too simple for that. He had just used Bibia's equipment. Bibia's equipment were the most advanced available, at least on Dankwood planet.

The gentle bluish green liquid looked enticing, especially to the people who had just fought for such a long time. They were all thinking about how sweet and tasty it must taste.

Only Bibia out of all of them was staring dead straight at Ye Chong's flask with a deadly pale expression. His eyes betrayed the horror he was feeling. Han Yue quickly noticed Bibia's situation.

"What is it?" Han Yue asked quietly.

Bibia did not seem to hear him, as he continued to stare at the thumb-sized alchemy flask in Ye Chong's hand. His pupils were dilated from shock, as though they were losing focus. Han Yue could even feel Bibia's whole body trembling.

Could it be ... Han Yue stopped his gaze at Ye Chong's tiny alchemy flask.

"If I may ask, is that the Green Tempest?" Bibia's voice was shaking as he spoke. He was not aware of it, but the people around him could hear his teeth chattering. They looked at Bibia oddly, not knowing why he was shaking.

And just like that, when Bibia finished his question, all the other alchemists paled, their faces drained of all traces of blood as they stared in horror at the adorable tiny bottle in Ye Chong's hand. They took a few steps back away from Ye Chong, as though he was the god of calamity.

The rest of the group looked baffled at the alchemists. They did not know why the alchemists behaved so out of control, since alchemists were usually of a gentler temperament, and rarely showed such extreme behavior.

In that instant, everyone looked to Ye Chong.

"Yes, this is the Green Tempest." Ye Chong looked at all the people around him. He did not know why they reacted so violently. The alchemists had stepped back almost in unison, their eyes filled with fear, as though he was not human, but a monster.

Han Yue could not help but asked, "What is the Green Tempest?" No one bothered to answer him.

Ye Chong was slightly familiar with the world of alchemy, but he knew very little of its history. He did not know of the horrible reputation of the Green Tempest, or he would not have chosen this as his weapon.

There was once a time, long ago, when alchemists were the symbol of evil to the common people. This was largely due to the Green Tempest. There were no records of the name of the person who invented Green Tempest, but every piece of literature described him as a man with no morals! In just three years, he had killed more than two hundred thousand people. These people had all died from the Green Tempest.

The most terrifying incident was one where an entire town had died in their sleep. In just one night, the flourishing town turned into a graveyard. Alchemists were not so well received back then, and this incident aggravated the situation. This particular alchemist was a wanted man on the entire planet, and many other alchemists joined in on the hunt. The alchemist was finally killed, but not after taking down 70 percent of his pursuers.

That was the first time the true power of alchemists was appreciated by the public. However, it was also a huge damaging blow to the world of alchemy.



The incident had happened on Dankwood planet. It was a long time ago, but all of the alchemy schools on Dankwood would have it in their records. Green Tempest was also a symbol of the peak of an alchemist's abilities. It was no wonder that they all paled upon hearing the name of this chemical.

With the legendary substance right before them, all the alchemists were shaken to the core.

Ye Chong could not help but frowned. "Is there a problem?" He knew nothing of its history, and so could not understand the stares he was receiving.

"No problem, no problem at all!" The alchemists all shook their heads vigorously. What the hell, the inventor of Green Tempest was known as a man with a volatile temper. Who knew what this man's temper was like? Anyone would be afraid of such a powerful alchemist!

After all, offending a senior would have dire consequences! Just read the history books!

With that, everyone realized what was wrong. They might not know what the Green Tempest was, but it was obvious that they should not offend this man at all costs.

Ye Chong would probably ignore them all if he knew what they were thinking. To him, Green Tempest was a powerful substance, but not the most damaging alchemy product he could think of. Besides, the substance can only be used under very specific circumstances. The sky must be cloudless, the wind gentle. Its intended victims must not have any kind of protective armor. If it was in the Five Galaxies, he would never have a chance to use it. The substance could not act through the most common kind of spacesuits, much less mechs. If it was Beauty's Secretion, then he would meet no resistance. Even Liquid of Shang was scary enough that Ye Chong was unsure if it could be overcome at all.

Here in the free space zone, however, Green Tempest was a force

to reckon with.

Ye Chong was ready to unleash its power now. Behind him, everyone watched him closely, curious to see how he would use this tiny bottle of Green Tempest. They were all soaked wet, since Ye Chong said it was the only way to stay safe from the substance. All the alchemists decided then and there to pass on this knowledge to their own teachers.

Ye Chong opened the bottle with his left hand. A faint green smoke wafted out of the flask. His other hand inserted a yellow citrine stone into the flask, and quickly closed it again.

The quiet Green Tempest underwent a violent transformation. It vaporized almost instantly, filling the alchemy flask with a green coloured gas.

Ye Chong used his left hand to determine the wind direction, and nodded in satisfaction. He lifted the alchemy flask high up with his right hand, and opened it.

Pop! A soft sound was heard, followed by a thick green cloud swirling higher and higher into the air. The green cloud held its form and floated slowly forward, carried by the gentle breeze.

Soon, the cloud was far away from the group. Under the blue sky, the thick, green cloud looked out of place. All the alchemists watched it closely, unwilling to miss a single detail. Not everyone could see the legendary Green Tempest in action.

Just then, the green cloud transformed again. It began to diffuse quickly into the air. Soon, it was all over the fangwolves around them, and the green color was no longer as intense. No one would have expected the huge green cloud to come from such a tiny alchemy flask.

Suddenly, a green colored raindrop came down from the sky.

It was like a signal for transformation. The quiet green cloud suddenly turned violent and grew turbulent. Green raindrops

began to fall from the sky.

The green raindrops came down like a light drizzle, covering a thin green veil over the place. It was such a beautiful sight. The maidservant in white beside the Old Mistress watched in enchantment.

The sharp and pitiful cries from the fangwolves tore down the illusion of beauty, and shocked the spectators.

The fangwolves looked terrible. Blood gushed out of their eyes like streams, as though it would continue on until the last drop of blood was expelled. The animals struggled to stand, but they were slowly losing their life force. Finally, they fell to the ground lifelessly, their eyes still bleeding like a river. Their blood drenched the grassy plain and seeped into the earth.

The fangwolves fell down one by one, unable to hide from the deadly green rain. Their painful cries never stopped, not until five minutes later, when none of them were still alive.

The air was thick with the scent of blood, and it was nauseating. There were no wounds on the fangwolves, except for their bleeding eyes and mouth. However, their robust bodies were now shrinking from the loss of blood.

The green rain lasted for only five minutes, but none of the fangwolves within its range survived.

Blerggh! Someone vomited, breaking the silence. The rest followed. The warriors who had fought against these fangwolves bravely could not stand watching the horrible sight. Even the usually composed Han Yue looked pale. The Old Mistress looked alright, but her maidservant was already vomiting like crazy.

Everyone looked at Ye Chong with indescribable horror. No one dared to stand within 10 meters of him. Even Han Yue avoided him.

However, it was the alchemists who were truly shaken. They all

looked lost.

The fangwolves dispersed quickly. They were not stupid. On the contrary, they could even be smarter than humans sometimes. The green rain had dealt a devastating blow to them. The entire herd of wolves were left with only about 20 thousand of them. It was still a large herd, but no longer as impressive as before.

Hen Yue and his group left the place as quick as the fangwolves. No one wanted to stay a second longer, looking at the ground covered with animal bodies. It would drive them mad.

The entire group left silently, the tension around them thick enough to cut through with a knife.

## Chapter 374: Attack in the Night

Up ahead was their destination, Emerald City. Ye Chong did not return to his solo travels yet, since Han Yue had not repaid him in full. It was not that Han Yue was stingy, but he did not have much cash on him. Of course, he had also been careless in not agreeing on a sum when they made their bargain. This was a vexing problem for Han Yue.

How much should he give the man? Han Yue was deeply troubled. He had quite an amount of cash with him, about 30 Yan-zuan. That was a substantial figure for just about anyone, but paying only 30 Yan-zuan to such a terrifying alchemist ... What if he offended that man? After all, the man had used the legendary Green Tempest to save them. If he did not reward the man generously, even Han Yue would think himself stingy.

"Then ask him!" Han Yue thought to himself, but he really did not want to speak to that strange man. It was not just him. The rest of the group dared not speak to the God of Death. In fact, not even a fly could be spotted within 10 meters of Ye Chong. In the end, Han Yue braced himself and spoke to the man, and was given the reply - "Up to you."

Ye Chong had no idea of the local currency and its value, so he came up with this reply.

"Up to you" could mean a lot of things. In the end, Han Yue suggested to Ye Chong that he pay him when they reached Emerald City. The city was under the power of the Han Family, so it would also be more advantageous for him.

Ye Chong studied the map, and found that Emerald City was the closest and only city within reasonable distance, so he agreed. He needed to resupply in the city anyway.

Han Yue had quickly handed over a map to Ye Chong. After studying the map, Ye Chong found that he was quite a distance

from the Wang Village. Black Forest was much larger than he expected. He could not believe his luck.

On the other hand, how were Rui Bing and the rest doing? He could be certain that they had encountered some problems. It had been so many days since, how were they?

"Let's keep ourselves alive!" Ye Chong muttered to himself.

After handing over the map to Ye Chong, Han Yue did not wish to stay in his company for a second longer, and quickly took his leave. Ye Chong did not delay his exit, and saw him to the door.

"What's that strange man doing alone in his tent everyday?" A voice outside was saying.

"Who knows? Aren't alchemists all mysterious people?" Another voice responded.

The first voice laughed. "Hehe, careful you don't let Bibia hear you, or you'll be in for trouble."

"Cheh, Bibia is fine, he'll just let you suffer a bit. If it's that strange man, probably no one'll be left to claim your body after."

"Yea yea. Don't worry, I don't plan on claiming your body, who knows what kind of poison will be left on you," the other person said.

Ye Chong wanted to roll his eyes so high up. He had heard so many similar conversations these days. No one dared to go near him, and his tent was steered clear of. Ye Chong did not plan to chat with them too, so he stayed in his own tent to research everyday.

Seeing Ye Chong always staying in, the other people began to speak more freely. They did not expect Ye Chong to be able to hear every word they said. Han Yue had kept all tents close to each other for safety reasons. Ye Chong's sharp hearing also allowed him to hear almost everything in the campsite.

These days, he was the hottest topic of discussion.

However, another conversation caught his attention. He focused on the weak, soft voice.

"That strange man's crazy! So cruel! Heavens, to think that there's someone so crazy out there!" It was a woman's voice. There were only two women in the entire campsite - the Old Mistress and her maidservant. This must be the maidservant speaking.

"Haha, Ying'er, you're wrong there. The more ruthless you are against the enemy, the better your chances are of survival," the Old Mistress spoke warmly and lovingly.

"Mistress, he's still too ruthless. Ying'er couldn't sleep these days with those nightmares. So scary! He's just like his ancestor," Ying'er complained tenderly.

"Oh, his ancestor? Did Ying'er hear about something outside?" The Old Mistress asked, curious.

"Yes, they've been discussing it these days." The maidservant Ying'er recited the origin of the Green Tempest excitedly.

Ye Chong finally realized the story behind it. He thought it strange that Lunatic Guan did not mention it one bit in her chip. If only he knew, then he would not have chosen the Green Tempest. He had a few other alternatives, but the Green Tempest was the most convenient. Besides, the weather that day was very suitable for its usage. That was why he chose that weapon.

It was not his intention to draw attention towards him. He knew very early on that it was better to lay low. If he was found out to be an outsider, that would be a very tricky situation.

"Oh, so the strange man has a very prominent teacher," the Old Mistress said.

"Famous? How can such a bad person be considered prominent?" Ying'er muttered.

The Old Mistress smiled. "Haha, be it a good or bad reputation, aren't they all famous?"

Ye Chong listened to them talk, and began to think. Could Lunatic Guan be a successor of the Green Tempest's inventor? After all, Lunatic Guan had always been secretive about her school.

However, Green Tempest did not particularly stand out in her chip. Lunatic Guan had described it with her usual plain manner.

Ye Chong quickly set the problem aside. He was interested in knowledge itself, but he did not feel a particular sense of belonging to any alchemy school.

"It's obvious that he's not a good man. Think about it, Mistress, what kind of people want to discuss terms when it's an emergency? If he's a good man, he'd have helped us earlier. Any delay would have cost a life! He's just a sordid little man, not some capable gentleman." Ying'er was obviously looking down on Ye Chong.

"Haha, that's not exactly true. He's not related to us in any way. We can only be grateful that he's willing to save us. Besides, Ying'er, didn't you notice, he never specified an exact amount of money. Think about it, if he had demanded a huge sum back then, we could only agree with it. Besides, why would anyone so powerful as him lack money? If he wanted money, he'd have plenty of ways to get it, no need to expend so much effort like that. As for the map, it's even more worthless. Haha, that man may not be as bad as you think," the Old Mistress said with a smile.

"But," Ying'er hesitated, and asked, "Isn't he afraid that we'll not pay up?"

"Oh, my dear, think about it for awhile. If he can save us from all the fangwolves, then surely it's not too hard to kill us all too. Han Yue would not be as silly as you in these matters. It only makes sense to try to recruit someone to powerful. Why make an enemy with him just because of money?" The Old Mistress told her off lightly, and explained the reasonings behind their actions.



"Yeah. But he's all cool and emotionless, not like a human at all. Sigh, Mistress, do you think he'll really kill us if we don't pay him?" Ying'er asked with interest.

The Old Mistress was silent for a moment before replying her with certainty, "He will, definitely. Ying'er, there are a few kinds of people that you should never seek trouble with in this world, and that man is one of them. Remember that!" The Old Mistress said this solemnly, without her earlier warmth.

"Ying'er will remember!" Ying'er answered obediently.

There was no useful information from their later conversation, so Ye Chong gave up on listening. He was in no habit of wasting time. All his time was spent on improving himself. Perhaps it would take a long time to gain a slight improvement, and he would probably not achieve anything given the short time he had now. However, he knew that strength was something that was gradually accumulated over time.

He would never waste time.

Before he could relax himself, his ears caught an almost imperceptible sound. In the darkness of his tent, Ye Chong's eyes lit up abruptly.

It seemed that someone was approaching. Ye Chong could not be certain. Soon, however, he could already make out the sounds of footsteps. The footsteps were light and hurried.

An ambush! Ye Chong was surprised, but quickly calmed down.

He did some quick calculations, but could not arrive at an accurate figure. There were no less than a hundred of them, and they were all skilled. If Ye Chong had not been concentrating on hearing that conversation earlier, he would not have noticed them. It was luck that allowed Ye Chong to notice them so soon.

The ambushers moved quickly. Ye Chong even heard a few suppressed moans. Some people were already dealt with.

They were ruthless! Ye Chong noted to himself. Now, he had to focus on protecting himself. Attacks with clear objectives were often done ruthlessly. Besides, Ye Chong had no plans of handing himself over easily.

Ye Chong did not stand up. He quietly opened the leaf pouches on his waist. The strong, scentless knockout agents quickly filled up his tent. Right now, it was better to stay inside than rush out.

For now, he could only wait for them to take the bait. Ye Chong did not move in the dark. He sat quietly and patiently like a nocturnal predator, waiting for its prey.

# Chapter 375: Alchemy Performance

Suddenly, a figure rushed into his tent.

Even in the dark, Ye Chong could see everything clearly. The person who came in wore a mask and fitting black clothing. Only his eyes were visible. His sharp eyes and quick movements all betrayed his superior abilities.

It was too bad that no matter how strong a person was, it was still hard to avoid an ambush like this. Ye Chong's tent was filled with a very dense cloud of knockout agents. Ye Chong would not have stayed in the tent if he did not have his smoke pearl.

There were sharp cries coming from outside. It seemed that the ambushers were noticed. Ye Chong could even hear Han Yue's angry yell.

However, he was still focused on his immediate surroundings. It was not yet time to worry about Han Yue and the rest of the group.

The tent was dark inside. The ambusher entered the tent and immediately went unconscious, falling to the ground.

Ye Chong felt reassured, seeing the knockout agents taking effect. He stepped forward and caught the man in black clothing before he reached the ground, then pushed him quietly to a corner.

He knew how competent Han Yue's group was. These ambushers must have planned their operation ahead of time. This meant that they were familiar with Han Yue's group too. Since they decided to attack anyway, they must be stronger than Han Yue's group.

Fortunately, he still had many alchemy products with him. Here in the darkness, Ye Chong's ability as a fully stocked alchemist was not to be underestimated. Additionally, he was a combat expert, familiar with the attack strategies of other combat experts.

Ye Chong offered no mercy. He put force into his hands, and the unconscious man stopped breathing immediately.

"109 ... 109 ..." The person outside did not enter right after, but whispered the code name of the now dead man. However, no matter how they called, the tent remained silent.

The men in black exchanged looks, knowing that 109 was probably incapacitated.

The leader made a signalling gesture, and the five of them threw out the weapons in their hands towards the tent.

Rip! The tough fabric of the tent was torn as the five weapons shot into the tent simultaneously.

Ye Chong heard the sound of rushing wind the moment they threw their weapons and was slightly surprised. As expected, these people were not easy to deal with. That they would act so carefully even in an ambush in the dark spoke volumes of their rich experience in actual combat. This was the kind of opponent that Ye Chong wanted to avoid the most. These people always knew the best strategy against any situation, and they had very low chances of making mistakes. If it was a group of similar people, his current situation would be very dangerous.

Ye Chong bent down forcefully, lying low to the ground. The five weapons flew past right above his head. One lance was only centimeters from his head. Ye Chong felt a chill down his spine. He was only human after all. If that lance had hit him, he would be dead by now.

"Careful, it's an alchemist inside," the leader warned his subordinates. He was highly alert. The knockout agents began to escape through the five holes in the tent made with their weapons. While the agents were colorless and scentless, he was also very experienced. With just an inhale, he felt a slight dizziness and quickly stepped back, surprised by the strength of the knockout agents.

The rest of the team stepped back as well, looking at the tent warily.

As these five people were met with resistance, the same went for the rest of the ambushers. Han Yue had brought with him elites who could react fast and coordinate perfectly with each other. The situation quickly turned into a stalemate.

Han Yue was surprised and furious. As the strongest tribe on Dankwood planet, the Han Family had long since received challenges like this. However, he quickly calmed down. They were not too far from Emerald city now. If they could hold on for a bit longer, reinforcements would arrive soon.

The opponent attacked aggressively, seemingly with a clear objective.

Could it be ...

Han Yue's heart skipped a beat as he turned to look towards the Old Mistress. As expected, they were receiving the bulk of the enemy's forces. The ten bodyguards of the Old Mistress were skilled, holding off the enemy for now. However, he could see that they were slowly losing ground.

As it was, he was too deep in his own fight to lend assistance. The ambushers had chosen an effective attack strategy. His own forces were now scattered about, unable to converge.

Han Yue was anxious, but there was nothing he could do.

Just then, a loud and clear voice boomed, "Which member of the Han Family is here?"

Han Yue was surprised, but also delighted. He used his sword to force his enemy back and shouted back, "Brother Luo, please come help!"

A loud whistle was heard over the battle, and a human figure made its way towards Han Yue in an incredible speed. It was hard to recognize a person in the dark, so the figure appeared to move like a ghost. He was attacked along the way, but this person that Han Yue called Brother Luo was highly skilled. He was not hurt,

but instead injured three others.

"Haha, I didn't expect to see you here, Brother Han," the man said with a smile. He killed two people before finishing his sentence. Han Yue felt the pressure on him ease up, and his sword moved faster, seeking the throats of his enemies.

"Brother Luo, please take care of that old woman," Han Yue pleaded.

The man understood their urgent situation and did not delay in agreeing, "Alright." He quickly made his way to the Old Mistress. This greatly reduced enemy forces around the Old Mistress. He attacked with determination, killing with his every move.

Han Yue understood that if he could gather his forces together now, they would be able to win.

Ye Chong heard the loud whistle clearly, but he did not have time to investigate. Perhaps it was his luck, but three of the five ambushers outside his tent were ranked in the top ten of this group of enemies. They had expected to finish dealing with him quickly, but had encountered a strong alchemist instead.

They decided then to kill this alchemist. In this chaotic battle in the dark, having a strong alchemist on the other side would have terrible consequences. Besides, that untraceable knockout agent just now had made them wary.

Alchemists were usually physically weak, and would delay the speed of the entire assault team. Since an ambush depended on speed to work, they did not bring any alchemist with them. This was another reason for them to end this alchemist's life quickly.

How did alchemists attack?

These five ambushers were able to fully appreciate the alchemist's creativity that night!

A few glowing blue flashes shot out of the tent, fast like an arrow towards the five ambushers.

One of them was prepared to block it with his weapon, but the leader yelled, "Don't!" That member was surprised, but he was also a seasoned fighter. He forced his body to bend awkwardly, narrowly avoiding the blue light.

Splat! That blue light hit a corpse behind him.

He could now make out the blue light to be a blue colored flame. What happened next sent a chill down their spines. The thumbnail-sized blue flame was like a blue flower unfurling its petals in the night, spreading across the corpse.

The skin, the flesh, and even the bones turned to ash under the blue fire. They were horrified to see it happen so quickly that their faces were drained of blood.

It looked like he was destined to never be a long range attacker! Ye Chong sighed to himself. If it was the Sang Tribe members, their unique throwing moves would finish those five ambushers easily. Ye Chong had improvised on the blue flames, adding a few flammable ingredients to make it burn stronger. He was the first to use the Bluefire chemical like this. It required very strong fingers to execute. No other alchemist would have the strength to do it.

Ye Chong's alchemy performance was not over yet.

As the redsand dehydrator, the infamous of the Smoke school, made its appearance, the five ambushers paled even further.

They dared not to step closer to the tent anymore, but even more than that, they could not leave the alchemist alive.

Unlike other alchemists, Ye Chong could control his strength with high precision. Besides, his familiarity with combat allowed him to have more flexibility in his choice of attack.

He was now trying out some combat moves to use his alchemy substances.

Blue, pink, brown, white ...

Ye Chong's tent was a colorful exhibition of smokes. The smoke grew thicker and surrounded the entire tent. The smoke was so thick that it did not move despite the wind.

The five ambushers dared not step into the smoke. Who knew if it was poisonous! The alchemy substances that they had encountered so far had left a deep impression in them. However, they could not leave. In the end, they could only watch the thick smoke from afar.

What they fail to see was a violent transformation taking place in the centre of the thick smoke.



## Chapter 376: Shock

Ye Chong's hands moved quickly. He had never moved his hands so quickly for alchemy purposes. The alchemy flask in front of him was already loaded with many raw ingredients. Ye Chong was also adding all sorts of chemicals into the flask at an astonishing speed. The volume of chemicals he added was only a little each time, but he was doing it very quickly.

His hands were a blur in the air.

He had a wonderful idea, and now he wanted to see how it would fare in practice.

The liquid in the alchemy flask roiled violently like boiling water. Ye Chong did not stop, however, as he continued to add small amounts of different chemicals into the alchemy flask.

Ye Chong's expression was solemn, his mouth firmly closed. He had the smoke pearl in his mouth for precaution. He had buried the two boxes underground, and the hesitation of the five ambushers had allowed him to do this.

When the last chemical was added into the alchemy flask, a surprising change happened!

Boom!

It was a low sound of explosion. His tent was burst open by the strong air pressure inside.

A powerful wave of air rippled outwards from him, quick as lightning, and the smoke surrounding his tent was all blown away. This sudden change caught everyone off guard. The strong wind from the explosion swept past everyone in the entire campsite.

Where the wind had blown past, the intense fighting stopped, and people dropped silently to the ground like flies.

The only one standing in the campsite was Ye Chong. He looked pitiful, covered in all kinds of colors. His clothing was almost

completely gone but for his pants, still where they should be.

Ye Chong looked at the people lying on the ground in the campsite, satisfied with the result. He was surprised to find that his short, creative moment earlier had led to this fine result. He had expected to only finish off the five ambushers, but this was far beyond his expectations.

In fact, what Ye Chong had created was essentially an explosion. Of course, it was a mild explosion. Creating a large volume of gas in a very short time was, to an alchemist, a piece of cake. The small explosion had created an airstream that spread outwards, covering the entire campsite.

This airstream was not dangerous, and would only feel like strong gust of wind to most people. However, Ye Chong did some preparation work beforehand, surrounding his tent with more than 30 kinds of knockout agents. The knockout agents were so dense around his tent that it was suffocating.

The airstream had spread this dense mixture of knockout agents all over the campsite.

Since their encounter with the fangwolves, Han Yue's camp had lost many people, so their campsite was not too large in its entirety. The airstream was thus able to cover the entire campsite.

Ye Chong's knockout agents were all strong ones. Without necessary precautions, everyone in the camp, enemy or ally, had fallen.

Ye Chong realized then that an alchemist was more suited to ambushing. However, he quickly dismissed this idea. Those knockout agents were made of rare and valuable ingredients. If he had not stocked himself from the Black Forest, he would not have been able to win this battle. Besides, it was difficult to control the power of the explosion earlier. It was only because of his strong body that he could survive it unscathed. If it were any other alchemist, being at the center of an explosion would wound, if not

kill him.

This strategy was too expensive and dangerous.

This was more so in the Five Galaxies. In the Five Galaxies, battles mostly happened in outer space. Mechs were the favored means of battle. These knockout agents would be useless.

After all these experiences, Ye Chong appreciated the advantages and power of mechs even more deeply. Be it the Five Galaxies or He Yue Galaxy, mech pilots still reigned supreme. He Yue Galaxy may have a place for combat experts, but combat only served as a base for mech pilots to strengthen their bodies.

"Why am I thinking about all this?" Ye Chong laughed at himself mockingly. No power was absolute. The best strategy was always one based on circumstances.

The violent battle was over, and it was quiet. Ye Chong quickly checked Han Yue, lying on the ground, looking peaceful. It was said that knockout agents were first invented to promote better sleep, but was later developed as a weapon of defense for alchemists.

"Looks like I should prepare a lot of these knockout agents," Ye Chong thought to himself as he looked at the people on the ground around him, smiling wryly.

The first to be awakened was Han Yue. Ye Chong felt that he was the best person to deal with the aftermath.

Han Yue opened his eyes, dazed for a few seconds, but he quickly gathered himself. Ye Chong was quietly impressed by his mental strength.

When Han Yue saw the people lying around him, however, he was flabbergasted. He stammered as he asked, "What ... What happened?"

Now that was a loaded question. Ye Chong did not know how to explain it, so he kept quiet.

"You ... You did this, sir?" Han Yue opened his eyes wide, looking at Ye Chong with disbelief, speaking respectfully all of a sudden.

"Yes," Ye Chong nodded in answer, not denying his actions. However, he did not wish to elaborate further. It would be foolish to explain his techniques to someone else. He switched topics, "How should they be dealt with?" Ye Chong pointed towards the enemies lying on the ground.

If it was up to him, he would choose the simplest way, which was to give each of them a stab in the head with his spear. The poison on the spearhead ensured that he would not have to stab twice.

However, he understood his situation, and did not want to stand out. After all, he was still wary of his status as an outsider. It would be better for Han Yue to make the decision.

"Can ... Can you wake up my comrades, sir?" Han Yue stumbled over his words. For some reason, although he was always be very careful with this strange man, it was different from what he was feeling now. Every time he saw the cold face of this enigmatic alchemist, he could feel an icy chill inside. He was grateful that he was not enemies with the alchemist, or he would be dead by now.

The thought of having his life at the mercy of that strange man sent another chilling wave over his heart.

Ye Chong did not know what Han Yue was thinking. The way he saw it, he had only executed a slightly creative solution to their predicament. To Han Yue, however, he was already a character with legendary powers. To suppress hundreds of elite fighters quietly was not only unprecedented, but also brilliant. Alchemists were always thought to hold supportive roles. No one would have guessed that an alchemist could be this strong.

Han Yue still did not know what exactly happened. This further increased the mystery around Ye Chong, and made Han Yue even more nervous.

Humans are always afraid of the unknown.

Ye Chong handed over the awakening antidote to Han Yue, and let him be. Best to leave the professional part to the professionals. He should try to be inconspicuous. However, he was not aware that everything he did so far was anything but inconspicuous.

Soon, Han Yue awakened all his comrades. The ambushers were not so lucky. Most of them were killed in their sleep, while the few who looked like leaders were brought for interrogation.

Ye Chong watched as lives were ended before his eyes. His expression did not change. He had seen death too many times, and had fought against it often himself. This was nothing he had not seen before.

Han Yue was watching Ye Chong throughout the affair. He saw the cool expression underneath his colorful appearance, felt his chest tightened, and moved Ye Chong a few more levels up his danger scale.

"Get anything from them?" Han Yue read the reports from his subordinates. They had suffered heavy casualties from the attack, with only 70 of them still alive, about half of them with injuries. Nonetheless, as the leader, Han Yue stayed composed.

"None," Han Yue's second replied. He had survived the attack as well.

"They're child abductors," the Old Mistress announced softly. She walked towards him slowly, supported by her maidservant.

"Child abductors!" Han Yue was surprised with the information. He knew that someone like the Old Mistress would never speak carelessly. She must have her own reasons to be so certain. The Old Mistress would never lie to him about this matter, but why would the child abductors attack them?

The thought occurred to him for a moment, but he quickly suppressed his curiosity and did not pursue further. It was not for

him to pry. "Mistress, I apologize for causing you distress!" He bowed to the Old Mistress, and thanked a man standing beside him, "It was an emergency situation just now, and I did not have the chance to thank you for your help, Brother Luo. Please forgive me!" He smiled widely, apparently on good terms with the other man.

"Ah, don't even bother," the man addressed as Brother Luo replied in mock anger. The man was almost as tall as Ye Chong, and not particularly muscular. It was hard to associate him with the man who had moved fast as lightning earlier. He looked like a refined man, not too tall, but with a certain powerful charisma.

Ye Chong's face betrayed nothing, but he felt that this Brother Luo looked familiar, even though he was certain that they had never met.

If it was any other normal person, they would have dismissed it as a mistake. Ye Chong did not. He studied the man carefully, but could not find any clues. The feeling of familiarity was still there, however, and this made Ye Chong even more wary of him.

Just who was this man?

## Chapter 377: Situation

"This gentleman is?" The old mistress asked with a smile. That was also something Ye Chong wanted to know,

Han Yue realized that he had not introduced his friend, and quickly explained, "This is a good friend of mine, Luo Shi, a famous expert on Dankwood planet." He turned to Luo Shi and said, "The Old Mistress is an honored guest of the Han Family." His introduction for the old mistress was vague, but Luo Shi was also smart enough not to question. He bowed to the old mistress smoothly, giving off a friendly vibe.

"Ah!" Ying'er, who stood beside the old mistress, gasped, and immediately felt embarrassed. She quickly covered her mouth with her hands, but could not help asking, "Are you the Luo Shi who participated in the last Congregation?"

Luo Shi smiled and acknowledged humbly, "I didn't think my lady would remember a nobody like me."

Ying'er blushed again and said, "You're too modest, Mr Luo. If someone like you is not famous, then there won't be too many famous people out there." This was no exaggeration. Every participant of the Congregation were true experts. Many young experts were uncovered in each Congregation, and these young experts would usually become famous due to their participation. To many, joining the Congregation was the route to fame.

"Mr Luo must be really impressive, to participate in the Congregation at such a young age," the old mistress commended.

Luo Shi said humbly, "Old Mistress, you're too kind."

Ye Chong studied the man called Luo Shi coldly. The fact that his face looked familiar bothered him.

"And this is?" Luo Shi looked to Ye Chong with seemingly unperturbed eyes, but Ye Chong could sense that he was wary of him.

"Er ..." Han Yue was troubled, not knowing how to introduce the mysterious alchemist. The alchemist had quite literally fell out of the sky, and until now, he still could not figure out what that bird-like mechanical device was.

Han Yue realized suddenly that he knew nothing about the alchemist, not his name and age, nor where he came from and where he was going to. He knew nothing at all about this man.

"This is ..." Han Yue was about to make something up when suddenly, he heard a shout, "Careful!" In front of him, Luo Shi vanished in a blur.

A terrifying cry came from behind him!

Han Yue quickly turned around, and saw an ambusher with a lance pierced through his body. The lance was thrown with enough force to go straight through the ambusher's body, pinning him to the ground.

Luo Shi stood before Han Yue with a calm expression. Han Yue finally realized what had happened, and looked to Luo Shi with gratitude.

Ye Chong saw exactly what had happened. The ambusher had thrown a lance towards them, probably aiming for the old mistress. However, the knockout agent must still be in effect, and the lance strayed from its target towards Han Yue.

Luo Shi moved quickly, appearing behind Han Yua and caught the lance easily. His powerful and explosive motion surprised Ye Chong. Luo Shi then threw the lance, which struck the heart of the ambusher.

This series of events unfolded in a flash.

When Luo Shi moved, Ye Chong's eyes widened! However, he quickly resumed his calm composure, and his abrupt change in expression was not noticed by anyone around him.

However, what he saw was like dropping a bombshell for Ye



Chong!

Luo Shi was strong, as he could tell that from the man's reaction just now. His movements were powerful, and he could control his strength with precision. The bodyguards of the old mistress all felt wary against Luo Shi.

However, Ye Chong was not thinking about that. Luo Shi was strong, but that was not enough to surprise Ye Chong that much. He had noticed something else.

Luo Shi was from the Ye Family!

It was not hard to imagine what a shock this would be for Ye Chong. Ye Chong saw every detail of Luo Shi's movement just now, and they were typical of the Ye Family's techniques. Of the Three Aristocratic Families, Xue Lai Clan specialized in machinery, while Xi Feng Tribe in the secret arts. For the Ye Family, their forte was combat, and Ye Chong was most familiar with their ways.

Ye Chong may have learned only the basics from Black Cove, but Black Cove's style, which was also the Ye Family's style, had deeply influenced him. As he learned more about combat, he developed a better understanding of the Ye Family's combat style. He could recognize it anywhere. Tried as Luo Shi had to disguise himself, he could not escape Ye Chong's eyes!

The man's name must be Ye Luo, or Ye something, and not Luo Shi.

No wonder he looked familiar. The Ye Family might be related to him in some way, but that was not at the top of his mind at the moment. As he studied Luo Shi closer, Ye Chong found that the man was similar to him in many respects.

Luo Shi's physique was similar to him in many ways. His body was lean and slender, and people find it hard to imagine the sheer amount of power residing in that body. Ye Chong recalled his time

on the trash planet, where his muscles would not grow larger like normal people no matter how rigorous his training was. He remembered that Mu was puzzled by this as well, and had in the end attributed it to his unique physical condition.

The fact was, his body was also different in many other ways.

For example, the silver liquid's negative side effects on his body faded over time. The silver liquid, Black Cove, and the Ye Family ... Ye Chong thought about all of them and their relation to each other. Many of his earlier confusions arose in his mind.

Could this really be due to the unique physical conditions of members of the Ye Family? He remembered that all the strong characters from the Ye Family had never looked particularly muscular, while other combat experts would usually look huge and imposing.

The Ye Family was in the free space zone!

He quickly realized the implications behind this fact. His heart beat furiously despite his forced calmness. If the Ye Family was here, they must also know how to return to the He Yue Galaxy!

Xi Feng Tribe and Ye Family, two of the Three Aristocratic Families were here now in the free space zone. What about the Xue Lai Clan?

In the Clan Leader's office of the Xue Lai Clan, a beautiful middle aged woman was absorbed in the display on her holographic screen. She wore no makeup, but her skin was fair. Her long, narrow eyes were filled with inexpressible emotions. She bit her lips together, deep in thought. This beautiful woman was the current Clan Leader of the Xue Lai Clan.

It was interesting to note that, of the Three Aristocratic Families, two were led by women, and only the Ye Family had a man as their leader.

However, people would not underestimate them just because

they were of the fairer sex. The Xue Lai Clan and the Xi Feng Tribe had more female members than male, and the Ye Family was in the exact opposite situation. The Ye Family had more male than female newborns in their family, and this had always been a vexing matter for the reigning Patriarch.

The Clan Leader was also troubled by something now. Too many problems had arisen lately. Suddenly, the peace in the He Yue Galaxy and the Five Galaxies was challenged.

The Shi Family had been active, spreading their power quickly. Intel from various sources suggested that they had a very powerful ally. However, no matter how deep they dug, they could not uncover any information on this mysterious ally. This raised the alarm for the traditional powers that were the Three Aristocratic Families.

Another issue was that in many of the latest models of mechs and weapons, traces of Xue Lai Clan's technology could be found. This caused a disturbance within the clan, with suggestions of possible traitors. However, the origin of these mechs and weapons could not be uncovered, and this troubled her greatly. Matter like these that could disrupt the harmony of the clan worried her the most.

The Five Galaxies was also problematic. Fortunately, the Xue Lai Clan was not the only one having issues. This was a problem that the Three Aristocratic Families would have to face together, and with the Freedom Alliance.

Some unknown force was trying to devour the Five Galaxies, and the beginnings of this force could be traced back to that primary planet back then. From her intel, the starships from all the Four Families had never returned. They had deployed many more starships there, but all of them were never heard from again. That place was like a black hole, swallowing anything that came its way.

The most terrifying thing, however, was that the force was spreading. This created a pressure on the Three Aristocratic

Families and the Freedom Alliance. However, no one could do anything about it. Xi Feng Tribe's forces in the Five Galaxies were now in an unprecedented state of alarm.

Perhaps she should send out some experts to investigate the matter. The Five Galaxies were indispensable for the Three Aristocratic Families. The He Yue Galaxy was rich in resources, but they were still limited in supply. The Five Galaxies was larger than the He Yue Galaxy, and had more unexplored territory. In some way, the Five Galaxies was the future of the Three Aristocratic Families, where each Family would fight to expand their grounds of influence, and the strategic focus of the Families' futures.

Now, however, she had another problem at hand.

The foolish boy had found his way to the free space zone!

She could not understand how that could have happened. There were only three extremely hidden routes from the He Yue Galaxy to the free space zone, and each of them was under the control of one of the Three Aristocratic Families.

Unlike the Xi Feng Tribe and the Ye Family, the Xue Lai Clan had always preferred machinery. The free space zone was not that important to the Clan. Hence, while the Xue Lai Clan also had forces in the free space zone, they had the weakest influence in the free space zone among the Three Aristocratic Families. Now that the foolish boy had found his way to the free space zone, she was very worried for his safety.

He was her son. She knew his significance to the Xue Lai Clan! She could not afford to see him harmed, no matter what.

After some pondering, she made her decision. The woman activated her comms and summoned, "Siva!"

## Chapter 378: Gemini

From the very beginning to the very end, Ye Chong had not spoken a word. People of course were helpless at this, while presuming him to be a natural lone wolf. As much as people had learned about kinds like Ye Chong, the more of an expert the person was, the weirder the person would get somehow. Luo Shi was that rare jewel who had a compassionate and modest personality.

Ye Chong had grown more mysterious in the eyes of the people. The group had become supremely respectful towards this peculiar man, that even Ying'er, the white clothed servant girl was getting avoidant upon any form of contact with Ye Chong. Well, she was more interested in Luo Shi who appeared to be friendlier than most of the adepts she had seen before. They grew on each other as they exchanged more talks over the time.

Nevertheless, Ye Chong's distant nature was part of his strategy, including the use of pseudonym which he got so familiar with. He knew the more he revealed, the less valued he would be, so he zipped his mouth to trap that mystery. The encounter with the Ye family was literally unexpected though, and he could become extremely cautious on the family. In conclusion, being distant, aloof and silent would be the best policy.

And he succeeded, very much succeeded, that he simply did not see it working this well.

He had demonstrated his strength twice ever since the encounter with Han Yue, which the two instances were more than enough to establish his status of a supreme alchemist among the people. His landing was as if a godsend, bizarrely potent, as he created a miracle upon arrival with the magical rain showering the place, which reminded people of that one frightening alchemist in the darker page of the history. Ye Chong was then quickly assumed as the successor of that destructive master of alchemy, which inevitably the fact conquered every witness there, including Luo

Shi. Ye Chong's status had already become unshakable and Luo Shi could not deny that even with his capabilities competent enough to join the Congregation. In the proximity of Ye Chong he was just helpless.

Somehow people would just shun themselves away from Ye Chong as he exerted that frigidity. And only Luo Shi had mustered sufficient courage to speak to Ye Chong twice, although nothing much had changed while giving Ye Chong enough reason to be more cautious of this person, especially when he captured that flickering strangeness in Luo Shi's eyes.

Did he see something in me? Thought Ye Chong, that was his main concern. Luo Shi was clearly a great person and Ye Chong believed that he purposively kept the majority of his strength in dark, since... the Aristocrats fancied such debut.

However, Ye Chong had a natural talent of being cold. He was just cold, colder than the iceberg without even trying. And this time he gave a lot of efforts in being colder, that Luo Shi would be quickly pushed away by the awkward atmosphere after trying too hard to please Ye Chong.

Throughout the whole time Ye Chong had spent days in his own tent alone, while only on occasions of a hasty travel he would get out of his tent, during which there would be nobody within 5 meters of his proximity.

After a few trips they got very much close to the next raiding point, the Emerald City. Unlike the barrenness of the other places, Emerald City was lively, happening, as one would see a person in their harsh trainings from time to time. Emerald City was the only oasis in the area. If they wanted any supplies of consumables, it would be here or nothing.

The guardsmen of the Han family became more relaxed the moment they had entered the city, since Emerald City was their domain and their work was pretty much done once they had

escorted everyone in.

The owner of the city was not as relieved as the guardsmen however, as he was on the final term of service, the final year to be exact, after which he could return to his own tribe and enjoy the days after his 60s. It had been a heart-pounding life ever since he was assigned here at the age of 30. Certainly he would not want anything to go wrong at the eleventh hour.

He was well-informed of Han Yue's order since quite some time ago, and so well-prepared he was. The Emerald City was located at the boundary of the grass field, and precisely the only resting spot within the vicinity of 500 kilometers, thus the dense and busy population, in which the harsh-training practitioners being the majority. Well, as much as Rui Bing was able to handle the punishing training, one's strength would be justifiable the moment one was able to participate in such training. To ensure the security within the area, the defense of the city had always been exceptional. For their visit this time, the owner of the city actually relocated a portion of security from the other domain of Han family nearby.

The plot twist was... there just so happened to be a surge of the population of alchemists to the city starting few days ago, which had alarmed the owner. It was a rather sensitive period for their surprise visit, but what would their participation signify to the party?

His call was heard as the scout returned hurriedly with information. Apparently the alchemists arrived at the city for a mysterious alchemist, one who recreated that very great Green Tempest after the fall of the predecessor. They were informed that such great man, the descendant of the historical figure, would be coming to Emerald City.

"WHAT!"

The owner almost dropped his teacup upon hearing the report.

You ask what a Green Tempest is? It is so notorious that it should be an unwritten common sense known by everybody who had spent enough years living on Dankwood! And obviously the owner knew the history.

But why would such a jinx be coming to my city? Of all time?

Cursed the owner. The horrendous name of Green Tempest spelled apocalypse to him, that he would be on high alert and contacted the other towns nearby to send more forces to his city. Unfortunately, he had to wait, as the long distance forbade, they would only be arriving few days later.

Please... please make it before things go wrong.

Preached the owner of the city.

"What!"

The teacup nearly escaped his grip. Another plot twist to his thumping heart - the apocalyptic alchemist was one of the members in Han Yue's group! To top that, one other member was known as Luo Shi, also a known figure, being one of the 10 participants in the last Congregation on Dankwood, the idol of every youngsters.

Such handful case. Ugh...

The lord was puzzled, the situation was far more complicated than he thought.

He could not be at ease to any of them, be it the alchemist, or Luo Shi the Great. He hoped that both of them would remain low-profiled at least, or it would be more puzzling.

Sadly, everything happened to be quite the contrary. The moment Luo Shi sat on the mattress in his accommodation, news flew throughout the city like the morning breeze. The mysterious alchemist's cover was blown as well.

Something began brewing in Emerald City...



The city could hardly be at calm when two figures had arrived, one was the resourceful alchemist who inherited the legendary Green Tempest, while the other was the idol, the top 10 of Dankwood.

The alchemist arrived with the news of conquering few hundreds of fighters effortlessly using his craft, which fell like a bomb in the city. People were ridiculed by it at first, since it really sounded fictional, till it was proven by the one great Luo Shi, then all the other alchemists around lost their heads.

The accommodation of Ye Chong and Luo Shi had been surrounded by people who begged for a moment of spotting the legends.

Ye Chong did not expect the fandom to be this maniac, well at least the outside of his residence was not as jammed as Luo Shi's. There was better peace at his place. Those people who swarmed upon Luo Shi's residence were mostly the passionate youngsters, which the guys were kicking alive and the girls were jumping in screams.

The "fandom" at Ye Chong's place consisted of the alchemists, who came in peace as they left the place after giving a glance.

Ye Chong was of course uninterested in the people as he locked himself in his room, doing research day by day. The maidservant would provide meals, mostly in fear however, that Ye Chong would see her trying to control her breath while her hands shook the tray would nearly fall on occasions when he lifted his head.

Okay, into what had the rumors made out there? Ye Chong laughed bitterly.

Well, Luo Shi seemed more experienced at handling his spreading tales, as he would head out and exchange fists with the passionate youngsters out there, during which piercing hurrahs would be slamming Ye Chong's thinking mind at his place.

And thanks to these, the owner of the city had been sleeping "well".

He was displeased by the fiasco certainly, but there was nothing he could do. The only relief was how the days passed peacefully. He had already received the order from the head of Han family. The escort task had been reassigned to others, and the head had sent a team of 800 experts coming to the city. So the one task he had to do would be guarding the old lady before the team arrived.

And that was when he lost faith again.

The most feared plot twist had happened again.

It was during the day, contrary to what he had predicted, that someone outside the alchemist's residence suddenly collapsed as he began spilling blood from his purplish expression.

About 50 witnesses were there.

The alchemists were enraged as they knew what the scene would signify. Dankwood was a small planet, any established branch of alchemy would have fair connection with its counterparts and it would be a betrayal taken in the form of framing when an innocent was drugged.

The victim had lost his consciousness. The alchemists had tried everything they knew. Nothing had worked however.

They were feeling uneasy of the incident. Their eyes were filled with a frightened confusion as they looked at each other.

How... how did it even happen?

# Chapter 379: Battle in Alchemy I

Certainly the mysterious alchemist did not come in peace, as he had stirred a storm in Emerald City, people were discussing him in the most frightful expression tinted with the strangest curiosity. And the sudden fall of the random alchemist in front of his house had become part of the heat that day, people were passing messages about how he just dropped, seemingly dead and nothing appeared to be able to resuscitate the fallen.

And Ye Chong was not aware of this, obviously. He had been spending every second of his soul on researches and he would only take the incident as merely a side story at most.

Regarding the incident, people had different versions of the story, mostly were sugarcoated with drama and iced with more things that went against the reality.

The reality was, the young alchemist challenged Ye Chong that day. Nobody knew it, the young alchemist took action in the dark, he picked one hallucinogen that was both colorless and odorless, as just a tiny attempt to test the mysterious alchemist.

And that was when he realized, the rumor was indeed true, while also knowing that he had underestimated Ye Chong's capability.

Ye Chong was not harmed by the attack, not even the slightest bit, although he detected the raid immediately, as he identified the culprit among the crowd. Without hesitation, Ye Chong returned a heavier blow, not sparing the young man a second to react.

He too used a colorless and odorless reagent but one with a way stronger spreadability, that it would travel far enough to sneak into the young man's respiratory system and take over his soul before he knew it. The reagent would destroy his blood circulatory system, while being not directly fatal, since... well Ye Chong was well-aware of his outsider identity, imagine the chaos he would cause if the mysterious alchemist, the possible descendant of the

great in the history turned out to be an outsider.

The unexpected however was the fact that he had underestimated this very reagent, namely the "Bloody Agony", not really the effect of it but how dramatic it would "kill" the victim, the symptoms were overwhelming to the witnesses that it brought fear as much as towards death. According to Luantic Guan's record, Bloody Agony was apparently a reagent used by the ancient tribe to perform punishment on the infidel, and Lunatic Guan just somehow managed to get its formulae, to be improvised into the current horror with greater spreadability in air and strength.

It was a taboo to "test" the others in the world of alchemist, since the competition had always been more dangerous than any other field of expertise. Things could simply happen without any forewarning, like how the young reckless man had fallen. Testing the other alchemists would be a thing to do cautiously, likelier silently, unlike the street fights between the practitioners which were common.

That was the rule of thumb written in the microchip of Lunatic Guan. Well, Lunatic Guan had been fairly convincingly on her contents. Logically speaking, nobody of the more experienced would initiate an attack without being attacked at first. The experienced would only take action when they felt their entities threatened, that would be when the foe was utterly finished.

That included Ye Chong, who grew up fighting, competing and warring. If it was not the fact that he wanted to stay low being an outsider, the counterattack would not as such.

The young alchemist remained unconscious, unable to clarify motive of his behavior. Because of that, things started to worsen, a battle in alchemy was brewing. He probably never thought of how his little gesture would have caused such havoc.

...

"What should we do?" asked Qi Wen grimly as he looked at the

surrounding.

The room was filled with all the top alchemists on Dankwood. Every representative figures of alchemy of all kinds you could imagine, of all branches the studies had led, had hurried their way to Emerald City the very second they got informed about the arrival of the descendant of one who wielded the Green tempest.

Qi Wei was the leader of the Qian System, which was the strongest, also the most established archaic system in histories of alchemy on Dankwood. One could still see them on top of ranking even when put under comparison with the other planets in the space zone, and because of that, Qian System had been the chief representative of all alchemy branches on Dankwood.

Qi Wei glanced upon the experts of all different alchemy branches, as sentiments filled his mind, wondering when they had their last reunion. Was it 10 years ago? Or 20 years? He could not remember. Probably the assembly would never happen if it was not mysterious alchemist.

It was a silent assembly however, as nobody was willing to get the ball rolling. To be honest, the creator of Green Tempest had such renowned status that he looked like a total psychopath who had - for the next few decades - tainted the good name of all alchemists, but also he became the greatest contributor to the alchemy studies as he was the pioneer who had performed thorough researches on reagent of massive destruction and provided an utter new aspect of academy. He not only represented the inspiration of all alchemists, but also was the prime of alchemy on Dankwood.

Such character would be a handful one to be judged, even by Ye Chong.

The assembly room was dead silent, the atmosphere was almost suffocating, as nobody was able to do anything about the fall of the young alchemist, including Qi Wei. Well, it did not mean these

alchemists were utterly incapable, the Qian System was known for their hallucinogenic productions but they knew nothing about the other branches. Disregarding that, there was one thing every one of them was sure - the action taken by the mysterious alchemist this time was hardly tip of the iceberg.

"Uh..." The first who attempted to break the dead silent was a middle-aged man in black clothing, with an emaciated face and sinking eyes, although brilliance glowed in his stare sometimes. He appeared to be one with a forgiving heart and a certain standing among the alchemists on Dankwood. He was the leader of the Incense branch, namely Fei Lidu.

Contrary to its aromatic name, the researches of Incense branch focused on the offensive aspects while the apprentices favored provocation as they wielded their ever-changing attack styles and there were a few amazing products from their forebears. So the other alchemists would treat their provocation with caution, and ... well... the fallen young alchemist, as restless as he was, turned out to be part of the apprenticeship too.

"The owner of Green Tempest did possess a deadly weapon in hand. And if the descendant of his did wield such weapon once again, I truly wonder what could possibly happen... Would it be another record to the incident last time?" asked Fei Lidu slowly.

That was a frightening reminder to the people. The incident last time remained rooted in the mind of all alchemists, even though had faded away from the memories of folks.

Alchemists today struck a positive image on people. They were highly regarded and supported, certainly they would not want to lose the privilege by the same incident again.

That was also why they hurried their way there.

The sudden fall of the Incense branch apprentice was somehow a sign of the upcoming tempest.

The room might be silent, the people might have no word, but their expression was tensed, as angered by the sudden change. Meanwhile Guang Wei gave a cold stare upon them, criticizing that low apprentice of the Incense branch. Nothing good ever came out of the Incense branch, no doubt. Thought he as he reminisced the times he was insulted by the apprentices. Nevertheless, the Incense branch was not a group which the fallen Smoke branch could simply mess with. So he could only stay quiet. The Smoke branch had sunken way back, with most skills buried by time and he, being the part of the branch, knew nothing much than a few smoky tricks and no way he could triumph over the Incense branch at the moment.

And he was well-informed of how the Smoke branch would never have the rights of expression in an important meeting like this. It would be a cold stare-to-stare if he ever voiced a different opinion. Nothing would happen other than enraging the Incense branch. Knowing the nature of Fei Lidu being the vengeful kind, he would rather stay quiet and watch the show.

You can never be spectator of such finale as you wish! Thought he.

Qi Wei would not want to disrupt the current status of alchemy on Dankwood, while being undesirable of messing with Incense branch, so he tacitly consented to the raised issue.

Other branches soon showed the same agreement, as Qi Wei's silent treatment had affected all neutral alchemists.

Annihilating an alchemist who would likelier cause more harm than good - whether if it was right or wrong based on all sorts of consideration, would never get an absolute judgement by the people. So they showed zero attitude towards the situation, they would let the ball just roll as it wished.

As long as they would fight in crowd, even the most potent alchemist like this uninvited visitor would fall. The greatest threat

he could impose would be none other than the Green Tempest.

Green Tempest might be notorious of the destructive it caused, but it was already a technique of the very past, that they strongly believed the evolution of their branches had already surpassed this piece of undying antique, especially when they had discovered the counter for it.

Ye Chong was researching. He had hidden the crates underground, so those precious materials remained intact.

The recent encounters had given him a better understanding of alchemy, while also initiating intense interests in him. He requested a massive amount of alchemy apparatuses from the Emerald City owner who certainly would nod his head hard upon meeting. The owner had sent him the best apparatus in the city, hoping that those toys would keep the boy quiet at least, since that was the owner's sole wish - having peace and quiet.

Thanks to the apparatus, Ye Chong's research progressed smoothly. He had been producing all kinds of reagents unlisted in his recipe, that his table was tinted by bottles and bottles of them, like glowing stars of different colors.

The encyclopedia Lunatic Guan provided was very rich in data and Ye Chong had just hit a small portion of it. While exclaiming the greatness of alchemy, Ye Chong had fully indulged himself in the fun of research.

He had planned an escape plan before, but he was at one critical point of his research, that he must delay his escape plan. He was almost there, almost... almost...

Regarding his reward, well Han Yue had sent him on the first day they arrived at the city.

Ironically, probably Ye Chong would never expect how the little delay he made was able to drag him into the most intense battle of flasks and beakers ever.



## Chapter 380: Battle in Alchemy II

"How's the preparation?" A voice rang within the voidness of the sealed room.

"Everything had been prepared, only at your order now, master." Sincerely the other voice replied.

Sharp whispers were heard then diminished.

The voices faded as the room regained its dead silence.

...

"I fear..." The voice echoed once again 10 minutes later, "that all our forces would be retreating after the raid this time..." Lethargic and unwilling the voice sounded, "and all our efforts for the past decades would go to waste..." It then took another few minutes of silence for the person to make up his mind.

...

"Go... just go."

"Yes sir!" The sincere person bowed and hurried out of the sealed room.

...

Emerald City remained much livelier as ever, since things had been happening for the past few days and they were pretty intriguing, be it the martial arts superstar Luo Shi or that mysterious alchemist, those were the topics after dinner.

But little the folks knew that, a battle in alchemy was brewing soon.

Very soon.

"Qi Wei, the master of Qian System, represents the folks of Dankwood, invites you for a meeting.\*" Qi Wei's voice was not restlessly loud, rather it sounded pumped, as he stood next to Fei Lidu, whose expression remained stiff with hands in his sleeves.

Ye Chong walked towards the window upon hearing the call.

It was bright summer day as Ye Chong stood by the window back then, behind the frames of fences made out of polished, sculptured wood. One should be aware that the appearance of alchemists would always be deceiving as they were the group of people who adored disguises using their tricks. Nobody knew the actual look of the mysterious alchemist as the potion had probably given him an unrecognizable mask, and no one of the city looked down upon this alchemist because of his youth.

"The heck..." Ye Chong had no idea what was going on at the porch, but he immediately withdrew his alarmed eyes after that, as he convinced himself to better spend the time on some researches rather than having a staring contest with strangers by the window.

"H-" Two red lines zapped towards Ye Chong the moment he lifted his lips. The one man in black launched an attack near Qi Wei.

Ye Chong reacted promptly as his waists pulled him all the way down to the ground, forming an arc to dodge the attack.

Crack. Crack!

The two beams struck the fence and vanished in the darkness of the room. Dust began dancing in the air as the frames were crushed.

Ye Chong witnessed the broadness of the fired beams and almost tasted them. His action grew rapid as he tumbled to the carpet and picked up his wooden lance.

Qi Wei's eyes were large, he only planned to have a talk with the mysterious alchemist, he just wanted to know the truth but Fei Lidu eventually initiated an attack. He looked at Fei Lidu, who looked rather relaxed, "Qi my brother, don't look surprise. We should strive for the end, rather than the mean. We had made our move, so it would be better to look for victory and not mercy." He

probably meant if they planned to do something on the alchemist, it would be better to achieve an ultimate outcome, and it would be very unwise to hesitate.

Qi Wei was displeased by Fei Lidu's inappropriate behavior, but he had to admit that Fei Lidu was right. It would be a dead-or-alive battle once they clicked the START button.

"You're wise indeed, brother," replied Qi Wei briefly, as he took out bottles from his rucksack.

The other alchemists stood quietly, with bottles in their grip. Guang Wei was at the back, for some reason his body was shaking.

What did I just see? Guan Wei could not believe his eyes, as they somehow perceived an accessory on the neck of the mysterious alchemist. The sight only lasted for 3 seconds but he was pretty sure he did see a Silver Strand Pendant, the accessory he dreamed day and night, resting round the neck of the alchemist.

Ye Chong watched the moving red beams, as his forehead was wetted by cold sweats.

Whipper Snake? Dang, they actually sent two Whipper snakes? The beams were about thickness of his thumbs and had a dark brownish horn at the head. and dark red stripes over the bodies. They were called Whipper due to their elasticity and bounciness, they would roam the place at an unpredictable direction and an unforeseeable pace.

The two snakes were slithering on the ground, making aggressive hisses as their crimson eyes focused upon Ye Chong.

Ye Chong dared not to lift his eyes, never once he would imagine any human would raise such horrible beast. For real, like how? Even Lunatic Guan's encyclopedia did not have a record on ways to tame these madness.

His body was tense, the camouflage on his lance had been torn, he swung the lance and faced the dark head at his foes.

Snap! Klink! The Whipper Snakes suddenly zapped to both sides.

Darn it. Cursed Ye Chong, he did predict the moves and he launched himself on one of the snakes.

He had observed how the snake moved just now, and those movements convincingly defined danger at a whole new level. They were Whippers for their springy nature, they would bounce with their abdomen as they squeezed themselves like springs at the tightest. The momentum was so insane that even Ye Chong the speed master almost tripped himself in surprise.

The snakes were very intelligent too. They did not attack Ye Chong with pure brute aggression, rather they utilized their bouncy body as they threw themselves to walls at both side, landed with their abdomen and launched themselves again - a reflective shot!

Snap! The momentum intensified!

Both snakes headed towards Ye Chong.

Never would Ye Chong expected the snakes wing cable of such drastic direction change, it was a horror to see these Whipper Snakes accelerating themselves using the conservation of momentum and fired themselves like an arrow as they straightened their body and faced their horns at Ye Chong after redirection.

Ye Chong had no time to take any action than guarding himself with his lance.

Snap! The red beam struck body of Ye Chong's lance. His hands were making a shudder that he almost dropped his lance, as the red beam went itself to the back.

The snake actually made a reflection even on my spear? Ye Chong was shocked but there was no more time for shocker. He intended to destroy one of them before they reunited at one point and launched a combined attack. But the snakes turned out to be

more unpredictable than he thought... He looked almost doomed in this battle.

He remembered seeing information on Whipper Snake back in the 5 major galaxies. It was a visit to one information center somewhere in the Virtual World. He read the entries out of mere curiosity and was certainly terrified by it but he never foresaw the day that he would meet such monstrosity alone...

A tip to the ground as Ye Chong made an arch with his shaking eyes seeing a red beam traveling by his waist.

The scene grew beyond comprehension as two beams of light zapping around the house, accelerating at a horrendous rate, to a point that a network of red web seemed to have formed in the room. The ends of the web were fading but soon they were covered by newer lines. There was a silhouette jumping around at too an insane rate... what in the Dankwood happened?

The Whippers kept throwing themselves at the walls so they would conserve momentums again and again. They were dexterous as they aimed the back of our protagonist. The velocity was increasing and it was harder for Ye Chong to even identify where the snakes actually were.

The afterimages became longer and longer, as their body turned blurrier each time.

In a never-before-experienced dangerous situation, the strength of Ye Chong's focus was also never-before-experienced.

It almost felt like he had been sent back to the past, back to the time when he still spent his days piloting Tissot, blocking those strange white glowing orbs as he did his NR training in the Virtual World. Well, he did not have a mech now unlike before, as he wielded only a piece of wood, and the foes he had to face were not the harmless virtual orbs but two wickedly vicious snakes that wanted his life.

There was still... a vast difference between a dummy training and an actual fight.

The afterimages lost the stack as the contour grew clearer.

Ye Chong had been cornered, he could no longer make further movement within the diminishing seconds. Whipper Snakes had accelerated to a point that his eyes could distinguish no more.

He would love to make another pointless attempt of repositioning himself within the dancing beams, but his mind reminded him to maximize his vitality to demonstrate movements the most concise possible. His respiration, his blood circulation, pace of his entire body had reached an astonishing rate.

He was wetted by his sweats, while being unaware of it. Within that brief second as that one drop of sweat fell, he got to perform over 70 times of self-guard technique. He was unaware if that was the maximum for humanity to reach, but he was well-aware that it was already his very best.

Yet...

Pant... pant...

Every guard was a gamble. The momentum created by the snakes was impulsive. Ye Chong could feel his arms aching as every crash on the lance felt like as heavy as a hammer slam.

Ye Chong was relying his intuition in this fight, like always.

"Need not to worry, my brother," said Fei Lidu, with an unexpected smile, though sadistic. "The Whipper Snake would be one horrendous foe even a martial arts practitioner would be doomed to defeat, and the snakes are fighting an alchemist this time." Pointed he, at Ye Chong's accommodation.

One keyword of Lidu's line caused Qi Wei to stagger. Whipper Snake. "Did he actually send two Whipper Snakes?" Cries of shocker were heard among the underlings, "Oh my Dankwood, those beams were Whipper?" No one had expected the two red

lights were the repulsive reptile.

Fei Lidu was silent, with his hands crossed behind, looking proud in his eyes.

Qi Wei gave a stare at his ally, his expression was indescribable as he quietly kept the reagents back into his rucksack.

The alchemist was practically a done-for once the Whipper Snakes were sent. And thanks to this kill, words would be spread, about how the Incense branch had eradicated the evil and saved the day. Thought Qi Wei, as his underlings also put their bottles back into their inventories, though they seemed confused.

If Fei Lidu could handle the alchemist himself, what was the hassle of sending everybody to the scene?

And that was when Guang Wei looked at the happening, with a drained face of his.

# Chapter 381: Battle in Alchemy III

In the record of history, there had been different eras where there would always be a particular problem that haunted humanity, such particular problem had received different comments and visionary from the great historical figures while had also puzzled folks of all walks of time - that is, if humans could truly throne themselves as the greatest entity in the law of nature? The problem might not be a problem when asked as a question itself, that it had answered itself, obviously whenever one would look into the speed, the strength, the vitality of human's anatomy which none of those could surpass even the most ordinary beast in the galactic wild, not even those of the Jie experts.

Most lifeforms in the galaxy were never something humanity could fight barehanded. Humans would always be required assistance, assistance like mechs or supreme weaponry in order to even stand a chance to win the beasts.

And those beasts were beasts like the fearsome Whipper Snakes.

Fei Lidu looked all calm when he observed the havoc happening in the accommodation. No one else could have recognized the potency of a Whipper Snake than himself. Countless great ones had been annihilated by those slithering, zigzagging madness. It was only that his nature of staying low kept these avenging murders in dark, unaware by the people. But well, there would be times when he would need to flash his trump card and this was it.

It was a monstrosity that could even conquer the practitioners, let alone a mere folk who only knew how to pour from one flask to another. Alchemist, oh merely an alchemist. He never worried about if his snakes would get the job done, instead, he was worried of Qi Wei's response on this. The frowning, the heavy breaths were not a good sign of approval from a great leader of the mighty Qian system like Qi Wei. Lidu only wanted to expand the influence of Incense branch and so he did something, brutally yet strategically.



But the capability of the Qian system was not something he could simply replace. Assuming if this was the lighter to the war between the two branches, these Whipper Snakes would do very little instead. Thus, it would be a no-no to enrage the Qian system.

He knew, it would only be a matter of time till he was caught red-handed on owning two dangerous beasts. So he just demonstrated them, before things went wrong, to tell the world that he was not a pebble to simply fiddle with.

He was right. People had been convinced, frighteningly convinced, as notorious those snakes were, while unheard rumors of them being tamable were. And somehow the Incense branch had made a miracle, of taming the untamable beast. Fei Lidu's move was not meaningless after all.

...

Pant... Pant...

Ha...Hah....

Ye Chong's mind had been wiped, as an exhilarated intensity swarmed upon his body, the muscles of his arms and legs were jiggling, somehow demonstrating an untamed thrash due to the instincts he had formed over the long adventures in the galaxy, which turned out to be his savior.

Every bit of his muscle was wriggling beneath his torn clothing, like countless snakes the tendons intertwined and separated, tightened and loosened repetitively. Strength had been unleashed as Ye Chong's movement grew superbly precise under the lead of these muscles. Ye Chong's movement looked mechanical however, probably due to the over-precision of movements, which gave a rather peculiar sense to his usual dodging techniques. He dodged and flipped, the movements formed seamlessly, as Ye Chong traveled in the briefest straight lines.

The September Lan's technique.

Well, probably even the forebears who created the technique would never expect such use of muscle manipulation.

Generally, Whipper Snake's attacks were all linear attacks, which justified the quickness of the stinging attacks - the universal law of mathematics - it always would form the shortest distance if one travelled from point A to point B in straight.

Ye Chong gradually discarded the fanciness of his movements as he moved crudely, intuitively, back to who he was inside. It was amazing, unfortunately it was done subconsciously or Ye Chong would be overpowered if he had mastered it.

A monstrosity could be potent, but there would always be a limit to its destruction.

Whipper Snakes were fast, while also being violent but they could never maintain their acceleration for all eternity, and that was when they hit their limits, the maximum speed in simpler terms.

Their maximum was a total horror as they had veiled the entire room in dense network of scarlets with their afterimages.

The situation had gotten a strange twist, as Ye Chong had broken his speed cap under intense pressure, which was just enough to hold the Whipper Snake's attack. Unlike the Whipper Snake's bouncing zigzagging, Ye Chong's movement had been intuitive. If Ye Chong depended on his consciousness to make movements, he would have been slow, but now his muscles had taken the lead and dodging had become an effortless act for him, while becoming a consuming fight for the Whipper Snakes. So they had slowed down. The situation had changed. Ye Chong was probably winning.

In reality, it had only been few ten seconds after Fei Lidu unleashed his pets. People were waiting by the window, unaware of the snakes' habit, anticipating the next action taken by this fairly strange leader of Incense branch.

That was when a group of people were hurrying towards the place.

"Report. There are about 54 people surrounding the space before the mysterious alchemist's accommodation," concisely one person stated.

It was odd, as it was different from what the unknown leader had expected. The leader, as experienced and strategic he was, knew it was a critical point to make decision, that a second of hesitation would possibly disrupt the entire operation. Apparently their main target was the mysterious alchemist so they had studied him carefully, while also being fully informed of his capabilities.

"Finish them." The eyes of the leader were cold, as briefly the three syllables went.

"Yes sir." The group then broke into 3 small parties where one of them sneaked towards Ye Chong's accommodation. Their steps were silent yet extremely agile and organized. The street was soundless as they passed by a few dead bodies.

"Siege completed," said one member.

The head of this small party was a man with red string over his wrist, well, everyone was wearing black and covered in mask, some sort of marking would be needed.

The red-stringed wrist swung, "Attack!"

...

Guang Wei's eyes were large, as he squeezed through the crowd, he felt he had lost his mind but that one thing was teasing his mind, scrapping his last bit of sanity.

Silver strand pendant.

That's the silver strand pendant...

The smoke branch, the smoke branch would be resuscitated.

If I regained my silver strand pendant...

I had enough of those humiliations, those snickers, those degrading comments...

It was when Guang Wei thought his true strength would sink for the rest of his life.

Then the silver lining had come from the sky.

Silver strand pendant.

"What the hell are you doing?" Cursed one man.

"Oh, wasn't this Guang Wei the big man from the Smokin' BBQ branch? What you're doing? You wanna show off your smoking skill when all of us are here?"

"We are not having a BBQ party you know!"

"HAHAHA!"

Guang Wei was ignorant of the comments he somehow grew old hearing, as he carried on forcing himself through the crowd, with his lips bleeding from his constant bites. The laughter continued, the comments echoed in the space, his legs were dragging him all the way to the front.

In the midst of laughter, no one had noticed how the few alchemists at the end of the crowd had been struck down. The assassins raided the souls of the little alchemy pioneers in their mask. The assassins were practitioners after all, and no flask-wielding potter could brace themselves against the fist and swords.

Coincidentally, that was where Guang Wei formerly stood as the alchemists fell without sound.

Back in the room of Ye Chong...

Zap! Klink! Klink! Klink!

Something had changed.

The Whipper Snakes maintained their momentum and shattered the entire row of flasks on the table. Ye Chong's colorful efforts

had been destroyed as they pierced the glasses.

The enormous force smashed the collection as it burst into countless pieces!

Clouds of different colors soon flocked the place. Those were the collection of hallucinogenic reagents. Oh no... Yup Ye Chong had been working on hallucinogens ever since he recognized their importance from the last fight, and in fact this time he did again, since...

Those vaporizing hallucinogens became the factor to his salvation.

The Whipper Snakes froze in the air as they zapped through the thick clouds of hallucinogens. They fell and crashed into the wall. Because of the law of conversion of energy, they had to receive the complete impulsive energy from their kinetics. And there they splashed, into a splat of blood.

Ye Chong recovered from the insane fight very soon after the threat had disappeared.

The catch was... he did not even have the strength to lift his finger, as those colorful clouds had drained the last bit of him. He panted, and panted, carelessly breathed in the hallucinogens as he landed to the floor with drizzles of his sweats showering the nearby ground.

Battle... the battle had ended?

And right outside the window, something had happened again.

# Chapter 382: Battle in Alchemy IV

What was that smell?

Alchemists were all sensitive to smell. Who released the alchemy substance? Some of them could not help but looked back.

"Aah!" A sharp and horrified cry came from the back. More cries followed. No one expected someone to be following them. If one of the alchemists had not been careless and accidentally released his alchemy substance, the entire group would have been neatly and silently wiped out .

There were bloody corpses everywhere. The ambushers came in huge numbers, killing their victims from behind their masks. It was a chilling sight.

However, most of the alchemists were prominent characters of the alchemy world on Dankwood planet, all seasoned fighters themselves. They quickly released their own alchemy substances. Colorful smoke drifted into existence, enveloping the entire place. Human figures were vaguely visible through the smoke.

The situation turned chaotic.

Ye Chong sat on the ground, gasping for breath, his mind blank after strenuous physical exertion. The room was filled with impenetrable smoke. Ye Chong pressed his palms to the ground for support, but was cut by a fragment of broken alchemy flask. He felt a sharp pain on his hand and retracted it. The pain also woke him up from his daze.

The ground was covered with broken fragments of alchemy flasks. All his days of hard work were lost. The whipper snakes were too quick, and the broken fragments of the alchemy flasks flew just as quick, spraying off like deadly weapons. It was these broken fragments that caused most of the alchemy flasks to be broken.

The smoke had a faint, sweet smell. Ye Chong jolted abruptly,

cursed himself, and quickly pushed himself up, fighting against his fatigue.

He remembered that he had synthesized a few more dangerous products. Could they be released into the air as well? Ye Chong was anxious. He knew exactly how dangerous they were. Besides, his smoke pearl was only useful against knockout agents and the like. He had no intention of trying out his latest products.

Ye Chong picked up his wooden spear from the ground in a hurry and stumbled to the front door, leaving the mess behind him. His gaze fell on the wooden box placed beside the door. A stroke of luck for him. Ye Chong brought the box with him as he exited the room.

The sudden burst of smoke knocked Guang Wei out instantly. He never would have guessed that this would save his life.

Looking down from above the city, it was hell down below. The ambushers had decided to attack without reservation in their brute force attempt. There were no preambles or intel gathering beforehand. The battle escalated quickly.

The maidservant who had been waiting by the door all this while was surprised to see the mysterious alchemist suddenly appearing before her. The alchemist had stayed inside ever since he arrived. She heard the ruckus from inside, but ever since she began serving the alchemist, there would be noises from within the room, so she had grown used to them.

"What are you doing?" She saw Ye Chong with a spear in one hand a wooden box in the other, and asked respectfully. It looked like he was about to leave. She was baffled, but dared not stop him. Now, she was thinking informing the news to the Mayor immediately.

With the box in his hand, Ye Chong felt much safer. He had kept all the maps and money that Han Yue had given to him in the box. On the other hand, he was using up more and more of his raw ingredients. His research these days were exhausting his raw

materials rapidly. However, he had no choice. The price for improving himself faster would of course be higher.

"Nothing," Ye Chong answered politely, almost reflexively. He quickly moved on to other matters, as he was struck with a brilliant idea.

He looked around him and saw a flower vase. He picked it up and freed the vase from its flowery contents, leaving them on the floor.

Just what was he up to? The maidservant looked at the rumored legendary alchemist, and could not figure him out. The vase was a valuable item that not even her annual salary could afford it. Even the flowers were just delivered this morning from the largest florist establishment in the city.

Ye Chong did not reply her, only testing the material of the vase, and seemed quite happy with it.

He immediately took out a few chemicals and began to do some alchemy right in the corridor.

The maidservant looked at the alchemist with interest as he chucked in all sorts of strange things into the vase as his left hand swirled the vase rhythmically.

People had given him an almost godly reputation. She watched nervously at the vase in Ye Chong's hands. Just what would this turn out into? To her, Ye Chong was just like a magician performing his magic trick.

He looked at the final product in the vase with satisfaction. The snow white vase now carried a yellowish thick fluid. It filled almost half of the case.

"Take a few steps back," Ye Chong said to the maidservant.

The maidservant hurried a few steps back.

"A few steps more."

The maidservant took another half a dozen steps back. She



steadied herself and looked at the alchemist curiously, eager to see his next move.

Ye Chong looked solemn, holding the vase carefully in his hands. If any combat experts were here, they would notice that Ye Chong's did not tremble at all, almost like a statue.

Ye Chong did not know why the people outside wanted to attack him. However, since he had just escaped from death, he did not feel like reasoning with them. He would teach them a lesson, one they would never forget!

The room he was staying in was filled with many alchemy products. Perhaps it was out of habit, but most of them were dangerous or lethal ones.

He would not enter the room now. The room was full of dangerous materials. Entering without sufficient preparation would only kill him. Besides, there was a huge variety of them. Mixing the chemicals together might lead to some surprising elements.

Ye Chong switched the vase to his right hand, and held onto the door knob with his left.

He took a deep breath and opened the door by a small crack, then he threw the vase into the room. Before the vase made its landing, he quickly shut the door. After that, he pushed hard against the door, bracing for what came next.

Bam!

It was the sound of a muffled explosion. The door shook violently, but the quality material of garnetwood held.

The maidservant was shocked. She covered her mouth tightly, trying not to make a sound. That muffled explosion had startled her, and her heart was still racing. Just what was he up to? Her dim, blue eyes betrayed her fear and uncertainty.

Ye Chong did not linger for long, and made to leave. Leaving this

place as soon as possible was his best option for now. The maidservant was scared frozen, still standing where she was.

Ye Chong had did something quite ruthless.

He had thrown an explosive into the room. The explosive was much stronger than the one he used back in the tent. This explosion would definitely break all the remaining alchemy flasks in his room. The room was sealed well, and the only entrances were through the door and windows. Since he had kept the door shut, the only possible venting points were the windows. The explosion pushed the air from inside the room out into the open. The air was filled with all kinds of dangerous products of alchemy.

Not far out from the windows, the alchemists and ambushers were still in the thick of the fight. This deadly airflow was about to deal a heavy blow to them.

The first to react were Qi Wei and Pei Libei. Both them were surprised. While they were not exactly alchemists themselves, they were involved with alchemy for years and had seen their fill. They knew how terrifying this airflow could be.

Guang Wei was very lucky. Since he tried hard to push himself forward, he was now just between Qi Wei and Pei Libei. He had them to thank for his surviving the airflow.

A frontal attack depended entirely on brute strength. Tricks were usually difficult to execute, especially against a place so tightly defended as the Mayor's Mansion.

However, they were left with no choice, since now was the time when the Mayor's Mansion was least defended. Just a few days after, not only would combatants from nearby cities arrive, even the Han Family's strongest warriors would be here.

But can they really take down the place? Looking at the stubbornly defended Mayor's Mansion, the leader of the ambush squad felt a moment of doubt.

In the corridor, Ye Chong ran ahead quickly.

Crash! A window was broken, spraying glass every which way. A figure darted towards him.

Ye Chong reacted quickly, lifting the spearhead and aiming towards the throat of the attacker.

Crush! A crimson flower bloomed! A second figure appeared behind the attacker just then, but Ye Chong pushed forward and ran right into the first attacker.

Ye Chong was like a mech flying at high speed, while the now dead attacker was just like a sandbag. He was flung straight out the window. The person right behind the first attacker never expected it, and was caught off guard. Everything happened so quickly, and Ye Chong did not give him time to think. The second attacker reflexively tried to catch his comrade.

Wham! The two sandbags collided! They both flew out the window.

Ye Chong ignored them and continued running down the corridor.

As he passed through a door with a semicircular arch, what he saw gave him quite a surprise.

# Chapter 383: The Story Behind I

Luo Shi was being surrounded, under attack by dozens of men.

Ye Chong did not manage to see Luo Shi fight during the ambush attack on their campsite. This was his first time witnessing the man in combat.

He fought with the typical combat style of the Ye Family. There were no fancy moves, and every move was either damaging or fatal. The man made evasive steps to avoid being trapped by his attackers. Ye Chong could not read his opponents accurately, and he could see that Luo Shi was using authentic combat moves of the Ye Family, much stronger than the instructors in Black Cove.

Compared to him, the instructors were basically newbies to the arena.

Luo Shi moved with ease, never keeping still for a moment too long, preventing his attackers from trapping him. It was impossible to see skills like these in the Five Galaxies or the He Yue Galaxy. In those places, mechs were the main ways of combat.

"Hah, you're here!" Luo Shi noticed Ye Chong. His eyes shone brightly, and he sounded oddly warm.

Ye Chong was perplexed. He had noticed early on of Luo Shi's strange attitude towards him. Luo Shi was always trying to be closer to him. Ye Chong had thought that his disguise was blown, and became wary of the man.

Just then, three ambushers went to attack Ye Chong.

Child abductors! They wore the same masks that Ye Chong saw when he first encountered these child abductors. The strange masks left a deep impression in him.

A lance came for Ye Chong, striking like a snake.

Another longsword routed itself to stop Ye Chong from escaping. The sharp edge of the blade shimmered. Once Ye Chong entered its

effective range, he would have to face its continuous attacks.

The last man had a dagger in his hand. He was skinny, but his eyes were cold and attentive, like a cat watching its prey in the night.

They thought of this alchemist, the man who caused their last ambush attack to end in failure, as an even more important target than Luo Shi. The alchemist had safely arrived at this place, thus their group that was assigned to the campsite must have failed. While they did not know how it happened, they were still confident of their abilities. Any strong alchemist would still have his or her own weaknesses. If an alchemist were to face off against a combat expert, then the alchemist would be as good as dead. Besides, this was three of them against one alchemist!

Ye Chong's eyes widened!

Their attacks were exactly the same as the ones he faced when he escaped from the Black Forest.

So it was them last time! Ye Chong's eyes turned cold.

In just a short instant, Ye Chong understood the whole story. At the first village he visited, he had killed a child abductor, and let another one go. The one who escaped must have told of his story to his organization. Later attempts on his life must have been their act of revenge.

Back in the forest, the complicated territory and their peculiar ways of camouflaging themselves among the greenery had given them a huge advantage. More importantly, Ye Chong was too heavily injured last time till he was forced into a tight corner.

Now, however, they would face Ye Chong, fresh from a new breakthrough. While it was only an instinctive body reflex, the leftover subconscious effects left in his body were still enough to make him even more dangerous.

Ye Chong turned his left leg, swinging his body to the side and

avoiding the lance attack. The wooden spear in his right hand stabbed in the direction of the longsword. It was a simple stab, one that Ye Chong did without much thought, done almost reflexively.

The wooden spear hit its blue spot target spot on.

The wooden spear bounced back to him with a rattle of his right hand. Ye Chong seemed to know what was behind him. The wooden spear's shaft whipped backwards, almost softly, onto the chest of the child abductor with the dagger, ready to attack Ye Chong.

Crack!

A soft sound was heard. The two persons sandwich-ing Ye Chong in between fell down like puppets with their strings severed. They died horrible deaths. The man with the longsword had a stab wound in his throat, and the flesh around the wound was now in an eerie black. As for the man with the dagger, his chest had collapsed inward from a blow to his body center.

The only surviving child abductor was shocked. They had rushed into their deaths when facing Ye Chong. The man had easily dealt with them both.

"Wonderful!" Luo Shi exclaimed, full of admiration. As he finished pronouncing that single word, he had already switched position five times, killing two more people.

Looking at the way he was, Ye Chong knew that the man was not giving it his all yet. Luo Shi must be more powerful than this.

Suddenly, Luo Shi waved towards Ye Chong, smiling a secretive smile as he said, "Hey, brother, let's get out of here. I've something you'll probably be very interested in." He did not seem concerned about the child abductors around him at all.

Luo Shi's suggestion confused Ye Chong completely.

Luo Shi said nothing more. He made a few evasive moves and escaped from his enemies' grasp. He waved for Ye Chong to follow

again, and fled outside.

Luo Shi's departure was a relief for the rest of the child abductors. They now turned their attention to Ye Chong, but did not attack immediately. Ye Chong had just shown that he was no weaker than Luo Shi. Besides, he was an alchemist!

The leader of this attack squad was now sighing hopelessly to himself inside. Meeting that crazy Luo Shi was unfortunate, but now they were up against another even crazier man.

Ye Chong did not understand Luo Shi's intention, but looking at his enemies, he also knew that he should leave as soon as possible. He made a turn and fled out of the house, light as a bird.

As the two strong men left, the child abductors all heaved a sigh of relief. Just then, however, a thunderous sound of animal footsteps came from outside, sending a soft tremor through the ground.

The leader of the child abductors was shocked beyond belief!

When Ye Chong left the Mayor's Mansion, he saw a group of men riding canterelles forcing their ways through the city gates.

However, Ye Chong was more focused on the sight of Luo Shi, waiting for him not far off. Luo Shi waved at him and continued running, heading out of the city. Ye Chong considered for a moment before following him.

The two figures leaped across houses like shadows.

The man at the forefront of the canterelle troop took a quick glance at the two fast-moving figures with surprise. However, he kept his eyes forward and said hoarsely, "Forward, to the Mayor's Mansion."

Ye Chong followed Luo Shi, but keeping a reasonable distance between them.

They were both fast, and running with all they got. Emerald City

grew smaller and smaller behind them. It was when they were about 30 kilometers away from Emerald City that Luo Shi finally stopped.

Almost at that same moment, Ye Chong halted as well, still keeping a reasonable distance between them.

He held the wooden spear in his hand, ready for anything. The wooden box was put aside.

Seeing Ye Chong thus prepared, Luo Shi stared for a moment before laughing and said, "No need for all this, no need at all, we're not enemies."

Ye Chong did not respond, but asked, "Start talking, why bring me here?" He stared into Luo Shi's eyes. Shang once told him that when a person lied, he would be able to tell from the eyes.

Luo Shi turned sombre. His next sentence was earth-shattering. Even Ye Chong could not help but show his surprise on his face!

"Ye Chong, it's you isn't it?"

Ye Chong said nothing, staring fixedly at Luo Shi. Inside however, he was desperately trying to figure out how he had exposed himself. In the end, he quickly calmed down. He could not understand what he did wrong, and if that was the case, then it was better if he just left it at that and prepare for battle!

Luo Shi shook his head and explained, "Ye Chong, I mean you no harm."

Before Ye Chong could respond, he continued, "It's not just me, the entire Ye Family means you no harm!"

Ye Chong was unconvinced. The relationship between him and the Ye Family was already complicated as it was, and he did not wish to dwell on it any more than necessary. However, he kept quiet and listened anyway. Luo Shi had surprised him too much.

"When you were in Black Cove, you had already drew attention



from the higher ups of Black Cove. You must know how special your body is. Normally, for anyone as thin as you are, he should be physically weaker, and can only develop his speed, flexibility, reaction time.

"But not you!

"Black Cove quickly notified the Ye Family of this. In fact, the Patriarch grew interested in you. Hmm, I'm not sure how much you know about the Ye Family, but in recent years, successors of the family are in decline, and true descendants of the Ye Family are all worried about it. This is also why you gained attention from the Patriarch."

Luo Shi shrugged with an air of self mockery.

"You're very vigilant, a quick learner, and strong as well," Luo Shi said this with approval, "Every attempt by Black Cove to recover you ended in failure. The Patriarch was vexed by this, but he could do nothing about it." At this, Luo Shi seemed to remember something, and grinned.

"The real deal breaker for the Patriarch is this - you had used the silver liquid, but remained healthy and unscathed!" Luo Shi turned serious and looked straight at Ye Chong, speaking his next words with care, "Do you know what this means?"

Ye Chong remained silent.

Luo Shi did not answer his own question, but switched topics, "The silver liquid is an early invention, but its side effects are obvious. It's supposed to simulate an element uniquely found in the blood of any Ye Family member. However, current technology is still insufficient to replicate it exactly. There is only one group of people who can use the silver liquid and remain unaffected. Just one group!

"It's the Ye Family members!"

The simple sentence was like dropping a bombshell for Ye Chong!

"You used the name Ye Chong before, so it's actually convincing that you're actually from the Ye Family. However, no one expected you to be so slippery to catch. It seemed as though you always have a mysterious someone by your side, protecting you. Our operations failed every time," Luo Shi said with a wry smile on his face.

## Chapter 384: The Story Behind II

Ye Chong thought of Mu and Shang. Without their help, who knew how his life would be now? The memory of his time with Mu and Shang sent a warm feeling to his heart.

"Then you arrived in the He Yue Galaxy out of nowhere. In all honesty, we still don't know how you got here," Luo Shi smiled even more wryly.

"Our people were still searching for you in the Five Galaxies. When they saw you in the He Yue Galaxy, they were shocked! Haha, you should've seen their faces. Ye Wuqin was all just plain flabbergasted! It was awesome!" Luo Shi laughed, obviously enjoying the memory.

His easy laughter was soothing to Ye Chong, but he did not lower his guard.

"You know what happened next. The Three Aristocratic Families ended up all in a nervous wreck because of you. But we've been curious, why are the Xue Lai Clan and Xi Feng Tribe hot on your heels too?"

"Don't know," Ye Chong answered calmly.

"They don't matter anyway. Hey, if you think about it, we might be brothers," Luo Shi said, excited, "My siblings back at home were all wondering who your parents are, but none of them have any obvious conclusions. The elders at home are also watching you closely."

Ye Chong kept his expression neutral, but a strange feeling was bubbling into existence within him. Parents? What an unfamiliar term.

"You mind if I verify with your blood?" Luo Shi looked at Ye Chong nervously, his eyes shining with enthusiasm.

"Verify how?" Ye Chong asked. That was something he was

curious about all this while.

With Ye Chong's agreement, Luo Shi seemed to relax a little. He calmed down and explained, "It's simple. For members of our tribe, their blood will turn into a sky blue color when mixed with Bolmanshek solution."

He chortled as he produced a transparent crystal test tube from his waist. "Good thing I brought this with me, it's providence alright. No one brings this around with them!" He flicked a finger and opened the cap. The crystal test tube was filled with a transparent liquid. Luo Shi offered the test tube to Ye Chong and said, "One drop of blood. Just one drop will be enough."

Ye Chong studied the crystal test tube with a plain expression, even though his emotions were all over the place. His blood rushed through his veins in dysphoria.

Perhaps, he'll finally have an answer! This was a question that had troubled him for so long, and now, he was about to find out the truth.

Was he a member of the Ye Family?

Ye Chong could not stay calm in spite of his usual composure. He had told himself many times that his origins should not bother him. These were matters that did not affect him in a concrete way. His biological origin was just that, and nothing more.

However, now that the truth was about to be revealed, Ye Chong found the coolness that he prided himself on was so brittle against reality!

His pulse raced like never before. His long, even breathing turned shorter as his blood rushed with excitement.

Ye Chong closed his eyes and forced himself to take a long, deep breath! It took almost all of his strength to inhale this time, then he exhaled the air within him heavily outwards! All his troubles seemed to escape from him, following that exhale.

When Ye Chong opened his eyes again, they were once again determined and focused.

Whatever will be, will be!

He took out his dagger and touched his index finger lightly against the edge of the blade. He reached his index finger to the crystal test tube's opening and squeezed gently. A drop of crimson blood dived into the test tube. Plop! It met the transparent Bolmanshek liquid.

Luo Shi watched nervously at the crystal test tube in Ye Chong's hand.

The crystal clear liquid in the test tube suddenly transformed. When the blood was mixed into the liquid, it diffused quickly like smoke in air, and a sky blue color began to spread its tendrils quickly in the test tube, dying the entirety of its content in a beautiful sky blue.

The sky blue test tube dazzled under the sun like a flawless blue diamond.

Luo Shi's face reddened as he leaped up in excitement. His loud voice carried out across the entire plain as he cried, "Hahahaha .... I have a new brother! ... I have a new brother! ..." He jumped around happily like a child, an entirely different person from the gentlemanly Luo Shi that he usually was like.

Ye Chong stared at the crystal test tube with its sky blue content.

He was not the least bit happy. The Bolmanshek solution, now dyed a sky blue, had filled up every corner of his heart and soul. Even the softness beneath his strong and emotionless surface was affected.

It felt salty, bitter and biting.

"Wonderful! This is wonderful!" Luo Shi was rambling, "You're really one of us, of the Ye Family! Haha, now Ye Family has another strong member! I'm so happy! Ah, brother of mine, are

you really called Ye Chong?"

Luo Shi's excitement and enthusiasm did not move Ye Chong at all. He acted cold as always, nodding his head in reply, "Yes." Almost instantly, Ye Chong buried away the softness in his heart with his determination and coldness.

"Hehe, come come, let me introduce myself as well. My real name is Ye Luo. You can call me Lil' Luo, or Lil' Lil' Luo. They all call me that." Luo Shi grinned widely as he introduced himself, but he quickly asked in return, "What do your friends call you?"

"Ye," Ye Chong answered concisely.

"No way!" Ye Luo looked at Ye Chong oddly, and did not speak for a long moment. "What's with that unimaginative nickname? Don't you know that half the people in the Ye Family's have Ye as their nickname too?"

"I don't," Ye Chong answered without emotion.

"That's no good, that's no good at all, let's change it," Ye Luo shook his head vigorously like a tidal wave, and suggested, "How about Lil' Chong, or Lil' Lil' Chong's fine too ..."

"How did you recognize me?" Ye Chong cut him short. This was another question that had bothered him from the start.

"'Cause I'm smart," Ye Luo answered with a pleased expression, almost beginning to spill out his entire thought process. "No one expects you to enter the free space zone. They're probably still trying to guess where you would be hiding. Hehe, try and guess, how did I find you?"

Ye Luo looked at Ye Chong with mischievous eyes, just begging for Ye Chong to ask him.

Ye Chong stayed as he was like a wooden stump, and refused to budge.

Ye Luo waited for a good few minutes until he was convinced

that Ye Chong was not going to ask him, before he began, "Alright alright, I'll tell you. What a downer, like those emotionless guys back home, so boring. The thing that exposed you was the glider."

Ye Chong's eyes widened. He finally realized what the problem was.

"Han Yue told me that you appeared from the sky, riding some bird-like thing. I was curious then. In the middle of my journey, I also dropped by the place where you were attacked by the fangwolves, and found the glider. That's when I knew that you are an outsider like me. The locals wouldn't know things like these.

"Besides, you didn't respond much when you saw me. Hehe, you wouldn't know it, but here's the thing. The Three Aristocratic Families have some influence in the free space zone, but we can recognize each other almost instinctively. After all, we're outsiders here. We can usually tell if someone's from which aristocratic family. You, are obviously not from any of the Three. Later on, you revealed your excellent skills in alchemy. We knew early on that you were an alchemist, so I immediately thought of you.

"Even then, I wasn't sure. There are only three routes to enter the free space zone, and each of them is guarded by one of the Three Aristocratic Families. Security is tight, and it's virtually impossible for outsiders to enter. So the fact that you are here came as a shock to me too.

"But you exposed yourself just now. Hehe, I'm not much of a mech pilot myself, but not many people can top me in combat. Your moves earlier have a very faint influence of the Ye Family style. Haha, it's very faint, but you can't fool me. What do you think? I'm good, right? That was when I was certain that it's you."

Ye Luo looked openly pleased with himself.

Ye Chong was also impressed. Ye Luo may behave like a child, but he was a very detailed person.

"You're really good at combat! As expected of one of the Ye Family, to reach this level by self taught. You don't know how many of our brothers and sisters back home are just swooning over you. But you gotta be careful of Ye Yin. That man's just very close minded. When it comes to mechs, only about two or three in the family can match against him evenly. I'm way behind in that, but if it's combat, hehe, then he'd better not mess with me." Ye Luo seemed to be quite confident of his combat abilities.

"Ye Yin ..." Ye Chong said the name softly to himself. It was said that he was the number one elite of the Ye Family.

"When are you thinking of going home?" Ye Luo asked, "The Patriarch is going crazy just waiting for your return."

"I'm not," Ye Chong answered with steeled resolve.

"You're not? Why not? Don't you want to go home?" Ye Luo looked at Ye Chong curiously, then he seemed to realize the problem. "Maybe you like combat as much as me? Haha, that's wonderful, finally there's someone to accompany me. Hehe, you don't know how often they asked me to go home, but I ignored them every time. Those people just slip into their mechs every day. Here, though, is where combat is mainstream.

"I'm going to defeat all the combat experts in the free space zone before I go home!" Ye Luo announced meaningfully.

Ye Chong was quiet however, his eyes wandering. It was hard to figure out what he was thinking inside.

Just then, a few black spots appeared in the distance.

Ye Chong and Ye Luo looked up in unison, and exchanged looks. Ye Chong's was cold and calm, but Ye Luo's was hot and feverish.



## Chapter 385: Pursuit

Both of them quickly dived to the ground, hiding in the tall grass. It was difficult to notice them, even up close.

Dozens of people ran past them not too far away. From between the blades of grass, Ye Chong could see that their eyes were full of fear and dissatisfaction.

What a speedy retreat! Ye Chong and Ye Luo exchanged a look, and saw the surprise in each other. The child abductors had attacked fiercely in large numbers, and had the obvious advantage. However, they were now forced to escape in such a short amount of time.

"That's too fast," Ye Chong thought.

The child abductors were all running with all they had. Some of them fell down on the way, but no one gave them a second glance. Those who fell tried to get back up, their faces contorted horribly as their eyes told the story of their deep despair. They gritted their teeth and did not yell for help, their faces pale, possibly due to fatigue.

They knew what awaited them ahead, and knew that no one would stop for them. If it were them, they would never delay escaping because of another person.

Soon, everyone was gone, leaving behind the few people who fell down on the grassy plains.

The escaping group was now just visible as black spots in the distance.

Ye Chong and Ye Luo stood up.

"They sure lost quite fast! Han Family's elite squad is truly powerful. If it's combat, they're probably on par with our guys back at home. Aristocrats are aristocrats, I guess. Either they stay quiet, or they roar like thunder," Ye Luo mused.

The few injured child abductors in the grass saw Ye Chong and Ye Luo, and recognized them both immediately in fear.

Ye Chong nodded, agreeing with him.

Both of them ignored the injured child abductors and spoke to each other as though they were not there.

"Let's go after them," Ye Luo said, his face full of excitement.

"Why?" Ye Chong looked at Ye Luo, curious.

"Intel from the Family suggests that the Xi Feng Tribe might be behind the child abductors. The Family would like to confirm this. The power behind the child abductors has always been a mystery. Besides, I'm tired of seeing those sick b\*stards. Hehe, is this an opportunity or what?" Ye Luo rubbed his hands together with enthusiasm.

Ye Chong thought of Huang Baiyi.

A rumbling sound came from afar. The ground shook trembled slightly, and the child abductors all showed horrified expressions.

"I say, those guys will never let their enemies escape just like that, it's not their style at all. Now they're finally here. Hehe, let's get on the bandwagon," Ye Luo said with twinkling eyes as the cavalry beyond approached them.

The cavalry came like a tsunami. They consisted of only about 200 men, but sounded like an army of thousands. The uniform sound of hoofbeats created a huge pressure of subjugation and power.

Ye Chong and Ye Luo stood out like a sore thumbs in the grassy plains.

The leader gave a command and the entire cavalry shifted directions towards them.

The thunderous sound of hoofs beating closed in on the two of them with increasing pressure. The cavalry did not slow down.

The animals stepped heavily on the grass, bringing soil and broken blades of grass up with their hooves, marching out a deep trail through the plain.

What a powerful force!

Ye Luo stood in a dignified manner, his earlier easy demeanor gone without a trace. He was now back to the man that Ye Chong first came to know. Ye Chong stood silently, his expression unchanged. This was a magnificent spectacle, but for someone like him who had seen wonders in the space between galaxies, and fought against hundreds and thousands of mechs in outer space, this was only a small scale event.

Be it Ye Chong or Ye Luo, they maintained their standing positions, unperturbed.

The calvary closed in.

500 meters ... 400 meters ... 300 meters ...

The leader at the front of the army lifted his right hand smoothly.

The cavalry came to a complete abrupt halt. The entire cavalry stopped just 10 meters away from the two men. The motion was executed while maintaining their formation perfectly.

The thunderous sound of their advance stopped abruptly, and the grassy plain was now silent.

The soldiers sat on their canterelle rides without expression. Their aggressive rides were now docile as a lamb.

Han Yue was beside the leader.

Han Yue saw Ye Luo and smiled. "I see that Brother Luo is here. Thank you for your help back there." He saw clearly how Luo Shi had took on one of the enemy forces, so that their reinforcements could arrive in time.

Han Yue then introduced him to the lead rider, "This is the young

and competent fighter, Luo Shi. Gehong must have heard of him."

The man called Gehong was surprised. "Luo Shi! An elite of the Congregation, it's an honor!"

Ye Luo smiled gently and said, "You're too kind. And you are?" Seeing Ye Luo acting all courteous, Ye Chong found it hard to reconcile this image with the child-like Ye Lu he had seen just now. The transformation was too glaring, like switching characters entirely.

"I am Han Gehong!" His hoarse voice was low and uncomfortable to listen to. His cold profile made him seem difficult to approach, and the killing aura emanating from him was strong enough to keep Ye Chong and Ye Luo on their toes.

This was an unfamiliar name. Ye Luo looked to Han Yue, and the man explained, "Gehong is usually with the Tribe Leader, and rarely shows himself." Ye Luo seemed to accept the explanation, but Ye Chong could see the wariness in Ye Luo.

"This is?" The hoarse voice spoke again. Han Gehong looked towards Ye Chong, his cold eyes revealing a moment of surprise. Ye Chong looked like the odd man out, with his wooden spear in hand and a wooden box by his feet. When Han Gehong saw the blackened spearhead, his eyes widened and lit up with recognition.

Ye Chong remained silent.

Han Yue panicked. This was not a man they could afford to offend. He quickly whispered to Han Gehong, "He's the alchemist."

Han Gehong took another glance at Ye Chong.

Ye Chong's silence was almost unbearable. Han Yue quickly spoke up, "We're pursuing the escaping child abductors. What are your plans?"

Ye Luo turned serious and said, "Brother Han, you're too kind. With the kind of kinship between us, I refuse to just stand by and watch. Besides, the child abductors are notorious for their

absolutely deplorable actions. We will try to our best to assist. If you can provide us with two canterelles for the occasion, and we will return them after." Ye Luo made his request without feeling embarrassed at all.

Han Yue looked at Ye Chong curiously. He had anticipated Luo Shi's agreement in helping him, but Ye Chong came as a surprise. Aside that, from Luo Shi's behavior, it seemed that the two of them had forged a closer relationship. Luo Shi's use of the term "we" and the request for two canterelles had Han Yue planning ahead for all kinds of possible scenarios.

"Of course," Han Gehong easily agreed, his hoarse voice grating against the ear. "With two able men with us, we're more prepared against the enemy."

Two riders shared rides with their comrades, leaving two canterelles for them.

Ye Luo climbed onto one of the canterelles in one flowing motion.

"Excellent riding skills!" Han Gehong applauded.

Ye Chong looked at the canterelle before him. Now this was a problem. He had never ridden a canterelle. As the people in the Five Galaxies would say, he had no driving experience at all, much less a driving licence.

The canterelle was as large as a rhinoceros, with four strong legs and a short neck. Its entire body was covered with grayish black fur. Its two large eyes glowed with a kind of animalistic violence. Ye Chong could tell that the black horn on its forehead must be strong and hard. Secured on the canterelle's back was a black saddle.

From Ye Chong's point of view, this was probably the most primitive medium of transport ever.

Ye Chong climbed onto the canterelle without hesitation. The

canterelle was momentarily agitated, and Ye Chong felt slightly unstable. To the rest of the people watching, however, his upper body did not move at all.

Han Gehong's half lidded eyes seemed to lit up. He was now curious of this alchemist. From his movements, it was obvious that this was his first time riding a canterelle. However, he could also see that this alchemist had a very strong waist.

Han Gehong's eyes fell on the wooden spear in Ye Chong's hand again, feeling perplexed.

An alchemist? Was he really an alchemist?

However, there was no time to further consider it. Han Gehong waved his arm down and spoke in a low voice, "Advance!"

The entirely cavalry moved instantly. Ye Chong felt the canterelle beneath him rush ahead, and he nearly fell backwards. However, his strong waist supported and maintained his sitting position.

Not that it mattered, but his rigid riding made him look mightily ungraceful amongst the other riders.

"Relax, so long as you don't fall off, you're good. These canterelles are well trained, they'll follow the cavalry without needing you to direct them," Ye Luo shared his experience with Ye Chong from beside him.

The cavalry advanced with their canterelles, following the tracks of the child abductors.

## Chapter 386: Moon King

No one expected the pursuit to last for five days. The enemy's strength, inspired by desperation to survive, was astounding. While there were some escaping child abductors left behind along the way, there were still many who continued running tenuously. After so many days, even Ye Chong felt a sense of admiration for these child abductors.

The cavalry no longer looked down on the child abductors, and instead, showed respect for their determination.

Han Gehong did not order his cavalry to move faster, but continued their pursuit steadily from behind.

However, something unexpected came up.

Looking at the forest in front of him, Han Gehong could not help but knitted his thick, bushy brows tightly together. Everyone knew that the child abductors were good at hiding in the forest. They were all experts in combat in the forest.

This battle had nearly wiped out the entire force of child abductors on Dankwood planet. If any of them escaped, it would be troublesome. If they enter the forest to pursue, they might not find all the child abductors. On the other hand, these remaining child abductors would surely fight back viciously, given their desperation. The forest also provided them a huge advantage.

These days, he had chased after the child abductors at a steady pace, hoping to wear off the enemy's determination and avoid casualties on his side. He took great care of his subordinates, and would not want any of them to be harmed due to their pursuit. No one expected there to be a forest in this area.

Could this be fate?

"These few remaining ones will probably not cause any more great harm," he thought to himself.

After discussing with Han Yue, the two of them came to an agreement on their next move. There was still business to attend to in Emerald City, and they did not want to waste too much time here.

"Never expected to see a forest here. We've made a mistake this time. There is still some business we need to attend to in the city, we'll head back immediately," Han Yue said to Luo Shi and Ye Chong from his ride.

"Sigh, it is Heaven's will. Perhaps it's not their time yet, don't worry too much about it, Brother Han. We plan to head east from here, towards Abyss City. It's a shame that I cannot accompany you back to Emerald City, Brother Han!" Ye Luo's expression was one of regret.

"Of course not, Luo Shi. If we did not get the help from you both, the Han Family would probably have fallen. Your assistance is greatly appreciated. If there comes a time when you need help from our Family, just send the word over and we will do all we can!" Han Yue said this solemnly.

After a pause, he continued, "It's still some distance from here to Abyss. Take these two canterelles with you. That way, you would not be too burdened by your travels."

Ye Luo shook his head and declined Han Yue's generous offer. "These quality war canterelles are not easy to tame, and it'd be waste to use them for simple travelling. We appreciate Brother Han's offer, but we're planning to get there on foot, and enjoy the scenery along the way."

"If that is so, then I bid you farewell! Safe travels to you both!" Han Yue bowed to them both, and Han Gehong did the same.

Ye Luo returned the gesture. "Safe travels to you as well!" Ye Chong said nothing and simply bowed back to them.

Han Yue and Han Gehong, together with their cavalry, marched



into the distance.

"That Han Gehong is strong," Ye Luo looked in the direction of the cavalry where they had vanished and said.

"Yes, very strong," Ye Chong agreed.

Ye Luo looked on with yearning. "There are so many strong people in this world, too many to count. I've thought that at my level, I'm probably quite close to the limits of combat world. Later, when I arrived at the free space zone, I realized how wrong I was! There are so many strong people here, be it the famous, the nameless, the young, the old, the men, or the women ... There's so, so many of them! Ever since then I decided not to return. Do you know? My childhood dream is to become the best combat expert, and not a mech pilot.

"I'm going to stay here and search for the essence of combat!"

Ye Luo's young and determined voice echoed throughout the grassy plain.

Ye Chong looked at Ye Luo, and felt a sense of forlornness. Here was Ye Luo, so sure of his goal in life. What about himself? It seemed that he had never thought about it before.

Was his goal to survive? To find Mu and Shang? What about after that?

Ye Luo interrupted his thoughts. "Hehe, however, if I want to stay here, then I gotta help deal with the Family's business here, to earn more freedom. Come, let's go find those tenacious b\*stards!"

"You can find them?" Ye Chong asked Ye Luo. The child abductors knew the forest like the back of their hands. Ye Chong knew that he would not be able to find them himself. Could Ye Luo have some trick up his sleeves?

Ye Luo stared at Ye Chong as if the latter was an idiot for a long moment, and said, "Brother, do you not know that there is such a thing in this world called a mech?"

Its body was all jet black with a matte finish. Only the barbs at the joints glistened with warning. The mech was tall and slender, at a standard 12 meters tall. It did not look unwieldy at all. Be it the joints or its limbs, the mech was perfectly designed.

There were crescent blades at each of its wrists, and a parrying spear on the inside of each arm. A black shield that looked like a cogwheel hung on its back. Ye Chong could tell from its aerodynamic surface that it was a weapon that could be flung out. The sharp edges of the cogwheel design reminded Ye Chong of the strange star-shaped creatures he encountered in the valley.

Unlike the thick legs commonly found in mechs, this mech sported a pair of long, slender legs, like a woman's. The knees were covered with barbs, typical of Black Cove. However, the tips of the feet were fitted with crescent blades too. Ye Chong imagined what would happen when those legs do their kicks.

Besides, Ye Chong also found that the mech's alloy material was unlike any of the alloy he had seen used for Black Cove mechs.

"Not bad, right?" Ye Luo stood before his mech, smiling widely. "This now is top of its class. There are no more than 50 mechs of this level back at the Family. I suck at mech piloting, but well, my dad's the Patriarch, hehe, so I get to enjoy the perks." Ye Luo smiled like one of the extravagant sons from rich families.

Ye Chong did not seem to hear him. He was studying the mech, entranced.

Mechs from the Three Aristocratic Families were undoubtedly the best of the known universe. Xue Lai Clan's mechs were elegant; Ye Family's were minimalistic; Xi Feng Tribe's were inspired by nature. The Three Families had very different motives of design, and they stayed true to their own styles. The one common feature shared by their mechs was attention to detail.

In terms of manufacturing, every tiny detail was scrutinized, every one of them studied intensively through calculations and

repeated experimentations to produce the perfect design. This was something that Ye Chong realized as he got to know the mechs from the Three Aristocratic Families.

This mech in front of him was a perfect example.

The mech's proportion and measurements, positioning of installed parts, and even the streamlining designs of the leg curvatures were all perfect in Ye Chong's eyes! The concept of minimalism was expressed perfectly in this mech's design. Aside from the parrying spear and cogwheel shield on its back, the mech had no other weapons. However, in a way, every part of the mech was a weapon. Some may find the mech too simple, but for someone trained in the eye like Ye Chong, every detail of the mech was the result of its designer's labor and wisdom. Every detail contributed to a slight improvement in the mech's performance, but as the improvements were accumulated, the end result could be staggering.

Ye Chong was moved by the mech's design. Mu and Shang's information archive had nothing on this mech model.

This mech could probably represent the peak of Black Cove's mechs, and reminded Ye Chong of Mu and Shang. Overall, this mech was still slightly inferior to Mu and Shang, it was still the mech closest to Mu/Shang's level that he had ever seen, despite its different design concept compared to his friend.

Standing before this mech, Ye Chong realized that his knowledge in mech design was truly lacking.

Ye Luo was entirely pleased to see Ye Chong's entranced look.

"What do you think? About this mech," Ye Luo asked on purpose.

"Wonderful! Absolutely wonderful! No, it's perfect!" Ye Chong muttered to himself, answering out of reflex. He probably was not too self aware at the moment.

"You like it?" Ye Luo asked with a wide grin.

"Of course," Ye Chong replied in all earnestness. He thought Ye Luo's question strange. After all, he could not imagine anyone saying that they did not like this mech!

"Then consider it a gift to you." Ye Chong snapped his head to look at Ye Luo upon the latter's calm offer.

"What? You don't want it?" Ye Luo wagged his eyebrows mischievously.

"Why?" Ye Chong asked, straight to the point.

Ye Luo shrugged and said matter-of-factly, "I'm not interested in mechs, at all. Hehe, don't you see how new it looks? It's actually been used a grand total of three times, and I've used it only as a scanner every time. You know, its scanning system is actually not bad." Ye Luo commented on his mech's capabilities like it did not matter to him.

Ye Chong felt for the first time an impulse to yell at someone! Using a mech like this as a scanning device was just a pure waste of heavenly resources. There was no way around it!

"That's why, I'm giving it to you. After all, we're family," Ye Luo said this like he was gifting Ye Chong a hand towel, "It's waste for me anyway, and you're skilled enough to pilot this mech.

"That's why, it's a gift to you. Remember, it's name is Moon King."

## Chapter 387: Target

Changing the owner of a mech was troublesome business, but Ye Chong did not mind it at all. Ye Luo was a little impatient, however, mumbling complaints to himself as he followed the procedure, step by step. When it was finally done, Ye Luo heaved a sigh of relief, as if he had just rid himself of a terrible burden. Moon King required a blood sample for authentication, and this reminded Ye Chong of Mu and Shang. He remembered clearly that Mu and Shang was also activated by blood.

Ye Luo was flabbergasted by Ye Chong's confusion at this point. "What? Now look here! This is a first class mech, a Mandate class mech! What? You've never heard of it? Mandate is the name of the class for this kind of mech. I may not use this mech often, but it is definitely a world class mech! Humph, this machine here can only be used by true descendants of the Family. Without blood authentication, we might lose it to outsiders! Come on, brother, this is common knowledge!"

If that was the case, then Mu and Shang ... Ye Chong remembered the moment Mu and Shang was activated clearly.

When Ye Chong entered Moon King's pilot cabin, he was astounded by the luxurious installations and equipment inside!

The engine was the heart of a mech, and the photon processor the mech's brain. Ye Chong had heard of this metaphor a long time ago. Moon King's photon processor model was unfamiliar to Ye Chong.

Nonetheless, it was astonishingly quick in its computations, and never ceased to work. Even right now, it was continually scanning its surroundings and updating its statistics. If Ye Chong was not aware of Mu/Shang's photon processor, he might have believed that this was the most advanced photon processor in the universe.

Of course, that was a purely physical assessment. Compared to

Mu/Shang, they were at very different levels. Mu and Shang had a self-aware PSI, with a mind of its own. This photon processor, however, was only a dead object, albeit with massive computational power!

The sleek, crystalline texture of the control console was one of the most beautiful that Ye Chong had ever seen. The console was a pure jet black with a network of red lines criss-crossing on top, dividing the black universe that was the console into multiple segments. The main controls had a matte finish, giving it an excellent feel to the touch.

The flexible hydraulic suspension system felt like a water cushion all around him.

Ye Chong initiated the control console, activated the photon processor, and began to initialize Moon King.

He was once again in the familiar world of mechs. Memories of his earlier training and battles came back to him. After a long time away from mechs, Ye Chong felt excitement boiling in his veins.

It had been too long since he last felt this excitement!

Being a mech pilot ...

Ye Chong recalled the time when he was younger, piloting Winnie. Back then, his dream was to find a few good mech parts from the trash mountains. Later, when he met Mu, his life changed drastically.

How many mechs had he piloted since then? Ye Chong could not remember himself. He had flown mechs of various levels, and even interesting mechs such as Han Jia and Guardian. These were fortunes that he did not even dare to wish for when he was younger.

He had learned how to build mechs, and even designed full-skeleton mechs. No longer were mechs unfamiliar to him. It was hard to find things that could excite him the way when he was

younger. He had learned combat, alchemy, and many, many more.

However, what was the one thing that he desired the most?

Ye Chong asked quietly to himself.

His one wish had always been very simple! Ye Chong caressed the smooth console. He removed himself from his fascination in Moon King's beauty and extravagance. The puzzlement and indecision in his eyes vanished, replaced by a clear vision.

A mech pilot! The desire to excel as a mech pilot had always been an integral part of him!

He must survive and become stronger!

He must become the strongest mech pilot, a mech pilot worthy of piloting Mu and Shang!

Ye Luo never would have guessed that gifting Moon King to Ye Chong would bring about such a huge impact on the latter.

Ye Chong explored Moon King's controls systematically. He must now familiarize himself with Moon King's various peculiarities. Of course, this was not enough. For an advanced level mech like this, Ye Chong would need some time to unleash its full potential. Every tiny detail of the mech was the result of careful deliberation, and this meant that the pilot must be more skilful in controlling the mech.

Ye Chong was no longer in his earlier moment of amazement. He was now just a mech pilot, studying his mech calmly.

Soon, he grasped the basic controls of the mech. Moon King's controls were designed quite well, and he did not have to do much to understand the system. Now, as long as he did not encounter any particularly strong opponents, he should be able to take care of himself just fine.

With a mech, it would be much easier for him to look for Rui Bing and the rest of his group.

However, now was not the time to think about that problem. On the holographic screen, a few of the escaping child abductors were displayed. Moon King's scanning system was powerful, unaffected by the complicated terrain of the forest. Both scanning range and accuracy were not significantly impaired.

Moon King signalled to Ye Luo in a fluid motion, a demonstration of Ye Chong's mastery in controlling the mech.

The mech lifted its right arm, slightly bent, with all the fingers curling inwards into a fist except for one that pointed towards a particular direction in the forest. The two crescent blades by the wrist were like crescent moons hanging in the sky.

Ye Luo grinned.

Huang Zheng was dealing with the final stages of the task handover. The higher-ups had instructed for him to leave the place. The Tribe will send someone else to take over matters in the free space zone.

The truth was, he never liked the free space zone, and he did not like his job too. However, with orders that came directly from Tribe Leader, he simply had no choice. Besides, he knew what the significance of this place to the Xi Feng Tribe. Hence, despite feeling more than unhappy with his current job, he still went about his duties diligently.

Now, someone was finally here to take over him.

As a combatant inclined for battle, he was not interested at all in administrative duties. If he was not sent here, perhaps he would have earned the right to pilot a Phoenix class mech by now. He had long yearned to pilot a Phoenix class mech, but the requirements for their pilots were strict. His current abilities were not enough to satisfy those requirements.

However, rumor had it that the colleague who was sent here to replace him had just only been awarded a Phoenix class mech. How



wonderful it must be for that person!

As he looked at the people bustling around busily around him, he could not help but feel repulsed. He had always maintained his view regarding the cooperation between the Tribe and the Abductors. While the Abductors were not directly dealing with him, he still felt disgusted by those people.

Now, at last, he could leave this wretched place! The thought was placating for Huang Zheng.

There were not many people here today, so he knew that they were up to something big. Almost all of their men were deployed. He did not care to ask them about it, however. After all, what else could they be up to but trouble?

He looked down at all of them with disdain.

Just then, a few heavily injured men stumbled into the base. Everyone stared at them in surprise, momentarily halting their tasks.

Looking at them, Huang Zheng had an ill premonition.

A huge, functioning base of operations appeared on Moon King's photon processor. Iris, Moon King's scanning system, performed splendidly once again. The structure and interior details of the base were all displayed on the photon processor. Even the obscured corridors in the base were captured by Iris.

When Huang Zheng saw a mech approaching, he knew something had gone terribly wrong!

When he saw the mech clearly, his face went pale!

"No one gets away!" Ye Luo's loud voice from afar made Huang Zheng panic even further.

The jet black Moon King floated silently in midair, its 12-meter bulk radiating the Ye Family's unique sense of menace of beauty. Everyone was shocked to the core.

Huang Zheng looked around him, and quickly retreated to the base amidst the chaos.

He rushed to his room, bursting through the door, and opened all his drawers. Huang Zheng looked at the information inside them, his eyes shining meaningfully.

He drew in a deep breath and fed all the information in the drawers into the shredder beside his desk.

Crunch crunch crunch! When all the information was reduced to micrometer dust, he finally exhaled in relief.

Now that he was done, he drew up straight, fully alert.

What he had to do next was to fight for his own survival!

He did not know the name of the mech outside, but he could tell that it was one of the Ye Family's Mandate class mechs. As for how a Phoenix class mech would fare against a mech of equivalent class in the Ye Family, no one knew.

Mandate, Phoenix and Hexalice were not names of specific mechs, but mech classes. They refer to the mech class for each of the Three Aristocratic Families, respectively, that was just below the top class mechs. Mechs of these classes were rare, and their pilots were rigorously selected.

Perhaps he could feel out the true power of these legendary Mandate class mechs!

Huang Zheng's eyes burned with eagerness for battle.

# Chapter 388: First Battle

BEEP! BEEP! BEEP!

Ye Chong nearly jumped off from his seat. What was that? There seemed to be an alarm coming from Moon King. Had something been detected?

It was a shocker when he took a cautious look at the screen.

Was that a mech? There's mech here?

A green mech had flown out of the base.

The Xi Feng tribe... It must be. Thought Ye Chong upon recognizing it at first glance, well since typical Xi Feng was typical, that their mechs were of the same typical design portraying the beauty of Mother Nature itself. The green mech that just flew out for example, took the appearance of a bird with that pair of dark green wings of its. Such an eye-catcher they were.

And this mech was not an ordinary one. The level was different. Reviewed Ye Chong in his mind. Based on his encounters with the Xi Feng members, only those great ones would be the rightful owners of those great wings.

The dark green wings spread out neatly like films of leaves which were metallic foils in actuality. A green metal was a rare sight in the industry when all those grayish and darkish minerals filled the boundless sky. A chivalrous kind of elegance could be felt from the mech's pale green main body.

It was pretty surprising to encounter a mech at a place like this, especially a mech with such standard.

"It's the Phoenix!" exclaimed Ye Luo.

Ye Chong would love Ye Luo to brief him on this particular strange machine called "The Phoenix" but the green mech was not patient enough to wait apparently. The Phoenix rushed towards them after spreading its wings fully, like an eagle to its raid,

gracefully yet forcibly.

The air was giving off piercing cries as the metallic wings sliced their ways forward.

Such speed! Ye Chong was shocked. As expected from an advanced mech of the great Xi Feng! Ye Chong could not help but to compliment in his head.

Well, of course, Ye Chong would face such foe with the same courtesy!

Drawn the parrying spears, Moon King made a slight swing and shifted itself from course of The Phoenix.

The foe had seemingly predicted Ye Chong's move as it made an aerial ace, a fancy turn back towards Ye Chong, while three red beams welcomed Ye Chong from the metallic wings.

The beams zapped through the body of Moon King. That was a close shave.

Ye Chong wiped his cold sweat, as realizing how his once-nightmare had returned, the impeccable attacks haunting him from the future! Exclusive to the Xi Feng clan, who held the ability to foresee his moves!

It had been quite some time since Ye Chong last held the steering, he could certainly feel the numb strangeness convincing him the lack of awareness in battle. The Moon King would have been shot dead if the beams came from a mech of the Xue Lai Clan, since their mechs were known for the horrendously accurate ranged attacks.

Dang! He got to retrieve that battle sense in the briefest time, or this would be the last chapter of a supreme soldier! But the strangeness was really distracting, it was slowing him down especially when Moon King was also something new to his hands. Was he fighting a losing battle?

The foe had powerful ability to read his cards while countering

all of them the whole time. The red beams always came at a frightening timing, like for few times Ye Chong was almost a goner as he could no longer cope with the attacks.

Ye Chong only managed to make drastic turns from time to time, that it felt like a training back in his NR Training days. No doubt, it was a painful experience to make sure he lost that unhelpful dizziness while making him highly agile in battle. The training course designed by Mu consisted of an astronomical amount of turn practices daily.

Ye Chong was investing all his strength, in making turns.

Was he at the training center again? He felt so because he was forced to perform all techniques he knew. He did a few sets of Condensed Multiple Turnings, one Thomas's Spin, then few U-shaped Splits... what else? What else? His brain ran through the entire skill list, as he already made Moon King withdraw the parrying spears which seemed like a pure burden by then.

The foe raided Ye Chong every few second like an aggressive serpent in the dark. One moment Ye Chong let down his guard, a beam would come at him and he would be a no-more.

Meanwhile, Huang Zheng looked at this mech which was making insane amount of turns like a chihuahua on fire, confused, very confused.

The heck he's doing? And Huang Zheng thought he had seen enough of the battlefield to perceive the situation. The scene was beyond his comprehension that his eyes just enlarged themselves.

Ye Luo lifted his head, staring at the dancing Moon King with an opened mouth. On the ground he stood, no word was heard other than the soft whimper coming from his mouth as the corners twitched.

That... that is... one strong guy...? I s-supposed?

Ye Luo never fancied the pilots, however he had undergone

similar training when he was much younger. Making turns was the bread and butter of a close-combat model, while also being the hardest to master. Certainly to cope with the torturing experience of drastic turns, a pressure buffering system was already created to aid the pilots, however every turn would pack a different punch at the pilot's body and those punches would only be magnified over time, like a combo stack.

Multiple turns at the quickest would be extremely wearing to one's physique. So the examination on this category always had a considerably high rating of difficulty, and truly, only the superior pilots could execute it well.

But hey, how many turns had this fella made? Ye Luo could feel the insanity just from counting the turns, and Moon King did not seem to be stopping anytime soon.

At this point the rating of difficulty would only go higher as more drastic turns consecutively performed. Let's see... 10 stars? 12? 15? Do we see ratings this high back in our family?

Huang Zheng's head was pounding as much as Ye Luo, as cold sweat dripped his forehead. The control panel was completely wet. It would have been a chaos of short-circuit if it was not the exceptional water resistance of the technological amazement.

He was at the edge of losing himself. He recognized the strength of the foe, as his heart sank and rose as quickly as that dark-glowing mech.

The flaming will had extinguished. The passionate heart ran cold.

The turns the foe made were in true continuation. Every set consisted of moves perfectly chained. The foe had become unpredictable, even when inspected with the Xi Feng's exclusive ability.

That means! Huang Zheng realized something.

The speed of the foe changing had surpassed the limit of his foresight!

Who is this pilot? When did the Ye family have such talent?

Ye Yin? Was that Ye Yin the whole time?

That name rang horror in his head.

It must be Ye Yin! Only the topmost pilot of the family could perform such terrifying moves!

So I finally met Ye Yin...

Muttered Huang Zheng, being unsure whether it was excitement or fear that seized his heart. It was good news that he had the opportunity to fight against a legendary figure but it was also bad news that he also had the likely opportunity to survive.

Ye Chong, being unaware of the actuality, was risking his life to make more moves in the air. His greatest record had been set, which consisted of a 15-minute non-stop rapid multiple turns and his body did not feel like stopping.

Mu had once told him that every advanced move was composed of multiple basic moves. As long as one was able to master the basic moves, the advanced move would be cake walk.

That was easy to say. It was a highly investing process to put more points into the basic skills. Ye Chong only could achieve such standard after countless harsh, mundane trainings. Nothing cake-walk at all.

Bear in mind that Ye Chong was the one who smacked an advanced mech with a Raven, merely because of a faster execution of basic moves.

One could see the movements of Moon King maturing over time at close observation. The operation had been streamlined and the direction improved.

Ye Chong was regaining the familiarity quite quickly. He could

feel confidence surging in him again as he finally had the leisure to take a glance at the foe, who had been... hovering... there...?

Well, he was not the hesitant kind like Huang Zheng.

The Moon King rolled into a ball out of sudden. It was a strange sight to see a complete-metallic mech to curve into a perfect ball...

The Gear Shield of its had fallen into its grip.

Moon King then bloomed like a monstrous abyss as the gears guided the shield, spinning towards the foe maniacally in blueish sparks.

The blue lining travelled like a shooting star.

Boom!

Huang Zheng did not expect the attack after being confused by the extreme turns. He nearly threw his handle just to make a clumsy dodge but it was too late!

The shield had struck at left chest of the mech, few centimeters away from the actual cabin. Sparks were bouncing around mischievously like a child.

ALERT! ALERT! CRITICAL DAMAGE! ALL SYSTEM DOWN.

Under the alarms that had gone haywire, the pale face of Huang Zheng froze.

A dark shadow was enlarging quickly in his shaking pupils.

The shield lifted itself back into the air. Moon King was coming, with its parrying spear.

The afterimages had returned, as the fair hands of our hero waved upon the control panel.

The parrying spears had pierced the open wound soon as the shield returned to the back of Moon King.

Moon King treaded the chest of the foe with grace, with the knees slightly bowed. One tramp and momentum sent both away.



Boom.

An unofficial long kiss Huang Zheng good-bye.

The mech had transformed into a fireball.

"God dammit! Can't you just make your dramatic tramp AFTER you identified a proper direction to do so!?" Ye Luo cursed as one piece of the fallen mech almost smashed him. He ran back and forth as being showered by falling armors, "This is madness!"

The Moon King, the silent killer, was a gorgeous angel with the arms crossed at its chest. The blades at the wrists glossed in the air, while the soulless mechanical eyes looked at the world.

It felt like judgement when it came.

An apocalypse when it left.

## Chapter 389: The Search

It was a close match for Ye Chong, as it felt like it had been centuries since he last battled on a mech. Ye Chong was considered fortunate that Huang Zheng's performance dropped as drastically as he fell with that silly mistake of his. Technically piloting Moon King as a mere transportation was not an issue, still that did not mean that Ye Chong would ace combating on a test drive.

Other than the sheer luck, it was the endless loop of daily basic training that saved him. If it was not because of these sets of movement techniques seamlessly connected, he would not be able to reveal that opening by the foe. If he did not manage to unearth that opening, well, it would have been a different tale, who knows...

Ye Luo was giving off a stare as if he was looking at a monster when Ye Chong got off the cabin. Our hero had grown up being given a strange stare at, so he took it pretty well.

"Don't judge a pilot by the badges. I must admit that is very true. You are a born pilot. It turned to be not an entire blasphemy for Moon King to be in your hand. It is an honor in fact."

And there Ye Chong was, making colossal eye-roll in the dark.

OOH. "Blasphemy" huh? What happened to whichever that "blasphemy" when you used Moon King as a giant walking detector?

Well of course, the salty line rang only inside Ye Chongs mind, since this very pretentious being was still the one who gifted him the Moon King. It would be a bad timing to hurl saltiness at the moment.

"So, you call this mech 'The Phoenix'?" asked Ye Chong.

"Not exactly. People don't call this model 'The Phoenix', rather it is a name for one rank of mechs in the Xi Feng tribe. Generally, 'The Phoenix' is pretty much on top of all units in the Xi Feng tribe,

with only 'The Phoenix Lord' above. To be frank, 'The Phoenix' was one rank lower than Moon King but it is remarkable for you to master the battle control of the mech so quickly. Yes it is!" Ye Luo complimented.

"What exactly is its battle control?" asked Ye Chong.

"Beats me. Where should I get that answer for you? Do I look like Dr. What?" Ye Luo responded irresponsibly. That was when Ye Chong realized the fact that this ex-owner of Moon King had only piloted his baby no more than thrice. If that was the case, Ye Chong did sound silly for his question.

"So is this the strongest mech of the Ye family?" Ye Chong asked as he thought about the rank system mentioned by Ye Luo. So, above the Phoenix, there was only the Phoenix Lord and the Phoenix shared a similar standard with the Moon King, judging from these premises, the Moon King should be quite superior in the family.

"Nope," Ye Luo shook his head in disagreement. "Only Brahmara, Huang Jiming and Ye Yin own the one true, greatest mech in the entire galaxy. Well, if you ask me which one is slightly better, I can't tell. I don't know, nobody knows, the great trio had never fought against each other before, although we all strongly believe that all three of them are at the same level. They are extremely low-profiled when it comes to the name of their models. Ye Yin seems to know the names but I don't really care. Never ask particularly."

He carried on, "The three aristocrats had been leading the world in mech development, as the generation of their mechs lapsed as quick as the sunrises and sunsets, even supreme models like this would be replaced every 20 years or so, longer than the average mechs below still." He looked above and pondered.

"Hehehe!" He sneered and elaborated upon Ye Chong's curious eyes, "20 years ago, it has twenty good old years. It was the time

when the finest mech of each family was notoriously loud in the fields, unlike the generation who never hit the bright outside today. Well, those pilots of the finest craft did not seem to have a good ending anyway. Back to my story, during that decade, somehow the top player of Xue Lai clan and our family just vanished one day. Don't ask me the hows and whys, we too have not arrived at a satisfying theory on this. The top player of Xi Feng tribe though, had a tragic death at the free space zone. Well, it is more like a comical death to me if you ask. The person just got a fine slice-through before he could even deploy his mech. It was a mentalist who did this, I heard, to be honest I never expected a mentalist of such capability exists in this world. Only the core members of the three aristocrats knew the news while the world outside remained confusingly oblivious of it as they saw the top players of the three families just vaporized without sight. You know it was a big news when it flooded the headlines of every network back then." Said Ye Luo teasingly.

Somehow... Ye Chong somehow felt he knew who that mentalist was. The story reminded him of Huang Baiyi. Ye Chong wondered if Huang Baiyi was that legendary mentalist who knocked out the top player of Xi Feng in one turn.

"So what would happen to these men?" Ye Chong asked as he pointed at the men trembling like little animals. Certainly they could never release these men since that would expose two of them as trespassers here.

"I don't know." Ye Luo shrugged and said, "Knock them out for the moment I guess?" And both of them leaped and slammed the men.

"HAH! Look what I've found!" Ye Luo said as he brandished the communicator in his hand proudly. "Gimme a sec." And he dialed to make reports to the authority.

"Okay, we'll let them do the remaining." Another irresponsible willful demonstration from Ye Luo as he tossed the communicator

to one corner.

"The Xi Feng tribe does have something to do with the Abductor. Probably those newbies in their base are poor little kids being abducted from the free space zone. Jeez, talk about hypocrites. I seriously once thought those of Xi Feng tribe are the good guys." Stated Ye Luo disdainfully.

Well... Ye Chong was silent. He knew the odd relationship between those two like centuries ago, but he did not intend to spit everything since it would involve Huang Baiyi.

They carried on searching in the base. Even though Huang Zheng had wiped out all the main data stored at the processor, there remained lots more things waiting to be wiped out. From this one could see how the authority of Xi Feng tribe was still sane since the supports given to the Abductor were rather limited in the end, as overpowered technologies that could wreck the entire space zone like the mechs were not seen here.

"Get going. We are leaving and we must be fast, can't be waiting for the adults to get home. They would drag me all the way back into this prison again. Man, I can't. I can't," Ye Luo said intensively.

The request was not something against Ye Chong's will, so no doubt he would accept it. To begin with, he was not related to this place anyway.

And they left.

"Well where are you going next, pal?" Ye Luo asked as he rubbed his nose.

"Here." Ye Chong took out a map he got from Han Yue, with his finger positioned at the area labelled "Wang Family Village". Yup, he would be looking for Rui Bing, he would want a reunion right away. Rui Bing was his pal, his mate, his companion. He could not care less if the others survived, but towards Rui Bing, he could not

show complete negligence.

"Wait, this far?" Ye Luo was shocked. Based on the location, it did look insanely distant. He estimated the distance on paper with his hands, then magnified the figure in proportions, he thought of their speed and the time it would need. "Okay," he said as he scratched his chin and got an answer, "It would take about a month and a half if we walk fast enough."

"Uhh, you do know we have a mech, do you?"

"Oh..."

That one line from Ye Chong rang coldly, smashing the tensed expression of Ye Luo.

"Right."

Absolutely, the mech was impeccably rapid. A travel that was about a month and a half by foot only lasted less than two hours by mech.

However...

"Ugh..." Ye Luo's face was pale, as he collapsed on the ground with his insides rumbling, soon he began discharging his soul and he felt like it would only be a matter of time till his bile fell out along.

Ye Chong stood by innocently.

"Remind me..." He gasped, "T-that... that I am not taking a ride from you... a...again!" Ye Luo tried standing up, and he fell. Another round of puking.

It was a nightmare for a condensed ride.

It was more than a nightmare when the cabin could not fit two persons naturally and Ye Luo could only travel in Moon King's grip. That was surely some first-class seat on a fancy flight. The Moon King did not travel fast, the incoming gales rubbed on Ye Luo's face, those were not a problem Ye Luo thought, as he actually

found the experience expressing.

Well, at first he thought so.

Ye Chong felt it would be too dull and incompetent to just fly in the air. His sense of incompetency only intensified after that close fight he had which convinced his unfamiliarity with the mech. So he would not want to waste any chance of practicing on the Moon King.

And so, in the dark, when the gorgeous moon hung over the nightfall, the Moon King attempted multiple extreme moves in the air, from the moment it launched till it landed somewhere near Wang Family Village.

Ye Luo's safe flight then transformed into the most chaotic rollercoaster ride in the history of humankind as he finally understood how his laundry felt when he cleaned them. There were tumbles, then sharp turns, insane lifts and torturing falls. Sudden accelerations and random jerks were common in this ride. The worst part was... Ye Chong seemed to be so indulged in the session that he forgot Ye Luo was in his grip.

"Stop!"

"NOOOOOO! I SAID STOP!" Ye Luo screamed helplessly.

Ye Luo, being part of the Ye family, was strong by nature. A saving grace it was. Still it felt half of his soul had dropped somewhere on their way when they had finally landed. There was never a time when he would appreciate the ground so much.

Ye Luo's spiteful stare had triggered the motherly sympathy in Ye Chong, as he comforted, "It always hurts on your first time at the back. I'll try a different position when you ride on me next time. Don't worry."

Ye Luo who was standing on his waists suddenly crashed to the ground again. The puking continued.

It took about 30 minutes till Ye Luo got a hold of himself.

His face looked drained, his legs were shaking.

Ye Chong looked fine, but he was pretty alarmed by then. This was because they had treaded the territory of the Wangs. He must not be recognized or he would be done for.

Well he took a different camouflage this time, hopefully it would help. "Hmm..." On second thought...

Ye Chong took out a bottle of camouflage formula and passed it to Ye Luo.

"What's this?"

"Something to change your look."

"OH?" Ye Luo's eyes lustered out of the blue as he proactively massaged the solution on his face.

At this point, Ye Chong was confident enough to say that Rui Bing must have gotten into something.

The detection system of Moon King was strong that they found the sea where he parked Cornerstone. But somehow, he failed to connect to the communicator inside his steed under the sea.

Did something really happen to them?



## Chapter 390: Everyone's On The Move!

In the dark, Ye Chong looked at the village from above, looking for that figure he recognized, that had been imprinted in his mind. The capability of Iris had once again been demonstrated to Ye Chong as search performed. He had detected all sorts of things, the mobile and the immobile yet Rui Bing was not there. He got to admit that the three aristocrats were quite something for they were able to reproduce such master craft in mass. He knew Moon King was the standard model used by the family and a standard model could never represent a family's potency, yet Moon King remained as a spectacular technological amazement to Ye Chong, be it the design of the main body, the little details on all parts, the liquid pressure buffering system.

Moon King was the finest craft he could ever imagine.

And that was only the standard model for the slight rookie. Imagine the topmost craft of Ye family.

Ye Chong was intrigued, very intrigued.

"Okay, be honest, tell me who are you looking for." Ye Luo could hold it no longer. It felt like a galactic myth to see a desperate search performed by such an indifferent man who would not give a damn even to a meteorite.

"Companion." The keyword popped up in his mind after the input.

"I see." It all made sense to Ye Luo by then. Still... it felt off? "So... A boy or a girl?" He decided to give his hypothesis a try.

"A girl," replied Ye Chong briefly.

"OOOOOH!" Everything had made sense! Ye Luo gleefully responded, "And I was wondering why the desperation, so it's a woman after all. Tsk, tsk, no wonder you were in such a hurry. Is she your wife?"

"Wife?" Ye Chong was unaware of such term, "You mean... life partner?"

"Yes, yes, yes. You caught on quick!" Ye Luo's expression was mischievous.

"According to the information on the table, statistically, a likelihood of 50%," stated Ye Chong, the statistic seemed about just right.

Ye Luo was tittering. That was probably his first time seeing a man giving such an odd reply in such a serious tone. But as too strange this man was, he eventually exploded into pure chuckles.

And there Ye Chong was, confused again.

"Was there something wrong?"

"Uh, n-nope. Hahahaha... nope. Really! Nothing wrong at all! Tssshh Tshh..." Ye Luo responded with an expression indistinguishable of whether laughing or crying.

"Hah..." It took quite some time for Ye Luo to calm down, still one could see the corner of his lips twitching sometimes.

"That explains a lot. I finally knew the reason you refused to get back to you family. Sigh, the likelihood would surely fall to 1% and below if you ever reunited with our family." Ye Luo's face tightened, as remembered something.

"Why?"

"Don't you know? All descendants of the family are forbidden to mate with the outsiders." Ye Luo sounded bitter as he spoke.

"Nope. Can't understand at all," replied Ye Chong promptly.

"Alright..." Ye Luo patiently explained, "It was not only a thing in our family. It's the same for all three aristocrats. I am not sure about the perks of the other two bloodlines but they do have the same mating rule as ours. Only member with member of the same family, just to make sure our bloodline remains pure, which is why

our family has always been extremely authoritarian on our marriages. Sigh... including me." Ye Luo looked sad as he spoke, "No freedom... no liberty at all. I am the son of the head of the family yet I can't even choose my own wife. Oh, by the way, hehehe, for your information, I have a wife, only in name though. I can't really remember when we last met, but it felt like two years ago... she has her own life and I have mine. And I'm not going home to lose my life." He looked persistent, "Well, if you ever went back home you're gonna be at home for good." Shrugged Ye Luo, his eyes were surrendering to the reality, although with slight disgust.

"It's my life, as determined by my own fate. And I decide my own fate." Ye Chong sounded intensely tenacious in that faint line of his.

Ye Luo was showing admiration in his eyes, but something appeared in his mind, he frowned, "You know, we were very bewildered when you first showed up. We really wondered who your parents were, well, since you really do have the absolute bloodline of our family so your parents must be inside the house, yet we could not find any relevant record on you."

Ye Chong was silent.

"Meh, that aside, let's do something more fun. Say... we get down and grab a few guys since who knows, maybe they know where your wife is. We could ask them a few questions, kindly." Suggested Ye Luo, diabolically.

... (Meanwhile at the other place) ...

Feng Su gave her dimensional keystone the last few caress before handing it over to the chief with a heavy heart. The Wings of Nirvana... the mech who had been through the thick and thin with her. It might not be the top-ranked model in the Xi Feng tribe but it was a highly regarded model in the Sanctuary.

It was already an unfortunate beginning when she was suddenly

knocked out by that white-garbed woman. Thanks to her stunning spell, Feng Su had stayed nicely on the ground for quite some time after that. The only joy was, also because of that stunning spell, she managed to make a breakthrough in her mentality as she woke up much earlier than Rui Bing expected.

It took almost forever for Feng Su to find the Wings of Nirvana then, that it felt like a miracle when she found that revealing wings under the river.

But maybe, it was god's mercy of giving her a chance to bid a proper farewell to her old Wings. It was probably the time for the old Wings to go for real. Feng Su was feeling a lot as she stared upon this new mech - the Phoenix Lord. Well it was the mech rank she would see in her dream every night but unexpectedly it felt odd when she really looked at it with the correspondent keystone in her grip, as she realized how she missed her old Wings.

Nevertheless, regulation existed for a reason and the tribe demanded her an immediate upgrade, so she took it obediently. This new piece of mech, her new Wings, would need a name, that would set as monument reminding Feng Su that old friend of hers, and that would be... "Wings of Memorial." Whispered she as she got into the cabin quickly.

She had been assigned to the free space zone to take over Huang Zheng's duties. The authority presumed Huang Zheng's incapability in the administration while recognizing Feng Su's vision and this being the perfect opportunity to train her. So there she was, departing, as the chosen one of the tribe.

Beep! Beep!

The communicator rang, she glanced at the incoming code. She shuddered and picked up immediately, "Yes?"

"Lord Feng Su, please head to the chief's room right away. You have 15 minutes." The voice was cold.

Chief's room? Chief?

Does that mean...

"Ah!" She tried to sound calm but her speculation seized her sanity.

"It has been confirmed." The chief was grim as he spoke, "Huang Zheng is dead. Our relationship with the Abductor has been exposed to a certain degree. Fortunately Huang Zheng had erased all data at the base, I would call that a saving grace, maybe we have not been exposed beyond help. You would be taking care of these right after you got there. Cease all ongoing operations with the Abductor for the moment. Do you understand?"

"Yes, chief," replied Feng Su.

The old chief nodded happily, "Your vision had always been great. You also performed exceptionally in the Sanctuary, keep up the good work and hopefully you would not let us down."

"Yes, chief!"

... (Meanwhile at the other corner of the galaxy)...

"You seemed to have mastered the method. With this, your mathematical capability should be about my standard now. And you still have more rooms for expansion. You are far more talented than Ye. Nonetheless, you have a long way to go if you want to be a professional Maverick." Stated Mu/Shang flatly at Little Rock.

"Yes, I know," nodded Little Rock expressionlessly, "Regarding that, when would I get the information from you?"

"About 5 days later. I would need some time to prepare." Mu/Shang gave an estimation after a moment of calculation.

"Alright." And Little Rock zipped his mouth and turned back to the processor.

Zhu Ling put her practice on hold and gave a glance at Little Rock, who then returned a smile at her.

"Ahahahahahahahahaha!" That was when Lian Yue's insanity roared throughout the ship, "Brilliant! Brilliant! Brilliant! I got it!" Lian Yue exited the lab and waddled to Zhu Ling, grabbed her silky hand, muttered, "Ling my girl, look at this! I did it! I had finally completed the blueprint of this engine's modification! See what a genius I am, praise me..." His two hands were caressing the fair hand of hers, endearingly.

Towards such act, Zhu Ling only lifted her leg, "Ow ow ow owwww..." A thump was heard as Lian Yue fell onto the ground.

Qiu Man took a look at the busy folks, feeling emotional. The members of the ship might seem scarce at strength, but she knew the power of these folks in her heart.

A supreme machine with imaginably two different personalities, an aloof mathemagicians, a truly talented genius in engines, and a female warrior from the dark and...

"Yeah, me myself, a lady strategist behind the scene."

Such combination... how much strength would it produce I wonder...

"Any news on Ye?" asked Mu/Shang.

"No. They had not found anything on him. Ye seemed to have vaporized completely, somehow... None of the aristocrats have found him at the moment. " Reported Qiu Man as she placed the information down. She looked at that handicapped machinery, whom people called it "Mu/Shang". After countless glances, it still felt like a new surprise whenever she looked at it.

Like who, who was capable of creating such intelligence?

Thought she as her thin index finger scratched the polished chin of hers. She was trying to focus. She was well-aware of the importance of the disappeared boy to this handicapped mech, so she could not risk putting herself into a bad situation because of a little trickery in the search.

She might be important in this group but that did not mean she was irreplaceable. This handicapped mech had another side apparently, whose nature was cunning and dark, that her little tricks had been long read before she even initiated them.

"Also, the Shi family wished that we could provide them some techniques, on the engine for example." Her eyes shifted at the rolling genius on the ground.

"What's your opinion?" asked Mu/Shang calmly.

Qiu Man had an idea in mind apparently, "I believe we could reveal the unimportant portion of our techniques but we would need a corresponding payoff from them."

"For example?"

"A node laboratory at the Virtual World. That'll be great." Qiu Man gave a thought as she glanced at Little Rock.

# Chapter 391: Resolution

And so, Ye Chong and Ye Luo headed to the street and picked two "lucky" guests for the inquiry. No human being was harmed during the process yet unfortunately no answer was obtained either, while the villagers' replies formed a perfect tie, that the group of outsiders was never again heard after they had vanished into the water.

"They have to be in the water," thought Ye Chong as he immediately deployed Moon King and sank right to the bottom of the ocean. He found Cornerstone. Right, there was one hope and he walked around it. Cornerstone was intact, the gates were sealed tight, no visible damage from the outside. He could not open the door because obviously the overwhelming pressure would swallow and crush everything inside.

He decided to give a knock, then several knocks, at every corner of the sunken stone. There was no response from the family inside sadly. Ye Chong's hope sank hard as the stone, as probably they had abandoned the ship a long time ago.

But, where else could they go? Where else?

Ye Chong was puzzled.

Unlike the average population on planets of the 5 major galaxies, Dankwood was a little neighborhood with merely a handful of residents. That sounded like hope to most people, but not to Ye Chong. Difficulties were there, it still felt like a needle in the haystack since he did not have a single clue.

"Where are you...?" whispered Ye Chong.

...(Meanwhile at Ye family)...

"You mean that nonsensical being belongs to our family?"

"If you could use more head than your body, you would have seen the obvious, brother."



"Excuse me, maybe because I invested more useful strength than pointless thoughts unlike somebody..."

It was chaotic. The seniors were debating... well, almost quarreling, and the juniors were watching with their curiosity on what had made the calm and monosyllabic seniors beat their tongues hard. It had been quite some time since the family got rather lively, all thanks to that one report from Ye Luo.

To summarize, Ye Luo's report had basically illustrated two issues, one was the outcome of Ye Chong's bloodline verification, and the other being the association between the Xi Feng tribe and the Abductor.

The evil Abductor being related to the religious tribe should have been the main focus of the discussion... but Ye Chong's infamous entry seemed to have monopolized the discussion board.

"For the last time, no. No way he can be the descendant of our family. As clearly the record shows, there is nothing that indicates Ye Chong being part of ours. In the past fifty years! We never had any pair of descendants leaving our home since then. So it is impossible for him to be part of our family, we cannot let someone in when he has a dubious identity. It is clearly a potential threat and I am not allowing a threat to walk into our house," said Ye Juxing, the second authority after the leader.

His complexion was fair, a shaved face with features of a gentleman, looking possibly feeble in a highly active family but no one would look him down. He was an expert and certainly the one able to take the second throne of the family would have a few tricks under his sleeves. He was a known fighter back in his youth, who stood a great possibility of surpassing the top fighter Ye Luo in his days. Fate was cruel nevertheless, as he withdrew himself on a broken heart, a sad end to his relationship during which he requested to take over the administration of the family instead.

His days ended when Ye Luo had suddenly disappeared one day.

And after that the head of the family, on several occasions, had requested him to resume his brawling days but he refused persistently. Ye Yin the current legend in the field, was technically an apprentice of his. He had been watching Ye Yin for ages.

Ye Juxing was a stern teacher, an unbiased one too, thus the respects from the relatives and trust from the leader himself. He had been in charge of the mating administration of the family for the past few years, hence his statement ran steadily true like an iron fist.

"I do not agree to your proposal," stated Ye Guangxing, with a grim expression that looked odd on his puffy face when he used to smile all day. He was one of the only few non-combat members in the family for strange diseases wasted his body since he was young. He could not join the usual training but he was one great administrator too. And he worked hard for the position today.

Ye Guangxing's sharp eyes glanced at the other members around, as silence permitted, "The family has been suffering a lower and lower fertility rate for the last few years, and it would only be a matter of time before the family dies out itself."

The members were convinced as fear tinted their eyes. They knew the fact well but they were helpless at it. They had attempted different possible solutions but the fertility rate had only gotten worse.

"Yes, Juxing you are right at this. I had taken a look at our record. Judging from the instances, I am dead sure that this fellow is not someone from our family, the catch is, Ye Luo's report, which had illustrated that the person had demonstrated all the typical characteristics of our kind. On paper he is not our family but in reality he seems to own even the purest bloodline of our kind. So, is it possible for us to make a wild guess that, the existence of this child could be the key to preserve the purity of our bloodline even when we are connecting to the others?"

That was a daring statement.

"Moreover, what can this little boy do even if he had stepped into our house when we would be watching his every move at every single second?"

The room was noisy out of sudden, people were exchanging their ideas, while Ye Guangxing took his seat relaxingly.

The outcome of the discussion was clear. Everyone agreed that Ye Chong should be joining the family. No objection, no second discussion.

"I wonder how this Ye Chong guy looks..."

"Beats me. I did hear several stories of him being quite a strong pilot. I am more curious of what model the head would bestow him."

"Is he really that great?"

"Well you could try him when he gets here."

The corridors were filled with similar discussions ever since then. Ye Yin had to turn away from such discussion every single time. He was not being sensitive but there was one topic that felt discomfoting. People started to wonder whether Ye Chong or Ye Yin would be the top fighter of the family. Ye Chong had become a myth, and like all myths, his strength got "mythicized" too.

Whenever the crowd had left, Ye Juxing and Ye Guangxing would give a quick look at each other and smile briefly. Then they left. It happened so instantly that no one really noticed this little exchange between them.

...(Meanwhile back to Ye Chong)...

So Ye Chong heard from Ye Luo, tale of a great martial arts practitioner somewhere here. The practitioner was so great that Ye Luo felt the urge and must to drag Ye Chong all the way there. Ye Chong was not interested in street fights when his heart was all

over Rui Bing's whereabouts. But well, it was not like he had any idea on the search so he just joined Ye Luo in the end.

To the Abyss.

"So where is this expert you told me about?" asked Ye Chong, as they wandered in the city.

"I'm looking for him, don't you see?" replied Ye Luo with an irresponsible shrug.

"So practically you have zero idea on his location, right?" The rhetorical question struck the discussion.

"Hah!" Laughed Ye Luo shamelessly, "As I've said, I heard it, I only knew him from the word of mouth."

"Heard? So your information contains a considerable amount of uncertainty, which I would suggest to give up. Also, I would not be joining any of your search plans without a certain level of intelligible certainty." Ye Chong sounded like Mu...

"Oh Chong, please don't do this to me."

"Ye. Call me Ye. How many times I have to correct you on this again?"

"Everyone on the street has that name. I can simply name a number of Ye's I know. Chong sounds way better in my humble opinion."

And the exchange went on, as they walk the street.

Guang Wei was strolling the street mindlessly. It felt like a miracle that he survived the alchemy war back then but it also felt like a debacle. He thought he had found compatriots yet it turned out to be a disappointment.

Sigh...

If it was not the impact of the war he would thought he must have a dream.

The silver pendant! The Silver Strand Pendant the branch had lost for years! That mysterious alchemist must be the hermit of his branch!

But sigh...

Sighing was the only thing he could do.

"Call me Ye so no one gets hurt, especially you."

"Please Chong, be my guest."

The argument caught his attention. He was pondering something and he was disrupted. He was enraged and decided to take a look at the noisy two. He wondered what was so important that these two men must quarrel at the street, he was going to shout but that chest of one man gave him a shudder.

His mind was blank. His stance was stoned.

"I am not doing a pointless kill."

"Did you chicken?"

They walked away.

"Hold it right there you two!" Guang Wei realized something.

The two Ye's carried on arguing as they never expected anyone recognizing them. But Guang Wei continued shouting and sprinted towards them.

Pant... Pant... "Nobody moves." He spread his arms and blocked their way. It was an exercise too overwhelming for an alchemist like Guang Wei, he thought he would lose his breath in front of these two looking confused. His face was red and his eyes were glaring huge at Ye Chong.

Ye Chong and Ye Luo exchanged glances in bewilderment.

Thup.

Sob... Sob... Guang Wei grabbed Ye Chong by his legs.

Ye Chong backed off, Ye Chong backed off slowly, that Guang

Wei lost balance and hit the ground by his chin. His face was covered in mud, his lips bled slightly.

He got up promptly and kneeled down, words were choked by his tears, "Oh, are you my seniors! You must be my seniors, all these years I've been looking for you, and I have finally found you... Could you imagine into what demise our branch had fallen?" The misery, the emotion was overflowing, that he cried out loud.

"Uhh... Chong, do you know him?" Ye Luo asked with awkwardness as he rose his index finger at the worshipping Guang Wei.

"Nope," Ye Chong gave a firm reply.

"Then what in the Dankwood he's..."

"I dunno."

## Chapter 392: The Smoke Branch

"Hey, big guy. Hold your melodrama. Let's talk, don't act like a lassie," reminded Ye Luo kindly since Ye Chong did not seem to buy Guang Wei's tears.

Ye Chong followed the stares of Guang Wei and realized that he had been eyeing the pendant round his neck. His fingers stroke the chain calmly, "Black Smoke Ring! Was that the Black Smoke Ring?" And Guang Wei went into another screaming session upon seeing the black jade ring on Ye Chong's hand.

At that point Guang Wei was fairly convinced that this man would be the descendant of the long-lost smoke branch, the senior that he thought he would never meet for the rest of his life, since the Silver Strand Pendant would represent the connection to the branch, while Black Smoke Ring would highlight the superiority in the branch.

He must be the leader of the smoke branch!

Oh my alchemy, finally! I've found companion! A group! A community! Guang Wei felt it was the happiest day of his life. Was he dreaming? To verify that he gave a bite on his arm.

Yeooouch! He shrieked. The immense pain had convinced his reality.

It is real! I am not dreaming!

And Ye Luo's look on Guang Wei seemed sympathetic for some reason...

Ye Chong removed the pendant from his neck and held it in front of Guang Wei, "Do you recognize this?"

"Yes, my lord!" nodded Guang Wei vigorously and gave a dramatic kneel-down-of-worship as he sincerely greeted. "Greetings to the supreme leader of the smoke branch!" Ye Luo seemed to hear the ground shattering from the worship.

"I am not the leader," shook Ye Chong, while being in an bewilderment as he never expected how these accessories would have such association to the smoke branch.

"You are the leader!" insisted Guang Wei, as he worshipped. "Your apprentice might be witless but not foolish enough to not recognize these signs of your great leadership," his voice grew emotional towards the end.

Ye Luo gave a thug on Ye Chong's sleeves, signing him to take notice of the surrounding crowd.

"Well, follow me then." The flat voice felt as if godsend to Guang Wei.

Ye Luo did not manage to show Ye Chong that legendary figure in his tale, but at least they had toured the city enough to pick a quiet spot immediately.

"Take it." Ye Chong passed the pendant to Guang Wei, who was in total confusion. Ye Luo too did not foresee Ye Chong handing such a luxury to a stranger.

Yes, the Silver Strand Pendant was precious for its material, literally precious, astronomically priced, especially when it was a known token of a certain ancient branch.

"You must be the apprentice then," said Ye Chong flatly.

And Guang Wei nodded quickly.

"I am not of the smoke branch, and these accessories came to me on merely coincidence. I'll give you the pendant. Not the ring, however, since I still have business to do with it."

Ye Chong pondered a moment and carried on, "The ownership of these two items is rather complicated to be clarified, but for the ring I'll use 5 alchemy recipes in compensation." Stated Ye Chong firmly. The Black Smoke was very useful to him, that he did not intend to let it go simply.



And there Guang Wei was, all confused again. All these years he had been a nobody and suddenly one earth-wrecking instance crashed into his life.

Ye Chong gave a glance at Guang Wei, assuming the silence as acceptance, as he picked up a stick from the ground, writing recipes on the sand.

There were a gazillion recipes in Lunatic Guan's chip, so it was not hard to fork out a few recipes on spot.

So Ye Chong randomly picked 5 recipes, though none of them belonged to the smoke branch, they were mostly comparable to even the legendary Redsand Dehydrator created by the smoke branch.

"Alright." Said Ye Chong, his back straightened, the stick to the ground, "You can have these formula." One last glance at the perplexed man, then he turned away, with Ye Luo hurriedly followed on one gesture.

"H-how could you! Every formula of smoke branch is stored in this pendant!" Somehow a shocking fact was squeezed out of the confused man's lips, that he regretted it immediately after. He felt he must be the most foolish apprentice in the entire world.

Ye Chong gave a long stare at Guang Wei, whose face was drained by then. He had just remembered that this monosyllabic man was the notorious alchemist of destruction, that it would merely take the alchemist a drop of flask to kill him.

The hell I said? Why must I be so foolish?

He closed his eyes, gulping frantically, bidding a hectic farewell to everybody he knew in his mind.

But the supposed pain did not arrive.

"Here's some Redsand, and 2 hallucinogens. Take them," the voice rang coldly.

He opened his eyes to see the three flasks on the ground. The two men, the leader had disappeared...

"Well, well, well. Never knew you are such a kind person, tsk, tsk, tsk," teased Ye Luo, though he seemed very impressed of Ye Chong's kindness, since not everyone would be able to give away such precious on a whim.

Ye Chong continued walking.

Ironically, little he knew that, the kindness he bestowed had changed the entire alchemy field on Dankwood. In 10 years or so, the smoke branch had ascended as the strongest branch on Dankwood, and Guang Wei held tremendous gratitude towards this mysterious alchemist, that he despised the heartless Fei Lidu and spent the rest of his life pressuring the Incense branch.

...(Inside the spaceship at somewhere else)...

The cluster of stars seemed gorgeous on the current course, as Ye Yin stood before the opened window. His face was stern, cold as if ice-crafted. One might assume the Ye family to be as physically unattractive as Ye Chong but that was not the case. Ye Yin was much more handsome than Ye Chong, taller than Ye Chong, fitter than Ye Chong too. He exuded a more unfriendly sense than Ye Chong, that he felt like an ice statue on top of the iceberg.

His long hair rested on his shoulders. His eyebrows were fine. His nose was well-proportioned that he looked like the typical handsome man of the fairytale. His partially-closed eyes were long and sharp at glances. His resting lips were as if part of the frozen.

People would walk by cautiously, as feared they would trigger an avalanche.

Ye Yin was assigned as the leader of the operation this time. Yes, the operation to bring Ye Chong home. He was well-aware that it would never be a friendly home-welcoming operation, it would feel more like a retrieval of something the family owned from the

beginning. Well the authority stated to bring Ye Chong home alive. They did not show concern on how the said person would get to home.

"Whacha thinkin?" A sweet voice rang by his ears. Jenny Ye was probably the only person who would not fear of Ye Yin's coldness since they grew up together. They had been friends since childhood. And as a matter of fact, only three figures of the Ye family could do something to Ye Yin the iced - the leader, Ye Juxing and as you would have probably guessed, Jenny.

Ye Yin's gaze softened upon resting on the face he recognized.

Jenny was not an absolute beauty. She would probably be considered as slightly above the average in the lawn of the three aristocrats. She was very popular in the family nevertheless, because of her gentle nature and a heart of gold.

You would have thought Ye Yin and Jenny Ye would make a perfect couple, sadly, that was not the case as long as the marriage rules enforced, not even Ye Yin the great could be the exception.

But nobody would want to hit on Jenny because of their known relationship. And Jenny worked hard to improve herself in order to remain by Ye Yin's side. She was also a pilot after all, a great one too, even though she lacked actual practice. Fortunately, the leader and Ye Juxing were loving enough to frequently arrange missions for both of them.

"This is like the... fifth mission we are together?" asked Ye Yin softly.

Well the iced man had just spoken with the gentlest voice of the XY population, it would be a jaw-dropping moment if there was spectator.

"Yup!" Jenny smiled sweetly. Her smile somehow melted the heart of Ye Yin.

It was silence afterwards as both of them stood next to each

other, looking at the stars.

"We have arrived at the free space zone, sir!" One pilot rushed in to report, as realizing he had probably spoiled the moment.

"Mhm." The heart was frozen again, as he responded flatly, "Inform the rest to inspect all units before departure." He did not turn as he spoke.

"Yes sir!"

And Jenny seemed to be fairly captivated by the firm linings on Ye Yin's physique.

... (Meanwhile back to Ye Chong)...

Ziingggggg...

The dimensional keystone of Moon King vibrated.

Ye Chong held his steps.

"What's wrong?" asked Ye Luo.

Ye Chong lifted his right hand, revealing the dark glossy bracelet. That was the keystone of Moon King. A fine craft, with pieces of leaves over the curve, that one could even see the patterns on the leaves. An elegant design. Ye Luo did not appreciate the beauty however, "No man would wear that!" Ye Luo used to have it in front of his chest but well Ye Chong still preferred it over his wrist. That was what the design was for after all.

"It's vibrating..."

"What? That means there's message from the family. Let me see that." Ye Luo was curious, "Why there's a message now? Was it because of the Abductor?" He did report the family on the incident of the Abductor and well, Ye Chong too...

"It should be about something," he said. Well, the case of the Abductor was more action-worthy than Ye Chong, that was what he thought though.

# Chapter 393: Ye Luo's Proposition

Both of them sneaked out of Abyss City right away.

The message was that effective on grabbing both of their attention.

The message was rather brief yet it was a full-fledged alert, that caused almost-strained expression on Ye Luo's face, while Ye Chong looked only a little sterner than usual nonetheless.

"How? Just how?" asked Ye Luo as he depressingly looked at Ye Chong. The message basically requested Ye Luo's assistance in "escorting" the lost descendant. And he was not stupid and was fully aware of the underlying meaning.

Ye Luo could not figure however, Ye Chong being the top priority to the family.

Ye Chong frowned, especially after discerning that one name on the list - Ye Yin, the top fighter of Ye family, being the leader of the operation this time. Such a brilliant timing he thought, that he was all alone in free space zone and would be fighting against a massive army of well-trained pilots.

Ye Chong's gaze was frigid. He was not one who liked one's fate to be manipulated by people and not in such manner, most importantly. He had been resistant in becoming part of the filthy aristocrats like Ye family. Who cares if he might be related to the family from any perspective, he would not join them, he would never be joining them.

And Ye Chong got very much irritated. An unknown rage brewed inside him!

The reasons why Ye Chong had been working hard improving himself were, first to seek survival, second to dominate his own life, those were his limits, the ultimate goal of his life, but there must be somebody or some group in his way!

How could he not be mad?

As time passed Ye Chong had changed. There was development in his strength, as well as in his personality. That competitiveness started to appear in his soul, that he would never let somebody to take charge of his life!

Ye Chong did not thrash the place out of rage. Instead, he grew more rational, even crueler, to figure out a way to guard his losing freedom.

Ye Luo smiled bitterly at the angered beast, wondering why the leader of his family would take such extreme measure in capturing it. Was Ye Chong really this important that an expedition had to be formed to get him back? He doubted it, he truly suspected it but he was convinced by his father's sense, well, since this operation would never initiate without his father's permission.

And thanks to this sudden operation, he was on the fence.

Ye Chong turned to Ye Luo and remained silent, his cold gaze was expecting a clarification of some sort from the unofficial representative of Ye family.

"Don't look at me," shrugged Ye Luo, "I am too busy for this. I had given you my Moon King, and I saw nothing. Yup, saw nothing on the bracelet at all." Ye Luo carried on mischievously, "Hah! Ye Yin is a pain in my eyes. Chong, please, be my guest, teach him a lesson. Also, you would probably be stuck behind the walls once you get 'invited' back to your home. You won't be smiling if you are staying in the lawn everyday."

Ye Chong felt relieved for some reason.

Practically, Ye Luo could do him no harm on this. If Ye Luo would choose the family over Ye Chong and pick a fight with him, Ye Luo was about the same standard as Ye Chong. Ye Chong knew it well after the few brief matches they had together in the last few days. Moreover, Ye Chong had a mech, so it would not be hard to

eliminate Ye Luo if things went wrong.

However he refused to fight Ye Luo, for some reason, probably because Ye Luo was the person who gave him Moon King. Thought Ye Chong as he picked an excuse to rationalize his perception.

"Oh, right, almost forgot," Ye Luo remembered something, "The Moon King is installed with an automatic identification device. We got to tweak that, in a way they would not find you out immediately. Well, though I think they haven't know the fact that you own the Moon King now. The device allows Moon King to identify the other mechs from my home, the fun part is, you can easily obtain their information as long as they are of a lower rank than Moon King. Hah! If that happens, just be the catfish. They surely would not notice. It would be an impeccable camouflage, well, except if you encounter Ye Yin. I can't help you on that. Good luck with him if you did meet him by all means. Oh, one last thing, most importantly, assuming you ever get caught, don't tell them that you got these information from me!" Said Ye Luo gleefully, with grace on his childish face. It was a smile of unstoppable freedom.

Ye Chong felt something warm in his heart, but he said nothing.

"With their speed, they should be arriving Dankwood in no time. So you should leave as soon as possible," pondered Ye Luo with his head tilted.

"Leave Dankwood?" asked Ye Chong.

"Yup," Ye Luo nodded as he formed a proposition for Ye Chong. "Dankwood is not a big planet to begin with. It would only be a matter of time till they get to you. But if you sneaked your way out of Dankwood, they would not be able to track you straight away."

"How do I leave? Do I board Moon King?" Ye Luo's proposition made perfect sense, Ye Chong then further inquired with interest.

"Don't think about Moon King. You can't do a space-jump with

that. Well, I did hear Xue Lai's Brahmara has the specs to perform a good space-jump. But well, we need to have a Plan B, a more plausible plan. Hmmm...", Ye Luo reminisced the records, "Hm, there are two spaceships on Dankwood, one at Han family, another at the Renlo tribe."

Ye Chong gave a nod, Huang Baiyi did mention similar things before.

"Well for Han family, you could forget about them. We did help them out twice this time, but they aren't the kind who would return the favor on situation like this. No doubt they might accept our request for help, but you would be right out of the bag if that happens." He lifted his head and gave a straight gaze at Ye Chong, shrugged again, "Don't think that those magical make-ups of yours could help. Yes, you could use those makeover fantasy to deceive most people, except for Ye Yin. I can 100% guarantee on that, you won't be able to hide your way out of Ye Yin's grip. He's just downright horrid."

Ye Yin huh? The top fighter of Ye family had such ability? It gave Ye Chong extra horror the fact that this man could win over Ye Luo's "compliment".

"So you are left with the Renlos. Fortunately their defense isn't as strong as the Han's. You have Moon King, it should not be a problem to sneak in. I am not sure if they are on the move at the moment. Just go back to Han family if they doesn't click for you," proposed Ye Luo, gleefully again on his next elaboration, "... since I know where both families parked their rides."

...

Moon King hovered silently in the dark sky.

Ye Chong observed the hologram projection carefully inside his cabin. Ye Luo left right after he had guided Ye Chong the way there. He did not intend to join Ye Chong's big runaway apparently



Ye Luo, before leaving for good, had a glance at the residence of the Renlos, "Chong, you have my Moon King. Please, by all means, do hold them longer," he mumbled. "You will never like Ye family. I'll be happier too the longer you hold, hehehehe..."

Then he became calm, with fingers rubbing his chin, "Should I leave as well? I had seen enough experts on this planet, I should leave too, hah, mhm, I'll go Han family."

He smiled and ran away promptly.

The Renlo actually had quite a formidable defense, that it would be a chore to infiltrate without a mech. But Ye Chong had Moon King, so it would be a pice of cake.

He watched and memorized the layout of the area completely.

A sudden leap, a sudden sink, like a phantom Ye Chong traveled inside Moon King. He made his way into the spaceship without alarming the guards.

The spaceship was probably the most ancient model Ye Chong had ever seen, that he seriously doubted if the model was a pioneer model from the early era of interstellar travels.

The circuits could be seen everywhere. They were fully exposed on every tile. Well, it felt like an antique Ye Chong was in, since such circuit-formation technique had already joined Trash Planet decades ago. The current leading technique had was much more matured since it allowed an integration of the circuit networks inside the body. Other than this, the ship was wholly made out of metals. Ye Chong could not identify any material that was light and durable.

He ventured deeper into the ship to be welcomed by a shroud of metallic smell. There was no processor, a kind of giant device with dense electronic circuits was found instead.

Ye Chong had no time to act all fascinated by the primitiveness of this spaceship, as he had already perceived footsteps approaching

him!

"Like dude, how many times had we conducted an operation in these 6 months? I am getting crazy soon!" a young voice ranted.

"Shh, don't spit it so loud. If the manager heard this, you are very much done-for."

They seemed to be pushing something towards Ye Chong, since Ye Chong heard the wheels rolling on the floor.

"I don't care if the manager heard this!" But the young voice seemed to have softened drastically. This manager was seemingly someone they should not cross. "Like seriously, we used to go on an operation once or twice a year at most! And look what we are doing now! All the operations nonstop for 6 bloody months! I had forgotten how my house looks now!"

"I must agree it has gotten a bit too frequent recently. Our brothers had gotten tired. And I too, felt truly worn out by this."

The voices had gotten closer and Ye Chong quickly took a look at the place, he got to find an escape path as soon as possible. And he spotted a door not far from him. He then tiptoed into the door with his back lowered.

It looked like a storage, with all sort of boxes there. A joyful sight to Ye Chong, the storage would be a perfect place for hiding! Without hesitation he picked a corner and curved into the box.

It was a good timing as the two persons got into the storage right after he hid himself. Through the gap, Ye Chong could see them sending the similar metallic case into the storage.

"We must tell the manager."

"You tell it then, you are the senior here."

"Nah, the junior does the work for junior."

"What do you mean...?" The voice trailed off as they left the room.

The metallic door was shut tight.

Perfect...

Ye Chong rested at the corner after ensuring his safety, as he began recollecting his thoughts.

But something happened that his thoughts got disrupted.

His body began shivering helplessly.

Was it me or the room got much colder than before?

## Chapter 394: Falling Sick

D\*mn! The room was actually a freezer. He was inside an actual freezer! Ye Chong quickly rummaged through the boxes in the room, and found them all to be filled with food.

The temperature was dropping fast. Ye Chong felt like he was in the dead of winter.

No! If he did not leave this place soon, his body will quickly lose warmth. Having a strong body did not mean he was immortal. Ye Chong had studied biology before, and knew that if he stayed put, he would not be able to hold on for long. The cells in his body would die from losing too much heat.

He walked towards the metal door carefully, and listened for any sounds outside. No one was outside. It seemed that the situation was not too severe yet.

He pushed the door with his hand, but the metal door did not even budge.

Ye Chong felt his heart turn colder, and not because of freezer. The door was locked from outside! Ye Chong tried pushing harder, but the door did not move at all.

It looked like he would need his dagger. Ye Chong took out his dagger and operated on the metal door. The dagger's edge was very sharp, and cutting his way out should not be too difficult.

Just as the dagger's sharp edge touched the metal door, Ye Chong abruptly stopped. His mind was racing!

Using brute force to make his way out would not be too difficult, but it would leave tracks. This was a food storage room, which meant that the crew would definitely visit the place some time during their journey. They would notice the damage he caused and be alarmed, possibly even conducting a full search on the entire starship.

Ye Chong had intended to leave Dankwood planet undetected. If he forced his way out, that would be definitely achieved. If he left any tracks, the Ye Family's absurdly powerful intel would definitely allow them to find him easily.

After a long moment's thought, Ye Chong returned his dagger to its sheath. After all, he could always use it later when the situation demanded it.

This was a freezer storage room for food. The crew would come here to get more food when the time comes. He could wait for a better opportunity to escape, instead of forcing his way out.

With this decision in mind, Ye Chong calmed down and returned to his corner to sit down, with the wooden spear by his side. The alchemy materials and raw ingredients in the wooden box were already mostly exhausted from recent battles. After giving some to Guang Wei, there was also not much medicine left. In the end, Ye Chong bundled everything into a pouch he bought in Abyss City, together with the reward that Han Yue had given him.

When Ye Luo saw him producing so much money from the box, the man was stunned. Han Yue had rewarded Ye Chong with a huge sum that even someone as wealthy as Ye Luo felt envious about it. Ye Luo had teased Han Yue for being unfair by paying Ye Chong so much and paying nothing to him, despite both of them helping Han Yue.

There were 30 small green metallic rods, all thick as a thumb, with their surface etched with some intricate patterns. Aside from the emerald colored exterior, Ye Chong did not find anything particularly valuable about these metallic rods. He had never seen this kind of metal before, but he had no devices at hand to analyze them.

Ye Luo called them tilia crystal rods, and each of them represented a huge sum of money. As for how much they were really worth, Ye Chong had no idea. The tilia crystal rods were

made of very hard material, it was no wonder they were a form of high value currency. When Ye Chong took out half of the tilia crystal rods and offered them to Ye Luo, he grinned and declined them.

If only Mu and Shang were here, then he could just pass all these things to them for safekeeping, and not worry about them himself.

Now that he thought about it, Mu and Shang were the only mech Ye Chong had seen that could store objects in the alternate dimension.

As Ye Chong sat down, feeling more composed, he began to think.

Once he escaped, he would once again be separated from Rui Bing and the rest. Reuniting with them would not be so easy anymore. He felt a sense of loss, but there was nothing he could do about it. Ye Luo was right. Staying on Dankwood planet was too dangerous for him. Besides, he could not find out anything about their current situation and whereabouts, and it was almost impossible for him to sought them out.

On the other hand, if he could really find them, it was not necessarily a good thing. Against a strong force like Ye Yin, Rui Bing and the rest would constantly be in danger, and he would also be more restricted in his options. It was after considering all these that Ye Chong finally decided to leave Dankwood planet.

In any case, he should prioritize on surviving first, so that he may live to meet with the rest in the future. Ye Chong made his plans with cold calculations, unaffected by his emotions.

Fate was unpredictable. Comrades who were with him today might be forever out of reach the day after. Ye Chong was not a sentimental kind of guy, but he could not help but sigh. Usually, such emotions were impossible to find in him, since he was already used to being strong and alone. However, he was still human, and a young 20-over-year-old one at that.

Ye Chong sighed quietly, and thought of Mu and Shang. Abruptly, he was struck with a deep feeling of longing for Mu and Shang!

"Mu, Shang, where are you?" The young man's weak mutterings resonated clearly in the cold freezer.

Ye Chong was falling sick! He was sure of it. This was already the 15th hour in the freezer! His patience had led him towards this quandary.

He had been to many planets, but none of them as cold as this freezer. In the Five Galaxies, any decent clothing would have thermostats, and people rarely fell sick because of the weather. Now, Ye Chong was only wearing clothing made of plain plant fibre, given to him by the Mayor back in Emerald City. Dankwood planet did not have seasons, but was comfortably warm throughout the year, so Ye Chong did not wear thick clothing.

Instead, Ye Chong had chosen light clothing for convenience.

As for temperature, Ye Chong was not quite familiar with the idea of it. He only knew that it was very, very cold right now! If no one visited soon, he would decide to force his way out.

He may not be a doctor, but he was quite sensitive of the condition of his body. He could feel his himself growing weaker, and his stamina was depleting very quickly.

If this continued, his situation would become very dangerous!

Ye Chong had always taken his health seriously. Back on the trash planet, he lacked medical supplies, so falling sick was risky business. Moreover, since Ye Chong's body was always robust, he seldom fell sick.

Even so, he had never spent so much time at such a low temperature. His emotional troubles did not help him too. All of these factors finally led to him falling sick!

Cold! His entire body was cold! Ye Chong shuddered. His

situation was at an absolute worst. His body was weak, and he could no longer remain clear headed. Ye Chong's strong body did not help him against the extreme cold.

Just when Ye Chong was about to force his way out, he heard footsteps from outside.

Ye Chong could feel his body weakening, but his mind was still working. He quickly hid back into his corner. He could feel his movements slowing down, but could only smile wryly at himself.

Ching! That was the sound of a mechanical door unlocking, and the door opened.

A man stepped inside, and shuddered as he entered the freezer, muttering, "So cold! Who turned down the temperature so much?" He shook his head and headed towards one of the metallic boxes in the corner. He opened the lid and bent over to rummage over its contents.

The man had his back towards Ye Chong.

How could Ye Chong miss this hard won opportunity? Despite his clouding mind and shaking body, Ye Chong's rationale told him that this was not an opportunity to be missed!

Ye Chong bent down to pick up his wooden spear, and tried his best to control his numbing legs as he tiptoed past the man and escaped from the d\*mn freezer.

As he exited the freezer, the sudden rise in temperature nearly made Ye Chong stumble.

His vision was becoming blurry, and Ye Chong could feel his mind slipping. His body was weak, and he could not find his usual strength. He believed that even an average nobody could kill him easily right this moment.

His legs were so tired he could barely move them!

He must find a safe place quickly! Even with his condition, Ye



Chong's mind still retained a small degree of consciousness!

With his blurring eyesight, Ye Chong felt like he was flying!

If anyone saw Ye Chong right now, they would be very much surprised. Ye Chong was not moving as slow as he felt. On the contrary, he was still agile, and would even react evasively when he heard any sound around him.

However, Ye Chong was not aware of this.

He was focused on only one thing - finding a safe place!

He was now operating entirely on autopilot, and his evasive measures were only the result of his long honed battle instinct!

Ye Chong saw a door through his darkening vision, and made his way through the door without hesitation. He could feel himself almost at his limit!

Ye Chong tried to open his eyes to study the room he was in, but his eyes would not respond to his beckoning. No matter how he tried, his vision was gradually slipping away.

Darkness! Total darkness! Ye Chong found his vision completely engulfed by darkness.

Ye Chong did not know how he managed to hide himself in this darkness, but as he felt his whole body enveloped in this darkness, he finally felt relieved! He lost his final moments of consciousness, and blacked out with the wooden spear still firmly in his grip.

# Chapter 395: Wei You's Kindness

Wei You finished everyone's final checkups, ensuring that every crew member was fit for duty, and signed her name on their medical reports. After her long hours of work, she was exhausted. However, this was part of her job. With her job finished, she passed on instructions to the nurses working under her and returned to her room.

She was the medical officer in charge onboard this starship, and was responsible for the health of all crew members.

As the medical officer in charge, she had her own private cabin, unlike the nurses who worked under her. They had to bunk together, with a few of them in each cabin.

She opened the door and headed for her bed. The ship was about to depart, and she missed her own soft bed at home.

Suddenly, she saw a stick, a black colored one, extending out from under her bed.

She could not help but frowned. Who's idea of a joke was this? What a bunch of morons! She felt a little angry.

Space travels were long and dull, and crew members often felt the stress from their journeys, which could lead to psychological issues. Besides, this starship was mostly run by strong and healthy men. This was probably the work of some sex deprived b\*stard.

Wei You humphed coldly. She had her standards, and could not care for such vulgar men.

"Come out, or I'll report you to the Captain!" Wei You yelled. The captain was interested in her, so the rest of the crew would usually stay clear of her. While she did not reciprocate his interest, it was still a useful form of protection.

No reply came from under her bed.

"Are you looking forward to the brig?" Wei You said this more

coldly, her eyes reflecting her determination.

Still, there was no reply.

Wei You groaned. Could this man really be that bold? Or was there no one underneath her bed at all?

Wei You bent down to look.

"Ah!" She could not help but gasp.

There was a man lying underneath her bed!

Just then, the ship's broadcast system came to live. "Attention all crew members, attention all crew members, this starship will depart in five minutes."

The man was unconscious. Wei You could tell from her professional experience that he was ill! The countdown for departure had already begun, and she can no longer send this man out of the ship.

Wei Yuan's fear was much diminished when she learned that this man was only a patient. As a professional and excellent medical officer, she immediately calmed down when it came to matters of her specialty.

Wei You pulled the man out from under her bed, and it was not as difficult as she had expected. The man was lighter than she thought. With such a thin body, he must be physically fragile, it was no wonder that he fell sick! Wei You drew this natural conclusion.

"Who's this?" Wei You looked at his face and frowned again. How did he get onboard? The ship's security was tight, she recalled. Besides, her ship was docked right in the center of the Tribe's territory. Outsiders would never be able to reach this place, much less board the ship.

However, Wei You did not worry about it further. She was only a medical officer, and her duty was to tend to her patients. She

performed all the routine checkups on the man with ease.

"So he caught a cold?" Wei You nearly laughed out loud after finishing the checkup. Illnesses like this were usually found only in older people. For the average healthy person, it was nearly impossible to catch a cold. Even for women, people seldom fell sick because of the weather.

This man must be really weak! Most people in the free space zone had to undergo combat training since young, and developed strong bodies later in life.

Right now, she was no longer on guard against this man lying on the floor. She was a medical officer, but she had undergone combat training herself, and did well in it compared to other medical officers. She could probably deal with this weakling in no time.

As she administered suitable medication for this weak man, Wei You began to study her unconscious patient.

The man was very thin that she suspected chronic malnutrition. His looks were average, nothing eye-catching about him. However, Wei You found it bizarre that the man, even unconscious, was holding tightly onto a wooden stick. "Oh, not a wooden stick," Wei Yuan noted to herself as she found the stick to be a spear.

A combat expert? Could he be a combat expert? However, this weakling combat expert was probably no use at all! Wei You shook her head, laughing at the thought. Her moist, red lips curved up into a thin smile.

With his weak condition, he would probably need a few days to wake up. Wei You pondered to herself.

"Mu ... Shang ..." The man muttered incoherently. His soft voice broke Wei You's thoughts, and she reached to feel for his forehead. Once again, she frowned. The man had a high fever!

What a stupidly weak man! Wei You looked at the man on the floor helplessly with some condescension, but dutifully

administered the necessary medication for him .

The sudden vibration under her feet told her that the ship was already airborne.

"What should I do with you?" Wei You rested her smooth chin on her fair skinned arms as she studied the unconscious man lying on the floor.

Should she hand him over to the Captain? This seemed to be the best solution. However, she did not feel like seeing the Captain. She felt disconcerted every time his fervent eyes met hers.

"I should help him recover first," Wei You told herself. The man seemed so weak. So long as she was cautious, there should be no danger to her.

The man on the floor uttered the occasional incoherent word or two, his forehead still burning unnaturally hot.

Ye Chong's illness was more serious than Wei You had expected. All this while, Ye Chong had been operating under extreme stress, as he always kept his guard up high. Ever since he left the trash planet, he had been living in this condition.

No matter how strong or cold of a person he was, he was only human!

Despite his strong physique, this sudden illness triggered by freezing temperatures had snowballed into a serious condition. The seemingly benign cause of illness had led to a chain reaction, and Ye Chong's mental endurance finally yielded to the pressure.

It was now the fifth day!

The man's fever had subsided, but he was still unconscious. If Wei You was not certain of the cause of the man's illness, she might just begin to doubt her own abilities.

The man's physical condition was deplorable! Even someone who was born weak should have awoken by now. How could this person

still be unconscious?

She felt grateful for the fact that none of the crew members were this weak, or she would have to stay as close to that person as possible to monitor his lifestyle. A man like him would be nothing more than a waste of space!

Just then, a knock came from the door.

Wei You jolted in surprise, and quickly stuffed the man back underneath her bed. She wondered what the story was with this man, who still held on tightly to his wooden spear in his unconscious state. Wei You had tried to relieve him of his weapon, but no matter how she tried, she could not get the spear out of his hands.

"Cursed wooden stick!" Wei Yu cursed the weapon, which was difficult to hide one way or another. Sweat began to form on her forehead. If anyone found out that she was hiding away someone in her cabin ...

And if they found that person was a man ...

Wei You suddenly realized that not reporting her findings to the Captain immediately back then was a terrible mistake, placing her in a very difficult position.

The knock came again.

She looked back at her bed, saw nothing was amiss, and sighed in relief.

Looking into the mirror, she breathed in deeply for a few times, calming herself down, and assumed her no-nonsense face.

Wei You opened the door.

As expected, it was the Captain.

"Can I help you?" Wei You asked coldly.

The Captain was young, at only 29 years old. Usually, an important position like this would not be given to such a young

person. However, this young man had stood out among the other candidates with overwhelming superiority, and had finally gotten the job. The other candidates had all accepted his success without apprehension.

His name was Ren Zeri. Not only was he one of the famous elites of the younger generation in the Renlo Tribe, he was also clear headed and unconventional in his methods, with a wide variety of tricks up his sleeves. Witnessing his handsome presence, Wei You felt an illogical sense of aversion. She knew that the Captain was the dream lover of the nurses on this starship. Every day, past his working hours, the Captain would be surrounded by women for company.

Ren Zeri always had an unreadable smile on his face, with mesmerizing eyes like the stars in the night sky. This was the pair of eyes that many ladies described as "electrifying". This was the pair of eyes that Wei You always felt an inexplicable sense of foreboding every time she looked into them.

Perhaps this was why she could not accept his advances.

Ren Zeri leaned against the door, used to Wei You's coldness. He smiled sweetly as he said, "It's my break now, and my schedule's empty, so I thought of asking our excellent medical officer out for a drink. What do you think?" He then leaned in conspiratorially and whispered, "Mo said that he has some Aoyuzu Fragrantica. It's a rare opportunity, let's go have a try!"

Aoyuzu Fragrantica ... Wei You could no help but felt her resolution weaken. As a doctor, she knew that Aoyuzu Fragrantica tasted exquisite, and had cosmetic benefits as well. However, it was a high class luxury item produced in small amounts, and almost impossible to find in the open market.

Every woman has a deep yearning for beauty, and Wei You was no exception.

However, the image of that unconscious man in her room came

to mind unrestrained, and Aoyuzu Fragrantica did not seem so attractive anymore.

Just as she was about to decline his invitation, Ren Zeri's expression changed to one of bafflement, tilting his head as though he was listening to something.

She felt her heart skip a beat!



# Chapter 396: Coldness Underneath His Disguise

"Who's in there?" Ren Zeri asked in a low voice.

"What are you talking about?" Wei You spoke with forced calmness, but was betrayed by the panic shown in her eyes.

Ren Zeri forced his way through the door. He heard it clearly, the sound of another person's breathing in the cabin. As an elite of the Renlo Tribe's younger generation, he was confident of his hearing.

He saw no one else in the cabin, but Wei You's panicked expression told him that there must be something amiss.

He stood at ready and focused on listening. Immediately, he heard a soft sound of breathing from underneath the bed.

"Humph!" He exclaimed coldly. To think that someone else would dare to aim for his target! He felt a rising anger in him. Ren Zeri's interest in Wei You was not announced in public, but mostly everyone on the starship knew about it. That was why no one dared to make their advances on Wei You.

How dare he!

"Don't hide now! Come out!" Ren Zeri said to the person underneath the bed. His expression was grim, and his eyes were now chilling instead of mesmerizing.

How dare you! Ren Zeri felt his fury rising even more. What angered him most was the fact that Wei You had chosen to protect this man. He had always treated her well, but she never cared for him, and now she was protecting another man! How could he not see red?

No reply came from underneath the bed.

Ren Zeri ridiculed him further, "What's the matter? Getting cowardly are you? I'd like to see how it is who'd dare to steal my

woman!"

Wei You, who was panicking as she watched from the side, now blushed at his words and cried, "Please mind your words!"

Ren Zeri ignored her protest and fixed his eyes at the bed.

There was still no response from underneath the bed.

Ren Zeri could stand no longer and bent down to look underneath.

A man, as expected! Ren Zeri nearly went berserk. Wei You had hidden a man in her cabin! The sight pained him deeply. Reality had delivered a huge blow to Ren Zeri's ego. That was why he did not notice that the man was actually unconscious.

Ren Zeri dragged Ye Chong carelessly out from underneath the bed.

"What are you doing?" Seeing Ren Zeri's rough treatment of her patient, Wei You could not help but protest loudly.

Ren Zeri noticed then that the man was not actually a crew member, and he was in an unconscious state.

"Huh?" He gasped, and asked lowly, "Who is this?"

"I don't know." Wei You hated Ren Zeri a lot, but considering he was Captain, she still answered truthfully.

"You don't know?" Ren Zeri returned the question mockingly. "Then why are you hiding him under your bed?"

Wei You did not know herself. "I don't know how he got onto the ship. He's caught a cold, and is currently unconscious."

"Haha! Knocked out because of a cold?" Ren Zeri was first stunned by her words, then laughed at them. "Why are you hiding a useless weakling like him under your bed like he's someone precious?" Inhabitants of the free space zone were all strong and healthy, and would never catch a cold like that.

Wei You agreed with his assessment of the man's weak condition, but Ren Zeri's words grated on her still, and she humphed coldly and looked away.

Ren Zeri continued mocking, "What a piece of trash. Without your help, how could he have boarded this ship? I didn't think that our respectable medical officer, Wei You, would fall in love with such a useless man! Tsk tsk, what a surprise!"

Ren Zeri's degrading words about her patient and his assumption of her patient's relationship with her angered Wei You. "Please mind your manners. My taste in men is none of your business."

Wei You felt threatened by her Captain's craziness. She decided then that upon completing their current mission, she would make a formal request to leave this ship.

Ren Zeri laughed as his anger peaked. "Haha, none of my business, none of my business indeed!" He stopped laughing abruptly and switched into a nastier tone as he said, "My dear medical officer, don't tell me you've forgotten that anyone who did not board this ship by proper procedure can be killed outright by crew member! And you, hehe, have hidden away an illegal stowaway, and assisted a terrorist in boarding this ship. Oh, right, this useless trash can't be considered a terrorist."

"You ..." Wei You's face paled. She would never be able to clear her name. The consequences of the charges against her were severe. Once Ren Zeri reported this to the ones upstairs, she would face a terrible fate.

"Well?" Ren Zeri raised his brows and walked to Wei You. He lifted her beautiful but unnaturally pale face and said, "Am I right? It's not just you, but your parents and your siblings will all be involved. They will face strict interrogations, and have a bleak future ahead of them. They will never rise in their ranks again. They will be treated with disgust and ridicule by the masses. All of this, just because of you, my beautiful medical officer!"

Shedding his everyday disguise, Ren Zeri's words came through cruelly and without emotion. His every word hammered down onto Wei You's heart. Her face grew paler as she listened to his grand speech.

With his fingers tracing her smooth chin, Ren Zeri saw the fear growing in the woman's eyes and felt a rush of ecstasy!

His long hunt for his prey was finally over. Coldness and madness flashed in his eyes!

He knew that this woman would never escape from him again. From now onwards, she would always be his! He laughed madly inside at the thought.

However, he was not going to let her off so easily.

"You must realize your situation fully now. That's right, why keep a useless trash like him? You have your family and your bright future to think about! A trash like him is of no value to you, so just kill him! It doesn't matter how you do it. As long as you kill him, it will be like nothing ever happened!"

Ren Zeri stroked her smooth chin, his gentle voice radiating cruelty.

"No ..." Wei You declined out of instinct. She was a doctor, trained to save lives. Killing someone, and an unconscious patient at that, was impossible for her.

He felt Wei You's vulnerable body quivering as she struggled helplessly. Ren Zeri smiled a thin, cold smile.

"Don't worry, it's but an easy matter. He's unconscious now. When you kill him, he won't feel a thing! Besides, as long as you kill him, I won't tell on you, and you'll be free." Ren Zeri's words were full of persuasion.

Wei You trembled even more. Ren Zeri did not speak as he savored the results of his efforts.

Wei You closed her eyes, losing her last bit of hope.

"Kill him!" Ren Zeri uttered these two words slowly but clearly, and Wei You shuddered.

Wham!

A muffled sound came without warning. Ren Zeri felt a sharp pain on his side, and his body was flying backwards in the next moment like he was hit by a hammer. He crashed loudly on the wall behind him, and slumped to the floor.

Wei You only felt the hand lifting her chin slid away through her closed eyes.

She opened her eyes wide and saw another pair of cold eyes.

Ignoring Wei You's surprise, Ye Chong shook his limbs, testing them. After staying down for so long, it was only natural for him to feel unnatural to movement.

He heard the conversation between the two clearly, and could make out the situation they were all in.

"You saved me?" Ye Chong asked, his voice hoarse.

Wei You dumbly stared at Ye Chong, entirely caught off guard.

No quick answer was going to come from Wei You, so Ye Chong directed his attention towards the man who had tried to persuade her to kill him.

He had attacked with the blunt end of his wooden spear, but it was a heavy blow. The man would not survive without a broken bone or three.

Ye Chong walked to Ren Zeri, who was now lying in an unconscious heap against the wall. Ye Chong's attacks always ended in some form of injury or death. He did not intend to kill Ren Zeri yet, so he did not go all out. However, it was enough to seriously injure the man, for he did not have Ye Chong's strong physique.

"Ah!" Wei You gasped, awake from her daze. Ye Chong frowned as he looked to her, and Wei You quickly covered her mouth.

Her bright eyes were not filled with surprise and curiosity, mixed with lesser bits of fear and loss.

To think that a weakling like him could be so strong! It was unthinkable!

Ye Chong trained his eyes away. The woman was his savior, after all, and he would at least be courteous to her. He looked back at Ren Zeri and began to search him.

Wei You watched as the man searched Ren Zeri and removed all of his belongings. She suspected that this seemingly fragile man was actually a thief by trade.

Poor Ren Zeri. He had nothing on him now except for his underpants.

Just below his chest, a part of his body collapsed inwards, where his rib cage suffered some broken bones. By Wei You's professional assessment, Ren Zeri had at least three broken ribs, and they were probably reduced to numerous fragments.

Ye Chong's blow had nearly killed Ren Zeri.

# Chapter 397: The Power of Useless Trash

Wei You looked at Ren Zeri, and could not help but felt pity and sympathy for him.

However, it was obvious that Ye Chong did not share her sentiment. This was the b\*stard who had coerced the woman to kill him. Still, Ye Chong did not want to kill him, since it would be more troublesome. He reached for the collapsed part of Ren Zeri's body and poked.

Wei You's face twitched at his action.

Ren Zeri felt it immediately and cried out in pain.

"If you don't want to die, please stay quiet." Ye Chong's voice was as cold as a winter breeze, which made Ren Zeri understood his situation immediately.

He looked at the seemingly fragile young man before him in fear, his face drained of blood. The pain in his side told him exactly how strong this young man was! Funnily, he had thought the man was but a useless piece of trash!

He decided to do exactly as told and shut up. He did not want to die, and from the cold look in the other party's eyes, he knew that the man would have no qualms in killing him.

Who was this young man? Was he from the the Tribe? He had never heard of such a strong person in the Tribe! Ren Zeri was not quite as strong as Ye Chong, but he could at least read his opponent's ability well.

"Are you the captain of this starship?" Ye Chong asked.

Ren Zeri nodded quickly and said, "Yes!" He knew which way the wind blowed, and that his life was in the hands of this man. They were not an even match at all. This man was so strong that it was almost unimaginable. In this closed space in the starship, the man could obliterate every single crew member onboard single

handedly.

He was certain that the man was not out of his mind. From the look in his eyes, the young man had an extraordinary calmness in him. People like these are terrifying. They could always analyze their surroundings, taking into account all the factors at play, and would seldom make mistakes out of being emotional. The truth was, this kind of coolness was something Ren Zeri had always strived for. Unfortunately, he realized that he was light years away from this young man in this regard.

If this young man killed everyone onboard, he would only condemn himself to being trapped in outer space all by himself. Ren Zeri believed that the man was definitely aware of this.

Hence, what he had to do now was to cooperate. Only then would he be able to increase his chances of survival, even though it was still ultimately out of his hands.

"What's your flight destination?" The question was important, and at the top of Ye Chong's priority list.

"Planet Guang Hua," Ren Zeri answered honestly.

"Guang Hua?" Ye Chong frowned in contemplation. The name was familiar, but not one he could put a finger on immediately.

Good thing his memory was excellent, and he quickly remembered where he had heard of it. On the chip Lunatic Guan had given him, Lunatic Guan had asked him to visit her home village once he finished his syllabus. Lunatic Guan's home village, May's Night Ridge was in a city called Line Shaft on Guang Hua planet. This Guang Hua planet that Ren Zeri was talking about might be the same planet as the one Lunatic Guan was referring to.

"Is there a city called Line Shaft on Guang Hua?" Ye Chong asked Ren Zeri.

"Line Shaft?" Ren Zeri looked puzzled. He shook his head and said, "I'm not sure. We always docked at Guang Hua for a very



short time. If you're going to any place on Guang Hua planet, I can find you a guide once we've arrived on that planet."

Wei You currently looked Ren Zeri and found it hard to believe what she was seeing. It was like a dream to her. This cool and rational Ren Zeri was completely different from the one moments earlier. The cruel and mad Ren Zeri had vanished without a trace.

"How many days until then?" Ye Chong asked again.

Ren Zeri heard the young man's voice relax, and he knew that his life was spared for the moment. He replied respectfully, "Our flight will take another 20 days."

Ye Chong began to do his own calculations. Just then, Ren Zeri asked, "Please, may I have my wounds treated?"

Ye Chong could not help but look at him in a new light, and nodded in assent.

Ren Zeri turned to Wei You and spoke earnestly, "Doctor Wei You, sorry for the trouble!"

For some reason, Wei You was deeply unsettled by this Ren Zeri. The young Captain's expression had always been cold and emotionless, but somehow Wei You found this polite version of Ren Zeri a lot more dangerous.

Ye Chong took a glance at Wei You and spoke to Ren Zeri plainly, "Don't have any funny ideas of your own, or I will kill you." Ye Chong spoke without intonation, but one could discern the chilling threat behind his words.

"Please don't worry, I would not dare to risk my life!" At this moment, Ren Zeri was still able to manage a natural laugh, but this pulled on the muscles in his side, and his face contorted in response.

Wei You approached Ren Zeri cautiously. Too many things had happened today. She was only a medical officer, unused to situations like this, and now her mind was all over the place. No

longer was she in her professional calmness. Now, she was just like a shocked little girl.

Ren Zeri smiled gently and said, "Doctor Wei You, please don't be scared. I will not harm you, and besides, I can't really harm you the way I am now!"

With that, Wei You made her final few steps towards her new patient.

Everything on Ren Zeri was removed by Ye Chong. It was a precaution, and to prevent Ren Zeri from communicating with anyone else.

Perhaps it was due to her professional side taking over, but Wei You quickly recovered from her fright and began to inspect Ren Zeri's wounds.

What horrifying strength! As Wei You studied his injuries, she was very much surprised. It was hard to tell from external symptoms that the injury was caused by a stick. Perhaps even a hammer could not do so much damage!

Three of the ribs were broken. The center one was nearly reduced to dust, while the other two were also broken at a few places. Wei You believed that the other bones in the vicinity probably suffered a few cracks as well, but that would have to be verified with professional equipment.

Fortunately, Wei You's cabin was stocked with plenty of medicine, and Wei You herself was gentle in her treatment. Nevertheless, Ren Zeri was still white as a sheet from the pain, sweating profusely and groaning occasionally.

Soon, Wei You completed the treatment. By then, Ren Zeri was at the edge of collapsing, but he still maintained his composure.

As soon as she finished with her work, Wei You hid behind Ye Chong instinctively. This brought Ye Chong's train of thought.

"How long was I out for?"

"Five days," Wei You replied in reflex.

Ye Chong looked straight at Wei You and asked, "You saved me?" This was the second time he asked this question.

"Yes." Wei You's quiet answer was almost imperceptible.

Ye Chong turned back to Ren Zeri.

The Captain was in pain, but he was focused entirely on Ye Chong. He was surprised by the killing intent he saw in the man's eyes. Was he going to kill him?

However, his sharp mind informed him quickly of the reason for Ye Chong's killing intent.

From their conversation earlier, Ye Chong could tell that the woman had saved his life, and killing Ren Zeri would save her a lot of trouble in future. However, that would also leave a trace of his presence in the ship. The Renlo Tribe would never figure out who he was, but if the Ye Family found out about this incident, they would.

This was something Ye Chong was trying to avoid.

Understanding Ye Chong's concern, Ren Zeri quickly made a vow, "Don't worry, I will never threaten Ms Wei You again, I swear this in the name of my grandmother!"

Wei You felt a huge weight lifted from her chest. In the free space zone, swearing in the name of one's grandmother was something inviolable, and no one would go against their word in this case.

Ye Chong, however, did not believe in words. He believed in power. He would use his own methods to deal with this problem.

He remembered a trick Shang had taught him back on Blue Ocean. Perhaps he could try it out now. Unlike his previous experience, however, Shang had already learned all about the opponent back then.

"Where does your family live? How many are there? What are

their names? ..." Ye Chong's series of questions made Ren Zeri pale even further. He understood what Ye Chong was trying to do, but dared not utter a lie. Whenever he looked into the man's cold eyes, his heart would squirm.

Ye Chong asked for every single detail. Since he was not exactly experienced in interrogation, he could only ask based on his experience. Ren Zeri spilled the beans, giving everything he knew about all his relatives, including their names, addresses and whatever tiny details he could think of.

After double checking his information for completeness, Ye Chong faced the two people around him and repeated every single piece of information that Ren Zeri had given him, word for word. Ren Zeri could no longer keep his calm, looking at Ye Chong like he was seeing the Devil himself.

"I will crosscheck all of them." Ye Chong's flat announcement shattered the last ray of hope in Ren Zeri. He was now so infinitely grateful for not lying earlier. Many of the crew members on this ship could attest to the authenticity of the information he provided, and that was why he did not dare to lie. On the other hand, there was also Wei You right there, who knew much about him.

Now, he had completely given up on exacting revenge on Wei You.

# Chapter 398: Predicament

20 days of flight was not too lengthy. For someone as used to space travel as Ye Chong, it was like a walk in the park. However, the ship was too technologically outdated and he was uncomfortable with the design. He stayed in Wei You's cabin every single day. The rest of the crew were oblivious to the presence of a powerful combat expert on the ship. Of course, that was due to Ren Zeri's cooperation.

Ren Zeri's working hours dropped to its minimum, and the crew members watched him visit Wei You's cabin very often.

It looked like the relationship between their Captain and Wei You was developing rapidly! Of course, this development was celebrated by some, and mourned by others. However, many of them were curious - how did their diligent Captain come to neglect his work out of love? That was not his style at all!

Nonetheless, no one was particularly unhappy with it. They had travelled this route many times, and it was a safe route. Their work was easy, and aside from avoiding the occasional asteroid in their path, there was not much to worry about during the flight.

Ren Zeri did all he was asked of, and did not make any funny moves. Everyday, when he looked into the terrible, emotionless eyes of that young man, any thoughts of betrayal would vanish without a trace. In the face of absolute power, he had no room for negotiation.

A strong person like him would be terrifying to deal with, especially now when they were face to face. He could not make out this young man. He had never heard of anyone like him. All the strong personalities that he recalled were not compatible with the young man. So young, but so strong - could only be the Congregation elite, Luo Shi, who fit the description. He had seen Luo Shi before, and this young man was nothing like him.

Nonetheless, all of this was not important. What was important was his own pitiful life.

The starship finally docked at Guang Hua, and all the crew members cheered with joy. As they finished unloading all the goods on their ship, they finally earned the three days of free time to themselves. The crew members all left the ship in good spirits, ready to put their time to good and proper use.

Ren Zeri, Wei You and Ye Chong were the last to disembark the ship.

"Do you have any requests?" Ye Chong looked at Wei You and asked calmly, "As long as it is within my powers, I will do it to repay your deed of saving my life."

Wei You replied with respect, "I do not ask for much, I just hope that my family can be safe." After all these days, she knew just how strong this seemingly fragile young man was!

"Oh, that's not too much to ask!" Ye Chong looked to Ren Zeri, and the latter barely suppressed a shudder.

"Eat this." Ye Chong produced a red pill from his pouch. He was not sure if his earlier threats would work. He was too inexperienced in this matter, and felt the need to take precautions.

Ren Zeri took the pill with trembling hands. He knew he had no choice in the matter as he swallowed it in one gulp.

"Come over here," Ye Chong waved to Wei You and said.

Wei You quickly stepped forward to Ye Chong's side, and Ye Chong whispered for a while by her ear.

Ren Zeri could feel his heart palpitate like mad. Of course he knew that the red pill was no candy, and he could already guess what was coming for him.

As expected, Ye Chong said to him, "The pill you took just now is a slow acting poison. It's not lethal, but you'll need to take regular

medication to control its symptoms. I've told her the formula for the medicine. She will prescribe it to you every half a year. I'm counting on you two the next time I return to Dankwood planet. If anything happens to her, your entire Tribe will face my wrath."

Ren Zeri's face twitched, and quickly agreed to his terms.

Ye Chong's final sentence was a clear threat. However, only he himself knew that it was pure gibberish. When would he return to Dankwood planet? Possibly never! No one understood better than him the wandering lifestyle that he was soon to embark on! However, for the sake of scaring Ren Zeri, he lied anyway. He believed that, with this degree of threatening, it would be highly unlikely for Ren Zeri to harm Wei You.

Wei You was also satisfied with the current arrangement.

He was a goner now for the rest of his life! Ren Zeri's face was ashen, but there was nothing he could do!

"Farewell, both of you!" Ye Chong disappeared like a ghost, further impressing the fear into Ren Zeri.

Ye Chong did not enter the nearest city, but instead flew Moon King for a few hundred kilometers before he settled down near another city.

In the middle of the night, Moon King landed silently on a clearing about 80 kilometers away from the nearest city. The holographic screen told Ye Chong that there was no one within 30 kilometers of him, so Ye Chong was not worried about being noticed.

He decided to enter the city the next day.

Out in the darkness of night, as he sat alone in the grassy plains, Ye Chong felt a deep sense of loneliness. He laughed out bitterly. Loneliness was something he had gotten used to. Despite the fact, he still felt strange every time he was alone.

He quickly suppressed this bout of emotions. He was used to

employing the rational side of his mind to handle his sadness most of the time.

Could his episode of sickness caused him to grow weaker in the head?

Ye Chong laughed mocking at himself, and dismissed the thought. It was better to deal with more practical matters now. However, he soon found that he could not plan anything ahead, since he had no useful information at all.

Be it his aim to finding Mu and Shang, or searching for Rui Bing, he had no idea where to start with them. He did not even know how to return to the He Yue Galaxy, much less the Five Galaxies.

He should focus on surviving! That was the only aim that he could work on and plan ahead for now, and something he should definitely do first. He did not understand why the Ye Family would treat him like this, but he would not allow anyone to control his fate, not even the Ye Family, despite the fact that he was probably very closely related to the Ye Family!

He and he alone would determine his own fate!

Ye Chong analyzed his situation carefully. While the future was very much unclear, Ye Chong knew exactly what he must do now.

It was simple! He must prepare for any possible encounters with the Ye Family troops and fight for his own fate!

On the other hand, Ye Chong would never expect that the Ye Family was facing the same predicament. In fact, it was not just the Ye Family, but all the Three Aristocratic Families were having a tough time cracking their heads.

In the study of the Ye Family Patriarch, a few of the most important members of the Family were gathered. Ye Juxing, Ye Guangxing were there too, and the atmosphere was grim.

"I believe you all understand our current situation. There's no need for pleasantries now. The reason everyone is gathered here is



to discuss the matter of allocating more manpower to Black Cove," Ye Family's reigning Patriarch looked around him and cut to the chase.

Ever since setting up Black Cove, the Ye Family had never sent out any large scale combat support to the place. Not only the Ye Family, but the other two Aristocratic Families had also followed this unspoken rule.

Deploying large scale combat support to the Five Galaxies in recent times was unprecedented. More importantly, it would affect the Ye Family's long term battle strategy and the Family's very future. Hence, the Patriarch had treated this decision with great care.

"Has Black Cove not uncovered anything about the matter?" One of them asked.

The Patriarch shook his head. "No. They have suffered heavy losses in this matter, without the results to show for it. The Five Galaxies have always been an important military base of operations, and we will not lose it." The Patriarch's words set the foundation of their future plans - they must not give up on their resources in the Five Galaxies!

No one seemed to object to his words. The importance of the Five Galaxies as a strategic military base had been established a long time ago, an idea that was impressed deeply upon everyone present.

All of them kept silent, for no one knew how to quite handle their current predicament.

Reallocation of combat personnel was not as easy as it seemed. After so many years of fine tuning, an acceptable balance of powers was achieved not only in the He Yue Galaxy, but on every planet, and in almost every city.

Any relocation of combat personnel would affect the local power

balance greatly. Moreover, the other aristocratic families led by the Shi Family had been more aggressive recently. Disrupting the power balance now would have imaginable but undesirable consequences.

The He Yue Galaxy would enter a new age of chaos!

For the Three Aristocratic Families, stability was of utmost importance. Chaos in the He Yue Galaxy would not benefit them in any way. On the contrary, their powers would be greatly diminished due to the chaos, and that was something they must avoid at all costs.

"What if, Ye Yin is ordered to return?" One of them suggested.

Ye Juxing shook his head and explained, "Ye Yin's return will not help much with the situation. What we need now is a sizable military force. Currently, we have only 15 thousand mech pilots available."

Everyone except for the Patriarch and Ye Guangxing inhaled in surprise. 15 thousand mech pilots was a strong military presence, but it seemed that the Patriarch believed that it was not enough.

Had the situation in the Five Galaxies reached the point where such drastic measures were necessary?

# Chapter 399: Wok-firing

Ye Chong was not aware of the disaster that befell the Three Aristocratic Families, but even if he was, he would have probably dismissed them immediately. He was not good enough of a strategist to take advantage of the situation, unlike Shang.

Just then, he had rescued an honest looking Flora Adept. This Flora Adept was in his thirties, and his was entirely covered with mud. He was trying to pick a barleygrass plant when he slipped and fell into a swamp. Ye Chong heard his anxious cries for help as he was nearby, and helped him out of it.

Flora Adepts were people who specialized in gathering plants in the wild. According to Lunatic Guan's chip, the occupation had as many specialization branches as the alchemy field in the Five Galaxies.

Ye Chong never imagined that he would meet a Flora Adept himself.

Zhao Ying was very grateful for his help. "Thank you very much, Sir. I would've died if not for your help." He rubbed his hands together, but found them to be covered in mud. Zhao Ying blushed and quieted down for a while before bracing himself and said, "Perhaps you'd like to visit my place?"

Zhao Ying's house was small and simple. His wife was not exactly beautiful, but she was warm and friendly. When she found out that Ye Chong had saved her husband's life, she was even more welcoming. His daughter was only about 7 years old, and obviously a shy girl. She hid behind her father's figure, her head poking out carefully as she studied the stranger with her tiny, curious eyes.

Linrose tea and marinated plum meat - the Zhao couple offered their best dishes to Ye Chong.

A honest couple and a shy but curious child - this absolutely normal family made Ye Chong feel a long forgotten warmth. He

remembered his Papa, he remembered Mu and Shang, and he remembered Grandpa Qian. Those who knew him would notice how the cold, hard lines on his face softened a little.

After their meal, Zhao Ying chatted with Ye Chong, but it was apparent that the latter was not used to conversations of this nature. Zhao Ying did most of the talking while Ye Chong listened. Now that the honest, good natured Zhao Ying met a person who was even more rigid and quiet than him, he spoke a lot more than he did that day than the past ten days in total.

From Zhao Ying's stories, Ye Chong found that the life of a Flora Adept was difficult. He could feel the emotions that filled Zhao Ying's plain and awkward descriptions.

Zhao Ying went to gather plants every day, while his wife would process the plants that he collected roughly. Their main source of income was through selling these roughly processed raw materials. The couple had never learned real alchemy, and were only amateurs. Hence, they often forced by customers to sell their things below market price. The two of them worked hard every day, with just enough to feed their own daughter.

"Ying, come over here, what should I do with this barleygrass?" Zhao Ying's wife asked.

Zhao Ying remembered his lucky reward today, that he had found a barleygrass. However, he sat down in dejection and said, "Never mind that, I don't know what to do with it too. Let's just sell it tomorrow. Just do your usual work, I'll accompany the good sir for a while and join you later."

Zhao Ying turned to Ye Chong and said with pained regret, "Sigh, we'll sell it cheap tomorrow. I don't know if it's still of value."

Ye Chong understood him. Barleygrass must be dried within five hours of picking it, or its value will be reduced by half at least.

"Let's go have a look," Ye Chong said lightly, and stood up

himself.

Zhao Ying was caught off guard, and felt anxious. "Let's just sit here, it's too messy inside."

However, Ye Chong was already on his way inside before he could finish speaking. Zhao Ying could only follow him inside.

It was full of smoke inside, and it was an unpleasant smell. This was the result of many types of plants being dried together. Ye Chong could not help but frowned. From his professional perspective, this was very unsafe.

He saw a few simple and primitive drying tools. Zhao Ying's wife was sweating all over as she worked on the plants heaped on the side.

The fire was not controlled well, and her methods were wrong, and the order drying was also mixed up.

Ye Chong could not help but shook his head in his mind. No wonder their dried plants could not be sold at a good price. Alchemy materials prepared like this could only be considered as low class items.

Zhao Ying's wife was surprised to see Ye Chong inside with her. She quickly stood up, wiping her hands on her apron and she said with embarrassment, "How did you get in here? It's too messy in here!"

Just then, Zhao Ying arrived as well.

Ye Chong said nothing, but went straight to the drying tools. Zhao Ying and couple looked at him in surprise as he poured everything in the drying wok into the waste tank, and reached out with one hand.

"Get me the barleygrass."

Here in the room full of smoke, a young man worked in concentration with the drying wok. Beside him, a man and wife

watched him with their respectful eyes opened wide, for fear of missing a single detail.

"Use a small fire. Apply equal force in both hands, and don't use water. The order of wok-firing is from bottom to top, from the roots to the shoots. The roots should turn a burnt yellow, and the stem into a light purple. The leaves should be brushed and cleaned with water for three times every round, and the leaves should be thoroughly dried before starting each round.

When the final product was presented before the Zhao couple, Zhao Ying could not help but shudder. By the looks of this dried barleygrass, it would definitely sell at a good price!

The honest Zhao Ying did not spend much time dwelling on how much the barleygrass could sell, but instead focused on remembering every detail that Ye Chong had described earlier. He knew that with this skill, they would never have to live so poorly anymore!

Seeing Zhao Ying's thoughtful expression, Ye Chong could see that his message was received in the way he intended.

Bang! Zhao Ying pulled his wife with him as they kneeled and knocked their foreheads on the ground heavily for three times with grateful expressions. This honest man could only repay the young man for giving their lives a chance with the simplest of ways.

"Not bad, not bad at all. It's dried well, this barleygrass looks excellent. I say, Zhao Ying, this does not look like a work of your quality." The customer, Old Zhang raised his head and took a glance at Zhao Ying, then at Ye Chong beside him. He knew better than anyone of Zhao Ying's skills. The latter's processed materials were only bought by few people in the city.

Zhao Ying chuckled good naturedly and said nothing. Old Zhang noted his reaction, and smiled. "Alright, the Gods probably remembered your hard life and rewarded you with blessings. For

this barleygrass, I'll offer you 50 altwhite silvers, what do you think?"

Zhao Ying nodded vigorously. That sum would be enough to last the family for awhile. Seeing Zhao Ying's gratefulness, Old Zhang could not help but smiled as he produced 50 altwhite silvers. However, Old Zhang was focused more on the silent, expressionless young man who was with Zhao Ying.

Zhao Ying accepted the 50 altwhite silvers carefully, kept them in a bag with even more care and kept the bag close to him.

"Gramps, do you know how to go to Line Shaft City?" Zhao Ying asked Old Zhang. It was for Ye Chong.

"Line Shaft City?" Old Zhang eyes went to the silent Ye Chong and replied evenly, "Why? Zhao Ying, do you want to go to Line Shaft City? It's very far away."

"No, no," Zhao Ying answered honestly, shaking his head. "It's my friend here who wants to go, but he doesn't know the way. I thought of asking you, since you're more knowledgeable, and must surely know about it."

Old Zhang explained with a nostalgic low voice, "I've been to Line Shaft City when I was young, but the place is very far away, and I can't tell you the specific directions off the top of my head."

"Then do you have a map?" Ye Chong asked. With a map, his journey to Line Shaft City would be greatly simplified. With Moon King's speed, he can go there whenever he wanted. The return trip would probably take less than an hour.

"A map?" Old Zhang looked at the young man, surprised. He shook his head and said, "No. These days, who wouldn't keep their maps away like it's a secret treasure?"

Zhao Ying panicked as he heard the man's reply, but Ye Chong remained calm.

"The young man sure can keep himself composed," Old Zhang

thought to himself. He continued, "However, there's a trade company from my group heading to Line Shaft City soon. I can ask for you if they'd be willing to bring you with them." Old Zhang was familiar with making these arrangements. Trade companies had security escorts, and there was strength in numbers. Many would ask to tag along for their journeys.

After some thought, Ye Chong replied, "I'll be very much grateful, Gramps."

Old Zhang went to his group, and soon ushered Ye Chong and Zhao Ying to join him. He led them to a middle aged man.

To Zhao Ying, the middle aged man was the image of authority. With his magnificent clothing, it was no doubt that he was a man of status. To Ye Chong, however, the man's face had an unhealthy pallor. His skin looked loose, like the kind of person who looked stronger than he really was. His clothing was too eye catching, and unsuited for physical exertions.

"This is Caravan Leader Yu," Old Zhang introduced the man to the two.

The middle aged man had two mustaches that curled slightly upwards at the edges of his mouth. He had high cheekbones, and his eyes looked sunken. He stood there and yawned twice throughout.

"Who's going to Line Shaft City?" Caravan Leader Yu asked lazily.

"Me." A short and slightly chilly answer reverberated in the air. Caravan Leader Yu immediately jolted awake. He began to study Ye Chong, his narrowed eyes revealing a certain sharpness in the man. "Oh, young man, what business do you have at Line Shaft City?"



# Chapter 400: Adepts in the Dark

"Looking for someone," replied Ye Chong concisely, as usual.

"I see," responded Caravan Leader Yu, with his eyes squinted as he observed Ye Chong's flimsy body, "Alright," said a young man looking for someone in Line Shaft City, he must be either an apperentice in search of a teacher or a young businessman in search of fortunes.

Leader Yu had visited the city frequently enough to learn the fact that it would take tremendous effort to remain standing inside the city. Well, what kind of place L.Shaft City was, you asked? It was the true city of alchemy and about 30% of the alchemist population would prefer squeezing themselves in this tiny city.

Well, the boy sure sounded persistent in his search. He must be looking for an actual somebody in this city. Maybe! Maybe if I get him along, I'll be able to learn somebody great in this city.

Leader Yu knew the underlying value of this better than anybody else. The chances might look slim but it would be a fair deal with little to none investment.

The wise merchant had caught the flipping coin, as he made up his mind.

"The merchant team is leaving in 3 days," smiled Leader Yu, "You would need to make your way here early 3 days later though. I need to do some arrangements after all."

"Arrangement?" Ye Chong was finding the term odd.

See, a greenhorn, as expected. Thought Leader Yu, his expression remained the same, as he began explaining patiently, "The journey there is long and tiring. For everyone's safety and an easier time maintaining the course, we would need to arrange everyone into different teams."

"I see."

Ye Chong then spent the next two days at Zhao Ying's place. Ye Chong was growing fond of this modest man, that he eventually taught a few cultivation methods of sprouts in the end. The cultivation of sprouts was the primary technique an alchemist was ought to master. But well, different branch would have different techniques regarding cultivation, especially when a certain kind of sprout was involved.

Regarding baking, it had way higher demand on factors like the control of heat and tossing of woks. The materials produced by the Bakers were very welcomed by the alchemists. So an advanced Baker would be a highly respectable figure, since they created the flow of fortune with their baking. Their products were sold at a much higher price in the market too.

Whatever Ye Chong had learned might be incomparable to those advanced techniques by standard Bakers, but his skills were still effective even though complicated, including the methodology of his baking. He knew some baking but these techniques would not suffice a standard license, anyway it would suffice for Zhao Ying's family living.

"You all should be getting home," said Ye Chong calmly as he stopped by the merchant's place.

Zhao Ying, in accompaniment of his wife and the little girl, sent Ye Chong to the place. With a heavy heart he said, "Take care..."

Zhao Ying's wife then handed Ye Chong some food, "You are a good man, my lord!" Said she appreciatively, "God will watch over kind men like you! I had prayed with my girl yesterday, you would have a safe journey ahead!"

Ye Chong gave a nod, took the food with him and turned to join the merchants.

He was not the kind who would be chattering on a farewell.

The merchant's place was very busy.

"Are you all set? Bear in mind that the journey is very long ahead, and you would be very sorry if you are unprepared. Take more of those medium sacks. Don't forget to place the silicas in every sack!" Shouted the leader with his hands on his waists.

Leader Yu was looking drunk two days ago but he looked great today. "Oh?" And he saw Ye Chong, "If it wasn't that bright young man that day, are you all set?" Said he passionately, like welcoming a friend.

"All done," nodded Ye Chong.

That was when a large crowd flooded into the place. Taken a few steps back, Ye Chong shifted himself away from the scene intuitively.

The caravan leader was not a slow person too, as he reacted as soon as Ye Chong, though he took a brief sprint towards the group instead. His wrinkles held a raised smile on his face, "Holy Merchy, what have brought my fellow VIPs here? Please, be my guest, do join us." The snobbish caravan leader had been all sincere and humble, his back remained low ever since.

The leading person of the group was an elderly who looked gentle with his fair white beard in his seventies. Somehow he exuded a sense of solemn superiority even by just standing there. The servants had their backs lowered, anticipating a new order from the lord. Of course, he was a known figure, who would not know the owner of this city himself?

Except Ye Chong maybe, as his eyes rested upon the followers, instead of the wise old man.

The few followers, somehow sensed Ye Chong's gaze, moved their sight onto Ye Chong.

Those were sharp eyes!

Ye Chong's pupils shrunk drastically! His right foot hit the front, putting himself in a battle stance.

All was part of Ye Chong's self-defense mechanism upon his survival instinct.

It had been quite some time since he felt such intensity off someone, not even Ye Luo could make him this alert.

5. There were 5 of them, 5 adepts in the dark. Ye Chong squinted his eyes, his heart raced, upon realizing how there were 5 hidden beasts waiting to devour humanity through the threatening gazes of theirs.

Right when Ye Chong went into his stance, the 5 followers also moved and positioned themselves!

Their eyes focused upon Ye Chong. The one at the front overreacted slightly as his body was fully straightened towards Ye Chong, almost sending fists.

There was one middle-aged man standing right next to the 5 adepts. He was wearing a green apparel, having a goatee, and was apparently astonished by the sudden change in atmosphere.

The actions were taken at microlevel, soundlessly, that no one had noticed the brewing storm.

Ye Chong's mind ran wild but he took no hostile action at the moment.

Who were these five adepts? Ye Chong could sense their hostility that was almost as close as those from the Sanctuary. They would be pure horror at a place without mech like this. And Ye Chong could recognize the goatee man being an alchemist, an adept too.

Ye Chong stood still, and he did not want to stir up anything. Ye Chong could already imagine himself deploying Moon King if he were to fight these 5 men at once. There would be no way this would turn out to be a mere street fight - it would be a war.

Ye Chong's decision was fair, as the followers withdrew their hostility, though their eyes remained sharp.

It was a quick fight in the dark, through gazes.

"Hah! Yu, my old pal, your business seems well!" said the lord on top of his lungs, as he gave a friendly chuckle.

"It is all thanks to your brilliant leadership, my lord," caravan Leader Yu was shocked by the sudden compliment as he spoke, "As you can see, the place is very organized, if it was not your generosity, little merchants like us wouldn't be able to survive."

If there would be a perfect time to butter up the authority, it would be now.

"You're so modest, pal," the lord laughed, "Your business has expanded great enough, I've already heard of it before this." And his tone changed, "Brother, I'm here for a request this time."

"Look at what you've said. Keep those courtesy, how would I ever reject your request my lord? If you want anything, just send men to inform us, you don't even have to take the trouble to come all the way by yourself. All merchants would give their fullest to help the lord!" His smile was twitching however...

Dang please don't tell me he's here for money...

"It's simple really. These few friends of mine would like to pay Line Shaft City a visit and I just so happened to know that your merchant group is heading to the city as well, so I thought of bringing them here, see if you could make some arrangement."

"Hah! My lord, again, it's only a small request, you don't have to be so formal. As long as you made the order, we would achieve it by hook or by crook. In this case, yes, certainly yes, no problem!" Leader Yu was probably thanking god that it was a simple request, as he quickly nodded at it. His eyes wandered upon the few followers and his experience told him that these were some figures that he should try fawning on, especially when they came under the accompaniment of the lord himself.

The lord gave few nods satisfyingly and whispered the followers.

Then he left under the escort of his guardsmen.

Yup, those 6 persons whom Ye Chong took alert of remained.

The leader welcomed the 6 new members with great hospitality. They were cold towards his passion however, that Leader Yu assumed they must be some great figures who had experienced worldliness.

Before Ye Chong noticed, he got assigned to the same team as the 6 new rascals.

# Table of Contents

## [Legend of the Supreme Soldier](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Acknowledgement](#)

[Chapter 301: Compatriots](#)

[Chapter 302: Old Chief Guo's Idea](#)

[Chapter 303: The Disciples Come in Droves](#)

[Chapter 304: Roland's Gamble](#)

[Chapter 305: Crisis](#)

[Chapter 306: Popular](#)

[Chapter 307: Leaving the City](#)

[Chapter 308: Escape](#)

[Chapter 309: A Fortune in One Night](#)

[Chapter 310: My Beautiful New Han Jia](#)

[Chapter 311: Makeover](#)

[Chapter 312: The Duo from Gray Valley](#)

[Chapter 313: Ze Xi Academy](#)

[Chapter 314: Blood Spilled from a Brick](#)

[Chapter 315: Fight!](#)

[Chapter 316: Worsening Situation](#)

[Chapter 317: Breakthrough in Combat](#)

[Chapter 318: My Idol!](#)

[Chapter 319: What way?](#)

[Chapter 320: The Descendant of the Great](#)

[Chapter 321: The Alchemy of Ye Chong, Returns!](#)

[Chapter 322: Problem](#)

[Chapter 323: Ambush](#)

[Chapter 324: Chance Encounter I](#)

[Chapter 325: Chance Encounter II](#)

[Chapter 326: The Shi Family's Fury](#)

[Chapter 327: Analysis Results](#)

[Chapter 328: Frightening Deduction](#)

[Chapter 329: The Annoying Pimp](#)

[Chapter 330: Blazing Like Fire!](#)

[Chapter 331: Battle Royale](#)

[Chapter 332: Coordination](#)

[Chapter 333: The Enemy Appears](#)  
[Chapter 334: Underground Base](#)  
[Chapter 335: Fate](#)  
[Chapter 336: Mech Duel I](#)  
[Chapter 337: Mech Duel II](#)  
[Chapter 338: Mech Duel III](#)  
[Chapter 339: Departure I](#)  
[Chapter 340: Departure II](#)  
[Chapter 341: A Clever Disguise](#)  
[Chapter 342: Blue Nebula](#)  
[Chapter 343: The Singular Wave](#)  
[Chapter 344: Between Life and Death](#)  
[Chapter 345: Coraplatinum](#)  
[Chapter 346: Child Abductor](#)  
[Chapter 347: The Village](#)  
[Chapter 348: Wang Family Village I](#)  
[Chapter 349: Wang Family Village II](#)  
[Chapter 350: Wang Family Village III](#)  
[Chapter 351: The Treasure Pavilion](#)  
[Chapter 352: Brown Mistletoe Nut](#)  
[Chapter 353: Storm I](#)  
[Chapter 354: Storm II](#)  
[Chapter 355: Storm III](#)  
[Chapter 356: Battle I](#)  
[Chapter 357: Battle II](#)  
[Chapter 358: Battle III](#)  
[Chapter 359: Battle IV](#)  
[Chapter 360: Dangerous Forest I](#)  
[Chapter 361: Dangerous Forest II](#)  
[Chapter 362: Dangerous Forest III](#)  
[Chapter 363: Valley I](#)  
[Chapter 364: Valley II](#)  
[Chapter 365: Meeting a Mentalist Again](#)  
[Chapter 366: Huang Baiyi](#)  
[Chapter 367: The Dark Secret](#)  
[Chapter 368: Proposition](#)  
[Chapter 369: The Seed](#)  
[Chapter 370: Gliding](#)  
[Chapter 371: Landing](#)



[Chapter 372: Bargain](#)  
[Chapter 373: Green Tempest](#)  
[Chapter 374: Attack in the Night](#)  
[Chapter 375: Alchemy Performance](#)  
[Chapter 376: Shock](#)  
[Chapter 377: Situation](#)  
[Chapter 378: Gemini](#)  
[Chapter 379: Battle in Alchemy I](#)  
[Chapter 380: Battle in Alchemy II](#)  
[Chapter 381: Battle in Alchemy III](#)  
[Chapter 382: Battle in Alchemy IV](#)  
[Chapter 383: The Story Behind I](#)  
[Chapter 384: The Story Behind II](#)  
[Chapter 385: Pursuit](#)  
[Chapter 386: Moon King](#)  
[Chapter 387: Target](#)  
[Chapter 388: First Battle](#)  
[Chapter 389: The Search](#)  
[Chapter 390: Everyone's On The Move!](#)  
[Chapter 391: Resolution](#)  
[Chapter 392: The Smoke Branch](#)  
[Chapter 393: Ye Luo's Proposition](#)  
[Chapter 394: Falling Sick](#)  
[Chapter 395: Wei You's Kindness](#)  
[Chapter 396: Coldness Underneath His Disguise](#)  
[Chapter 397: The Power of Useless Trash](#)  
[Chapter 398: Predicament](#)  
[Chapter 399: Wok-firing](#)  
[Chapter 400: Adepts in the Dark](#)